

A N  
EXPOSITION  
ON THE  
Ten Commandments:  
WITH OTHER  
SERMONS.

By the Right Reverend Father in GOD,  
EZEKIEL,  
Late Lord Bishop of *London-Derry*.

L O N D O N :

Printed for *Thomas Parkhurst*, at the *Bible and Three Crowns* in  
*Cheap-side* ; and *Nathanael Ranew*, and *Jonathan Robinson*, at the  
*Kings-Arms*, and *Golden Lyon* in *St Paul's Church-yard*. 1692.



*Printed for Nathanael Ranem*

# Table of Contents

To the Reader

An Exposition Upon the Commandments

The First Commandment: "Thou shalt have no other gods but me" (Exodus 20:1–3)

The Second Commandment: "Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image" (Exodus 20:4–6)

The Third Commandment: "Thou shalt not take the name of the Lord thy God in vain" (Exodus 20:7)

The Fourth Commandment: "Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy" (Exodus 20:8–11)

The Fifth Commandment: "Honor thy father and mother" (Exodus 20:12)

The Sixth Commandment: "Thou shalt not kill" (Exodus 20:13)

The Seventh Commandment: "Thou shalt not commit adultery" (Exodus 20:14)

The Eighth Commandment: "Thou shalt not steal" (Exodus 20:15)

The Ninth Commandment: "Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbor" (Exodus 20:16)

The Tenth Commandment: "Thou shalt not covet" (Exodus 20:17)

A Sermon on John 7:19

A Sermon on Galatians 3:10

Publisher's Advertisement

TO THE  
READER.

**T**HE following Book has so much of substantial Worth, together with so many true Beauties, as not to need Recommendation: The Design therefore of this Address to Thee, Good Reader, is partly to assure thee the Work is Genuine, partly to give thee some light into the general Nature of it, or what thou art here to expect.

It was my Happiness, many Years ago, to contract a very intimate Acquaintance, I might call it Friendship, with that Great Person the Author, while we lived Neighbours in that Flourishing, Religious, and Liberal City, where these Discourses Excester. had their Birth, and became first Vocally Publick. And I doubt not, but that the Memories of many of the Citizens there, are a sufficient Record, by the Consulting of which, any who should scruple my Testi-



## To the READER.

*Testimony, as less competent, may receive plenary satisfaction. I being constantly employed myself, at the Hours when this Exposition was delivered, could not be an Auditor of it. But as I then understood what Subject my Friend was Treating on, so now reading the Tract, I cannot but acknowledge the true Spirit and Style of the Author.*

*All, I think, that can be doubted, is, Whether He designed this Work for the Press, and put there-to his Last Hand.*

*As to the former point, I am apt to think, when he first undertook the Argument, he designed Nothing more Publick, than are our usual Sermons. But having finisht what he proposed, his Labours were judged so exceeding Useful, and had besides so highly pleased his Audience, that he was restlessly importun'd to make them more Publick. And though thorough Excess of Modesty he would not consent hereto, for that time, yet he transcribed them himself, (for no one else could, he having written them at first in a peculiar Short-band) and having transcribed them, left them as a Depositem in the hands of one of his Parishioners, with whom he had some time sojourned, (a Person of Integrity, and well known to me, though now deceased) to be disposed of after his Death.*

*From*

## TO the READER.

*From such his Transcribing and Entrusting them, as well as from some particular Indications, apparent in them, and very convincing to me (who was well acquainted with his way of Writing his Sermon-Notes, and especially from the addition of divers Marginal Notes, which I am sure were put there both by himself, and after his first Transcribing pains, I conclude (as to the latter point of doubt) he had put the last Hand he intended to put to them.*

*For what further Justice remains to be done to the Work, being I may seem hitherto to have done Justice only to the Authour, it consisting in Truth of Sermons, (though, as all his were, very Elaborate Ones) such Truths and Duties are chiefly to be lookt for in it, which are of most general Christian Concernment: That is, he has said here, Not all that might be said, had a Critical and Just Comment been design'd; but what his Auditors, (and the greatest part of our People still) had, and have most need to hear: which I take to be a very considerable Excellency of the Book; and wherein he has shew'd singular Judgment.*

*I see nothing farther now needful to add, but to pray, That the Book may be Publick enough; I mean*

# To the READER.

mean Read by as many, as the Copies will suffice,  
till they are worn out, and Practiced by all who  
Read it : Then I am sure both the Author's  
and Readers Pains will be very happily plac-  
ed.

Peckham-place

July 3. 1691.

Edw. Cork and Rosse.

A N

1

---

A N  
E X P O S I T I O N  
U P O N T H E  
C o m m a n d m e n t s .

---

The First

C O M M A N D M E N T .

God spake these words, and said, I am the  
Lord thy God : Thou shalt have none  
other Gods but me.

**T**H E R E are two things in the ge-  
neral which perfect a Christian :  
the one, is a clear and distinct  
Knowledge of his Duty ; the other, a con-  
scientious Practice of it, correspondent to  
his Knowledge ; and both these are in an  
equal degree necessary. For as we can have no solid, nor  
well-grounded Hopes of Eternal Salvation without Obedience,  
so we can have no sure nor establish'd Rule for our Obedience

παραχρῆς ἀπὸ τῆς θείας διδασ-  
καλίας τὸ ἅμα πωλαρεῖται ὃ ὡς  
ἐν κεφαλῇ εἰς τε μάθησιν ἐπιτο-  
λῶν, καὶ φυλακῶν, εἰς τε τῶν θεό-  
αν γνῶσιν, καὶ πειρασμῶν. Just.  
Mart. Expof. Fidei.

B

without

## An Exposition upon

without Knowledge : And therefore our Work and Office, is not only Exhortation but Instruction ; not only to excite the Affections, but to inform the Judgment ; and we must as well illuminate as warm.

Knowledge indeed may be found without Practice ; and our Age abounds with such Speculative Christians, whose Religion is but like the Rickets, that makes them grow large in the Head, but narrow in the Breast ; whose Brains are replenisht with Notions, but their Hearts straightned towards God ; and their Lives and Actions as black and deformed, as if their Light had only tann'd and discolour'd them. I confess, indeed, that their Knowledge may be beneficial unto others, who may favourily feed upon that Meat which these do only mince and carve : yet where it is thus over-born by unruly Lusts, and contradicted by a licentious Conversation, to themselves it is most fatal and baneful. It is like light shut up in a Lanthorn, which may serve to guide and direct others, but only soots, and at last burns that which contain'd it.

But although Knowledge may be thus without Practice, yet it is utterly impossible that the Practice of Godliness should be without Knowledge.

For if we know not the limits of Sin and Duty, what is required of us, and what is forbidden, it cannot be supposed, but that in this corrupted State of our Natures, we shall unavoidably run into many heinous Miscarriages, unless it were possible for us to please God at unawares, and so get to Heaven by great chance.

And therefore that we might be informed what we ought to do, and what to avoid, it hath pleased God who is the great Governour, and will be the righteous Judge of all the World, to prescribe us Laws for the regulating of our Actions ; and that we might not be ignorant what they are, He hath openly promulgated them in his Word : For when we had miserably defaced the Law of Nature, originally written in  
our

## the First Commandment.

3

our Hearts, so that many of the Commands of it were no longer legible, it seemed good to his infinite Wisdom and Mercy, to transcribe and copy out that Law in the sacred Tables of the Scriptures, and to super-add many positive Precepts and Injunctions which were not before imposed.

The Bible therefore is the Statute-Book of God's Kingdom, therein is comprised the whole body of the Heavenly Law; the perfect Rules of an holy Life, and the sure Promises of a glorious one. And the Decalogue, or ten Commandments is a Summary or brief Epitome of those Laws, written by the immediate Finger of God, and contracted into so short an Abridgment, not only to ease our Memories, but to gain our Veneration; for sententious Commands are best besitting Majesty. And indeed if we consider the paucity of the Expressions, and yet the copiousness and variety of the Matter contained in them, we must needs acknowledge not only their Authority to be Divine, but likewise the Skill and Art in reducing the whole Duty of Man to so brief a Compendium.

The words are but few, called therefore the Words of the Covenant, the ten Words; but the sense and matter contained in them, is vast and infinite. The rest of the Scripture is but a Commentary upon them; either exhorting us to Obedience by Arguments, or alluring us to it by Promises, or frightening us from transgressing by Threatnings, or exciting us to the one, and restraining us from the other, by Examples recorded in the Historical part of it. Exod. 34.  
28.

But before I come to speak of the Commandments themselves, it will be necessary to premise something concerning the Time, the Reason, and Manner of their Delivery:

The Time (according to the best Computation of Chronology) was about two thousand four hundred and sixty Years after the Creation of the World; two hundred and twenty Years after *Israel's* descent into *Ægypt*, and the third Exod. 20. Month after their departure out of *Ægypt*; before the birth

# An Exposition upon

of Christ almost fifteen hundred Years, and therefore above three thousand before our Days.

This was the first time that God selected to himself a National Church in the World ; and therefore it seemed expedient to his Wisdom to prescribe them Laws and Rules how they ought to order both their Demeanour, and his Worship and Service. Before this the Law of Nature was the standing Rule for Obedience ; but because it was blotted and raz'd by the first Transgression, it was supplied in many particulars by Traditions delivered down from one to another : And those of the Patriarchs, who according to the Prescripts of this Law, endeavoured to please and serve God, were accepted of him, and frequently obtained the privilege of especial Revelations either by Dreams, or Visions, or heavenly Voices, concerning those things wherein they were more particularly to obey his Will. In those first Ages God made no distinction of People or Nations, but as it is since the Wall of Partition is broken down, and the *Jewish Economy* abrogated by the Death of Christ, so was it before, that in every Nation he that feared God, and wrought Righteousness, was accepted of him.

Acts 10.  
35.

But the World totally degenerating into vile Superstitions and Idolatries, the Knowledge and Fear of the true God was scarcely any where to be found, but only in the Family and Posterity of *Abraham* ; and even there too we have reason to suspect a great Decay and Corruption, especially in their long aboad among the Idolatrous *Ægyptians* ; yea, the Scripture doth in several places expressly charge them with it : and in all probability they took the Pattern of their Golden Calf from the *Ægyptian Apis*, being Idolaters only in a younger Figure, and a lesser Volume. God therefore justly rejects all the rest of the World ; but being mindful of his Promise to their Father, and the Father of the Faithful, appropriates this People to himself as his peculiar Inheritance : And because it was manifest by experience, that neither the Law

Josh. 24.  
14.  
Ezek. 20.  
7, 8.

of

of Nature, nor Oral Tradition, handed down along from one Generation to another, were of sufficient force to preserve alive the Knowledge and Worship of the true God, but notwithstanding these, the whole Earth was become wicked and idolatrous; that therefore this People whom God had now taken to himself, might have all possible advantages to continue in his Fear and Service, and that they might not degenerate as the rest of the World had done, he himself proclaims unto them that Law by which he would Govern them, writes it upon Tables of Stone, commits them into the hands of *Moses*, whom he had constituted his Lieutenant; and commands them to be laid up in the Ark as a perpetual Monument of his Authority, and their Duty. How wretchedly depraved are our Natures, when even that which is the very Light and Law of them is so obliterated and defaced, that God would rather intrust its Preservation to Stones, than us; and thought it more secure when engraven on senseless Tables, than when written on our Hearts!

The Manner wherein this Law was delivered, is described to be very terrible and astonishing: the Wisdom of God design'd it so on purpose to possess the People with the greater Reverence of it; and to awaken in their Souls a due Respect to those old despised Dictates of their Natures, when they should see the same Laws revived and invigorated with so much Circumstance and Terror: For indeed the Decalogue is not so much the enacting of any new Law, as a reviving of the old by a more solemn Proclamation. And for the greater Majesty and Solemnity of the Action, we read,

*First*, That the People were commanded to prepare themselves two days together by a Typical Cleansing of themselves from all external and bodily Pollution, before they were to stand in the Presence of God. So we find it enjoined, They were to be sanctified, and to wash their Cloaths, and be ready against the third Day, whereon the

I. *Exod. 19. 10, 11.*  
Lord



## An Exposition upon .

Lord would come down in the sight of all the People, upon Mount *Sinai*.

Now this signifies unto us two things :

- I. *First*, That we ought to be seriously prepared when we come to wait before God in his Ordinances, and to receive a Law at his mouth : Indeed the Dispensation of the Gospel, is not such a Ministry of Terrour, as that of the Law was ; God doth not now speak unto us immediately by his own Voice, which they that heard it, were not able to indure ; he doth not pronounce his Law in Thunder, nor wrap it up in Flame and Smoak ; but he speaks unto us in a still Voice, by Men like ourselves ; and conveys the rich Treasure of his Will unto us in earthen Vessels, of the same Mould and Frailty with ourselves. He treats with us by his Messengers and Ambassadors ; whose Errand, though it be delivered with less Terrour, yet ought not to be received with less Reverence, for it is God himself that speaks in them, and by them ; and every word of Truth which they deliver unto you in the Name of the Great God, and by the Authority of that Commission which he hath given them, ought to be received with as much prostrate Veneration and Affection, as though God himself had spoken to you immediately from Heaven.

Think then how solicitous the *Israelites* were in fitting themselves for that great and dreadful Day of hearing the Law ; a Day more great and dreadful than ever any shall be, except that of Judging Men according to the Law ; think how their hearts throbb'd and thrill'd within them, when they heard the clang of the heavenly Trumpets mixt and blended with loud and terrible cracks of Thunder ; and both giving them a Signal of the near Approach of God : think, if you can, what thoughts they had when they saw the Mountain burning with Fire, and enveloped with Clouds and Smoak, out of which on every side were fearful Lightnings shout among them ; think how they trembled, when they saw the Mountain tremble and totter under the Weight and Great-

Greatness of God descending down upon it : And bring with you the same affections, if not so terrified, yet as much over-awed, whensoever you come to wait upon his holy Ordinances ; for it is the same God that speaks unto you, and he speaks the same things to you, as then he did ; not indeed with such amazing Circumstances, yet with the very same Authority and Majesty.

Were God now to come down among you in his terrible Majesty, or should a thick Cloud fill this place, and Lightnings flash out of it ; should you hear the Thunder of his Voice, *I am the Lord ; thou shalt have no other Gods before me* ; certainly such a dreadful Glory would make your hearts tremble within you, and the very Earth tremble under you : Could you then give way to Sloath and Drowsiness ; could your hearts run gadding after Vanities and Trifles, or could there be any Object considerable enough to divert your thoughts and affections from so terrible a Glory ? Why believe it, God is as really present here, as when he thus manifested himself to the *Israelites* ; and present upon the very same occasion too. He is now delivering his Law to you, pronouncing his high and sovereign Commands ; and if he so far consults our weakness, as not to do it in such an astonishing manner : Yet far be that dissingenuity from us, that we should be either the less careful to prepare for, or the less reverent in attending on the Declarations of his high Will and Pleasure, though he makes it known to us by Men of the same Temper, yea, or Distempers with ourselves.

2. *Secondly*, If the *Israelites* were to sanctifie and prepare themselves to appear before God at Mount *Sinai*, how much more ought we to sanctifie ourselves that we may be meet to appear before God in Heaven ? That Glory which God manifested when he delivered the Law, is not comparable to the infinite Glory which he always reveals to the Saints in Heaven : and yet if the People of the *Jews* were not allowed to see God, though veiled with a Cloud, and thick Darknes, without being.

ing first accurately prepared for such a glorious Discovery, how much more ought we to prepare ourselves, to wash our filthy Garments, and to cleanse our Souls from all Defilements both of Flesh and Spirit, that we may be worthy to stand before God, and to see him there where he darts forth the full rays of his Brightness, and causeth his Glory for ever to appear without any check or restraint, without any cloud or veil interposing to hide it.

That's the first Circumstance observable in the delivery of the Law.

II. *Secondly*, The Mount on which God appeared was to be fenced and rail'd in, with a strict Prohibition that none should presume to pass the Bounds there set them, nor approach to touch the Holy Mount, under the Penalty of Death. So we have it *Exod.* 19. 12. which intimates unto us two things:

I. *First*, The due Distance that we ought to keep from God, and teacheth us to observe all that Reverence and Respect which belongs unto Him, as being infinitely our Superiour. Certainly the very place where God manifests himself, at least whilst he doth so, are venerable and awful: and therefore when God revealed himself to *Jacob* in a Dream, and gave him the Representation of a Ladder reaching from Earth to Heaven, Angels upon every round of it, and God on the top; we find with what awe he reflects upon it in his waking thoughts, *Surely the Lord is in this place; and I knew it not. And he was afraid, and said, How dreadful is this place! this is none other but the house of God, and this is the gate of heaven.*

*Gen.* 28.  
16, 17.

2. *Secondly*, This setting Bounds and Limits to the Mount, signified, as in a Type, the strictness and exactness of the Law of God. His Law is our Boundary, which he hath on purpose set to keep us from rushing in upon his Neck, and upon the thick Bosses of his Buckler: And that Soul that shall presume so to do, that shall break these Bounds, and com-  
mit

mit a Trespafs upon the Almighty, fhall surely die the Death, even that eternal Death which he hath threatned a- gainft all Violaters of his Law.

That is a fecond remarkable Circumftance in the delive- ry of the Law.

*Thirdly*, We have a Defcription of the terrible Manner III.  
in which God appeared to pronounce his Law : Thunders,  
and Lightnings, and Earthquakes, and Fire, and Darknefs,  
were the Prologue and Introduction to it; and were fo dread-  
ful as caufed not only the People to remove, and ftand afar  
off, as not able to indure fuch terrible Majefty, as we find it,  
but even affrighted *Mofes* himfelf, who was to be *Internunci-* Exod. 20.  
*us Dei*, the Messenger and Herald of God : this we find in 18.  
timated, *Exod. 19. 19. When the voice of the trumpet found-*  
*ed long and waxed louder and louder, Mofes fpake.* What it  
was that he faid, is not there mentioned ; but in all proba-  
bility, he then fpake thofe words which the Apoftle hath re-  
corded, *So terrible was the fight, that Mofes faid, I exceed-* Heb. 12.  
*ingly fear and quake.* 21.

Now this dreadful Appearance of God in the delivering the Law, ferved for two Ends:

*First*, To affect them with a reverent Esteem of thofe I.  
Commands which he fhould impofe upon them : For cer-  
tainly unlefs they were poffefft with moft grofs and beaftial  
Stupidity, they muft needs think thofe things to be of vaft and  
great Concernment, which were attended with fuch a train  
of remarkable and amazing Circumftances ; and it is natural  
for Men to be awed by Pomp and Solemnity ; the Majefty  
of the Commander adding a kind of Authority to the Com-  
mand.

*Secondly*, To put both them and us in mind, that if God 2.  
were fo terrible only in delivering the Law, how much more  
terrible will he then be, when he fhall come to Judge us for  
Transgreffing the Law ! Indeed the whole Apparatus of this

C

Day

## An Exposition upon

1 Thess. 4.  
16.

Day seems to be Typical of the last ; but as it is the condition of all Types, it shall be far out-done and exceeded by its Anti-type. Here were Voices, and Fire, and Smoak, and the noise of a Trumpet ; and these struck Terror into the hearts of the People, who came only to receive the Law : but oh think what Consternation will seize upon, and cramp the hearts of Sinners, when the Lord shall descend from Heaven at the last Day with a Shout, with the Voice of the Archangel, and with the Trump of God, as the Apostle describes it. When not a Mountain only, but the whole World shall be burning, Heaven and Earth all on a light flame about them ; when they shall hear the terrible Voice of the Majesty on high calling to them, Awake ye Dead, and come away to Judgment ; when the Earth shall be universally shaken, and shake the dead Bodies out of their Graves, when whole Croudes of naked Nations shall throng and cluster about the great Tribunal, not to receive a Law, but a Sentance, a Sentance that shall determine their final and eternal Estate : certainly if the giving of the Law were so full of Terror, much more terrible shall be our being judged according to that Law.

And this is another remarkable Circumstance in the delivery of the Law.

Exod. 20.  
19.

- IV. *Fourthly*, When God himself had with his Dread Voice spoken to them these Ten Words, their affright and astonishment was so great, that they intreat *Moses* to be the Truchman and Interpreter between God and them, *They said unto Moses, Speak thou with us, and we will hear : but let not God speak with us, lest we die.* Neither is this without a great Mystery and excellent Signification ; for it intimates that the Law, as it is dispensed to us only from God, is in itself the Ministration of Death and Condemnation : but as it is delivered to us by a Mediator, by our Lord Jesus Christ, (of whom *Moses* here was a Type) so we may hear and observe it, and obtain eternal Life, not for, but thorough our Obedience to it.

## the First Commandment.

II

it. And therefore the Law is said to be ordained by Angels, in the hand of a Mediator ; that is, it was solemnly dispensed by the Ministry of Angels, and then delivered into the hand of *Moses*, to be by him communicated to the People. Now this intimates unto us, that the Severity and Terroures of the Law were intended to drive us unto Christ, as here they drove the *Israelites* unto *Moses*, the Type of Christ, from whose mouth the Law spake not so dreadfully, as it did from God's.

V.

*Fifthly*, Upon this Intercession and Request of the People, *Moses* is called up into the Mount, the Law deposited in his hands, engraven in two Tables of Stone, by the Finger and Impression of God himself, the most sacred Relique that ever the World enjoyed ; but at length lost, together with the Ark that contained it in the frequent Removes and Captivities of that People : Neither is this too without its Spiritual Mystery and Signification ; for it notes to us that our Hearts are naturally so hard and stony, that it is only the Finger of God that can make any impression of his Laws upon them. It is well known that the Ark was a most famous Type and Representation of Jesus Christ ; and the keeping of the Tables of the Law in the Ark, what doth it else mean, but to prefigure to us that the Law was to be kept and observed in him who fulfilled all Righteousness ? And when God doth again write his Laws upon our Hearts, we also keep them in Christ our Ark, whose compleat Obedience supplies all our Imperfections and Defects.

VI.

*Sixthly*, Whereas this Law of the Ten Commandments was twice written by God himself ; once before and again after the Tables were in an holy Zeal broken by *Moses* ; this also is full of Mystery, and signifies the twice writing of the Law upon the Hearts of Men : first by the creating Finger of God, when he made us perfectly like himself ; and then again

C 2

by

by his regenerating Power, giving us a new Impression, and as it were setting us forth in a new Edition, but yet containing the same for substance, as when we came forth at first out of the Creating-hand of God; for Regeneration, and the new Birth is but a restoring us to the Image of God, which we defaced by our Fall in *Adam*, and as it were a new stamping of those Characters of himself, in Righteousness and Knowledge, which were obliterated.

VII. *Seventhly, and lastly*, It is said that when *Moses* came down from the Mount after his long Converse with God, his Face shone with such a divine and heavenly Lustre, that the *Israelites* were dazed with the Brightness, and could not steadfastly look upon him; and that therefore he was forced to put a Veil over his Face to allay and temper those Beams which the reflexion of God's Face and Presence had cast upon him; but this Veil he laid aside when he turned into the Tabernacle to speak with God. The significancie of which History the Apostle expressly gives us, That there was a Veil upon the Heart of the *Jews*, so as they could not see to the end of the Law, which is Christ Jesus, who is the end of the Ceremonial Law, by putting an end unto it in its Abrogation; and the end of the Moral Law, because in him it hath attained its end, for the end of it was by convincing us of our own Weakness and Inability to perform it, to lead us unto Christ, by whose Righteousness alone, and not by the Works of the Law, we are to expect Justification before God: Yet there was so thick a Veil cast over the Law, that the *Jews* could not look through it upon the Glory that shone in Christ, of whom *Moses* was still the Type: But when they shall turn unto the Lord, this Veil shall be taken away, and then shall they discern the significancy of all those Ritual Observances, and perceive spiritual Things after a more sublime and spiritual manner.

And

And thus I have shewn you the Time, the Reasons, and the Circumstances of the delivery of this Epitome of the Law in the Ten Commandments, wherein many excellent Gospel-Truths are delineated and shadowed out unto us.

But some one may say; What need all this long Discourse about the Law? Is it not fully abrogated by the coming of Christ into the World? Shall we be again brought under that heavy Yoak of Bondage, which neither we, nor our Fathers were ever able to bear? Doth not the Scripture frequently testify, that we are not now under the Law, but under Grace; that we are freed from the Law, that Christ was made under the Law, to free those who were under the Law; and therefore to terrify and over-aw Mens Consciences by the Authority of the Law, what else is it but a Legal Dispensation, unworthy of that Christian Liberty into which our Saviour hath vindicated us, having fulfilled the Law by his Obedience, and by his Death abolished it.

To this I answer, Far be it from every Christian to indulge himself in any Licentiousness from such a corrupt and rotten Notion of the Law's Abrogation; for so far is it from being abolished by the coming of Christ, that he himself expressly tells us, *He came not to destroy the law, but to fulfil it*; *Matth. 5.* *ἵνα νόμον πληρώσωσι*, i. e. either to perform, or else to perfect and fill up the Law. And Verse 18. assevers, *That till heaven and earth pass away, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the Law, until all be fulfilled*; i. e. till the consummation and fulfilling of all things; and then the Law which was our Rule on Earth, shall become our Nature in Heaven.

When therefore St. Paul speaks (as frequently he doth) of the Abrogation, and Disannulling of the Law, we must heedfully distinguish both of the Law, and likewise of the Abrogation of it. The Law which God delivered by Moses's Ministry, was of three sorts:

The



# An Exposition upon

The Ceremonial,  
Judicial, and  
Moral Law.

The distinct Consideration of each of these, may afford us some light in this matter.

The Ceremonial Law was wholly taken up in injoyning those Observances of Sacrifices, and Offerings, and various Methods of Purifications and Cleansings, which were typical of Christ, and that Sacrifice of his which alone was able to take away Sin,

The Judicial Law consisted of those Constitutions which God prescribed the Jews for their Civil Government : for their State was a Theocracy ; and whereas in other Commonwealths the chief Magistrates give Laws unto the People, in this, the Laws for their Religion, and for their Civil Government, were both Divine, and both immediately from God. So that their Judicial Law was given them to be the standing Law of their Nation ; according to which all Actions and Suites between Party and Party were to be tried and determined ; as in all other Nations there are particular Laws and Statutes for the Decision of Controversies that may arise among them.

But the Moral Law is a System or Body of those Precepts which carry an universal and natural Equity in them, being so conformable to the Light of Reason, and the Dictates of every Mans Conscience, that as soon as ever they are declared and understood, we must needs subscribe to the Justice and Righteousness of them.

These are the three sorts of Laws which commonly go under the name of the Law of *Moses*, all of which had respect either to those things which prefigured the *Messias* to come, or to those which concerned their Political and Civil Government

ment, as a distinct Nation from others ; or to those natural Vertues and Duties of Piety towards God, and Righteousness towards Men, as were common to them with all the rest of Mankind.

Now a Law may be said to be null and void two ways,  
Privatively, or

Negatively : Either that it was repealed after it was first given, or that its Obligation extendeth not, nor ever did extend to some People and Nations in the World.

Now I desire you heedfully to attend to these Propositions, for they will be of great use to clear up how far, and in what manner we are freed from the Obligation of the Law.

*First* then, As for the Ceremonial Law we affirm, that I. to the *Jews* it is properly abrogated, and the Obligation and Authority of it utterly taken away and repealed. And concerning this it is that the Apostle is to be understood, when in his Epistles he so often speaks of the Abrogation and Disannulling of the Law ; he speaks it, I say, of the Ceremonial Law, and Aaronical Observations, which indeed were so fulfilled by Christ as to be abolished : For this Law was given to be only an Adumbration, and *συνεργον*, or faint Representation of Christ : as in the Night, while the Sun is in the other Hemisphere, yet we see its light in the Stars, which shine with a borrowed and derived Brightness ; but when the Sun is risen, and displays its Beams abroad, it drowns and extinguisheth all those petty Lights : so while Christ, the Sun of Righteousness, was yet in the other Hemisphere of Time, before he was risen with Healing under his Wings, the *Jews* saw some glimmering of his Light in their Ceremonies and Observances ; but now that the Day of the Gospel is fully sprung, and that Light which before was but blooming, is fully spread, those dimmer Lights are quite drowned and extinguished in his clear Rays ; and an utter end is put to all those Rites and Ceremonies which both intimated, and in a kind supplied

supplied the absence of the Substance. So that to maintain now a Necessity of Legal Sacrifices, and Purifyings, and Sprinklings, is no less than to evacuate the Death of Christ, and to deny the shedding of that Blood, that alone can purifie us from all Pollutions; which is but to catch at the shadow, and lose the substance.

II. *Secondly*, In respect of us, who are the Posterity and Descendants of the *Gentiles*, it is more proper to affirm, That the Ceremonial Law was never in force, then that it was truly abrogated; for the Ceremonial Law, was National to the *Jews*, and in a sort peculiar to them only. Neither did God intend that the Observation of it should be imposed upon any other People, although they should be proselited, as a thing necessary for their future Happiness. And this appears by strong and cogent Reasons:

I. *First*, Because God expressly commands all those who were to be subject to the Ceremonial Law, that they should appear at *Jerusalem* thrice in the Year before the Lord. Now *Exod. 34. 23, 24.* this Command would have been impossible to be obeyed, were it intended that its Obligation should reach to those Countries which were far remote and distant from *Jerusalem*.

2. *Secondly*, Because all their Sacrifices and Oblations, in which consisted the chiefest part of the Ceremonial Worship, were to be offer'd up only at *Jerusalem*, which were alike impossible, if this Command of Sacrificing had been intended by God to be obligatory to all the World. No Sacrifices were accepted by God, but what were offer'd up in the Temple; and therefore the *Jews* to this day, although they are very blindly zealous of the Law, yet offer no Sacrifices unto God, looking upon themselves as dispensed from that Duty, because of their Dispersion, and the impossibility of assembling themselves to *Jerusalem* to do it: And therefore doubtless that Command, even whilst it was in force, obliged none but the *Jewish* Nation, who living not far from their Metropolis, might

might with conveniency enough assemble themselves together to that Holy Service.

And *thirdly*, We find that even before Christ's coming, the *Jews* themselves did not impose the Observation of the Ceremonial Rites of their Law, upon all those Heathens whom they won over to be Profelytes to their Religion; for their Profelytes were of two sorts,

Such as were *Profeliti Legi*, who became perfect *Jews* in Religion, lived among them, and engaged themselves to the full Observance of the whole Law.

And such as were called *Profeliti Portæ*; that is, those Heathens who were so far converted, as to Acknowledge and Worship the only true God, although they lived in other Nations, and obliged not themselves to the performance of what the Levitical Law required: these the *Jews* admitted into Participation of the same common Hope and Salvation with themselves; when they professed their Faith in God the Creator, and their Obedience to the Law of Nature, together with the Seven Traditional Precepts of *Noah*.

*These Precepts were, 1. The Administration of Justice upon Offenders. 2. Renouncing of Idolatry. 3. Worshipping the true God, and keeping the Sabbath. 4. Abstaining from Murder. 5. From Fornication. 6. From Robbery. 7. From eating of Blood, or any Member of a Beast taken from it alive.*

From all which it clearly appears, that the Ceremonial Law, to speak properly, is not abrogated to us *Gentiles*, it never being given with an intent to oblige us; but it is truly abrogated and disannulled to the *Jews* by the coming of Christ, the *Messias* into the World, in whom all these Types were to receive their full Accomplishment. And concerning the Ablation of this Ceremonial Law, we must understand the Apostle, when he frequently and earnestly asserts the Liberty of Believers, and their Freedom from the Law; that is, the believing *Jews* were positively freed from the necessity of observing it; and the believing *Gentiles* were negatively free from observing it at all.

D

And

Among  
these Ce-  
rinthus  
was a ring  
Leader, as  
Epipha-  
nius af-  
firms,  
Hæres.  
13.

And for the farther clearing of this Matter, we must know that in the very beginning of the Church, there arose great Dissention between the believing *Jews*, and the believing *Gentiles*, concerning the Necessity of observing the Levitical Law: for we find, *Acts* 15. 5. That certain of the Sect of the Pharisees which believed, affirmed, That it was needful to Circumcise the *Gentiles*, and to command them to keep the Law of *Moses*. Which yet was greater Rigour than was formerly used to the Proselyte Party. To determine this Question, the Apostles and Elders meet together in a Council at *Jerusalem*; where after some Debate, the whole Result seems in brief to have been this: That the believing *Jews* might still, without Offence, observe the Rites and Ceremonies of the Law; for though the Necessity of them were now abrogated, yet the Use of them might for a season be law-

\* Cum venisset fides que prius illis observationibus prænuntiata post mortem & resurrectionem Domini revelata est, amiserant tanquam vitam officii sui. Verumtamen tanquam defuncto corpora necessariorum officii dedicenda erant quodammodo ad Sepulturam, nec simulate sed Religiose; non autem deferenda continuo vel, inimicorum obrederationibus, tanquam canum morsibus proijcienda. Proinde nunc quisque Christianorum, quamvis sit ex Judeis similiter ea celebrare voluerit, non erit pius deductor, vel barbarus corporis, sed impius sepulture violator. Aug. Ep. 19. ad Hieronym.

fully continued; though they were *mortuæ*, yet not *mortiferæ*; dead they were, but hitherto not deadly: \* They were expired, yet some time was thought expedient for their decent Burial. And therefore we find *St. Paul* himself who so earnestly in all his Epistles opposeth the Observation of the Ceremonial Law, yet he himself submits to the use of those Rites, and purifieth himself in the Temple according to the Law, *Acts* 21. 26. yea, he also circumciseth *Timothy*, because he was the Son of a *Jewess*, *Acts* 16. 3. by which he evidently declares, That those Believers who were of that Nation, though they were freed from the Necessity of, yet they might lawfully as yet, observe the Aaronical Constitutions, especially when

to avoid giving of Offence, it might be expedient so to do. So tender a thing is the Peace of the Church, that even abrogated Rites and Ceremonies should not be violently rejected,

jected, to indanger a Wound and Schism; and therefore much less ought constituted and received Rites in things of less moment than Sacrifice and Circumcision, be so stiffly and pertinaciously oppugned to the incurable Breach and Division of the Church.

But then concerning the *Gentiles*; although before the coming of Christ, they might become perfect Profelytes to the whole Law of *Moses*, and receive the Seal of Circumcision, as \* many of them did, yet after the Evangelical Doctrine was consummate, and the Apostles sent into all the World to preach it to every Creature, they by the Holy Ghost determine, in that first Council of the Church, That the *Gentiles* should by no means be burdened with

\* *Izates King of Adiabena*, Jos. Ant. 20. 2. although *Orotius*, l. 7. c. 6. affirms him to have been a *Christian*, yet that he was circumcised according to the mind of his first Instructor *Ananias*, the same *Josephus* witnesseth.

any of those Impositions: but as they were heretofore by the *Jews* themselves concluded to be in a safe Condition, even as many of them as worshipped the true God, and observed the Commandments of *Noah*; so now the Apostles Decree to preserve them in the same Liberty; and therefore write unto them, That they should not subject themselves to the dogmatizing Commands of false Teachers, who required them to be circumcised, and to keep the Ceremonial Law; but that from as many as believed nothing more was required than only to abstain from Meat offered to Idols, and from Blood, and from Things strangled, and from Fornication; *i. e.* (as Judicious Mr. *Hooker* very probably interprets it) from incestuous Marriages within prohibited Degrees. And all those Commands laid upon them by the Apostles, are the very Precepts of *Noah*. But Circumcision, and other Observances of the Ceremonial Law, they were not obliged to; \* yea, they were obliged not to observe them, as being Subversions of their Souls, *Acts. 15. 24*. And therefore we find that the same Holy

\* *The Reason why the Gentiles ought not to observe the Ceremonial Law, even then when the believing Jews might lawfully do it, I suppose was this, That there lying no precedent Obligation*

# An Exposition upon

*obligation upon them, to do it, as there did upon the Jews, they could have no other Motive to persuade them to submit to these Observances, unless it were an Opinion, that they were necessary in themselves for their Justification before God. Which was indeed to evacuate the Death of Christ, and overthrow the Foundation of the Gospel.*

Apostle who himself circumcised *Timothy*, because he was the Son of a *Jeweß*, when he writes to the *Gentiles*, he tells them expressly, That if they be circumcised, Christ shall profit them nothing, *Gal. 5. 2.*

And thus we see how far, and in what fence the Ceremonial Law is abrogated.

III. *Thirdly*, As concerning the Judicial Law, and those Precepts which were given the *Jews* for the Government of their Civil State; that Law is not at all abrogated, not to us, for it was never intended to oblige us. Neither indeed is it at all necessary, that the Laws of every Nation should be conformed to the Laws which the *Jews* lived under; for doubtless each State hath its liberty to frame such Constitutions as may best serve to obtain the ends of Government: And therefore although the Punishment of Theft were ordained by God himself to be sometimes a double, sometimes a four-fold, sometimes a five-fold Restitution, yet are not our Laws to be condemned, which ordain the Penalty of this Transgression to be no less than Death; for the Reason and Necessity of every Nation is the best Rule and measure for those Laws by which they are to be governed.

*Exod. 22.  
1, 4.*

Neither is the Judicial Law abrogated to the *Jews*; for though now in their scattered State the Laws cease to be of force, because they cease to be a Body Politique, yet were their Dispersion again collected into one Republick, most probably the same National Laws would bind them now, as did in former times, when they were an happy and flourishing Kingdom.

IV. *Fourthly*, As concerning the Moral Law, of which I am now treating, that is partly abrogated, partly not, abrogated

## the First Commandment.

21

ted as to some of its Circumstances, but not as to any thing of its Substance, Authority, and Obligation.

*First*, The Moral Law is abrogated to Believers as it was a Covenant of Works: For God in Mans first Creation wrote this Law in his heart, and added this Sanction unto it, If thou dost this, thou shalt live; if not, thou shalt die the Death. Now all Mankind sinning in *Adam*, and thereby contracting an utter Impotency of obeying that Law, that we might not all perish according to the rigorous Sentence of it, God was graciously pleased to enter into another Covenant with us, promising a Saviour to repair our lost and decayed Condition, and Eternal Life upon the easier Terms of Faith and Evangelical Obedience. Indeed all those who either never heard of Jesus Christ, or do reject him, are still under the Law as a Covenant; and therefore their Estate is most wretched and deplorable; for being Transgressors of the Law, there remaineth nothing for them, but a certain fearful looking for of Wrath and fiery Indignation to devour them as the Adversaries of God: but those who are true Believers, are under a better Covenant, even the Covenant of Grace, wherein God hath promised unto them Eternal Life upon the Condition of their Faith; and they may with full assurance of Hope, to their unspeakable joy and comfort, expect the performance of it. And therefore,

1.

*Secondly*, To them also the Moral Law is abrogated, as to its condemning Power. Though it sentenceth every Sinner to Death, and curseth every one who continueth not in all things that are written therein, to do them; yet through the Intervention of Christ's Satisfaction and Obedience, the sins of a Believer are graciously pardoned; and the venome and malignity of the Curse is abolisht, it being discharged wholly upon Christ, and received all into his Body on the Cross: Gal. 3. 13. *Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the Law, being made a curse for us*; and therefore we may triumphantly exult with the Apostle, Rom. 8. 1. *There is*

2.

now



## An Exposition upon

*now no condemnation to them that are in Christ Jesus.*

In these two respects Believers are indeed freed from the Moral Law, As it hath the Obligation of a Covenant; and as it hath a Power of Condemnation.

3. But *thirdly*, As it hath a power of obliging the Conscience as a standing Rule for our Obedience, so it remains still in its full vigour and Authority; it still directs us what we ought to do, binds the Conscience to the performance of it, brings guilt upon the Soul if we transgress it, and reduceth us to the necessity either of bitter Repentance, or of Eternal Condemnation: For in this sense, *Heaven and earth shall sooner pass away, than one jot or tittle shall pass from the Law.*

And therefore the *Antinomian* is to be abominated, that derogates from the value and validity of the Law, and contends, That it is to all purposes extinct unto Believers, even so much as to its preceptive and regulating Power; and that no other obligation to Duty lies upon them who are in Christ Jesus, but only from the Law of Gratitude: that God requires not Obedience from them upon so low and sordid an account as the fear of his Wrath and dread Severity, but all is to flow only from the Principle of Love, and the sweet Temper of a grateful and ingenious Spirit.

But this is a most pestilent Doctrine which plucks down the Fence of the Law, and opens a Gap for all manner of Licentiousness and Libertinism to rush in upon the Christian World; for seeing that the Moral Law is no other than the Law of Nature written upon Man's heart at the first, some Positives only being super-added, upon the same account as we are Men, upon the same we owe Obedience to the Dictates of it. And indeed we may find every part of this Law inforc'd in the Gospel; charg'd upon us with the same Threatnings, and recommended to us by the same Promises; and all interpreted to us by our Saviour himself to the greatest advantage of Strictness and Severity. We find the same Rules  
for

for our Actions, the same Duties required, the same Sins forbidden in the Gospel, as in the Law; only in the Gospel we have these Mitigations, which were not in the Covenant of Works:

*First*, That God 'accepts of our Obedience if it be, *Syn-cere voto & conamine*, in earnest desires and endeavours; although we cannot attain that perfect Exactness and spotless Purity which the Law requires, yet we are accepted through Christ, according to what we have, and not according to what we have not, if so be we indulge not ourselves in a wilful Sloath and Contempt of the Law. 1.

*Secondly*, The Gospel admits of Repentance after our Falls, and restores us again to the Favour of God upon our true Humiliation: but the Law as a Covenant of Works, left no room for Repentance, but required perfect Obedience without the least Failure; and in case of Non-performance, nothing was to be expected but the Execution of that Death it threatened. 2.

Yet withal, an higher degree of Obedience is now required from us under the Dispensation of the Gospel, than was expected under the more obscure and shadowy Exhibitions of Gospel-Grace, by legal Types and Figures. We confess that the *Israelites*, before the coming of Christ, were no more under a Covenant of Works, than we are now: but yet the Covenant of Grace was more darkly administered unto them: And therefore we having now received both a clearer Light to discover what is our Duty, and a more plentiful Effusion of the Holy Ghost, to enable us to perform it; and better Promises, more express and significative Testimonies of God's Exceptance, and more full Assurance of our own Reward; it lies upon us, having all these Helps and Advantages above them, to endeavour that our Holiness and Obedience should be much superiour to theirs; and that we should serve God with more Readiness and Alacrity, since now by Jesus Christ our Yoak is made easy, and our Burden light.

So

## An Exposition upon

So that you see we are far from being dispensed with for our Obligation to Obedience : but rather that Obligation is made the stricter by Christ's coming into the World : and every Transgression against the Moral Law is inhaunced to an excess of Sin and Guilt, not only by the Authority of God's Injunction, which still continues inviolable, but likewise from the Sanction of our Mediator and Redeemer, who hath invigorated the Precepts of the Law by his express Command, and promised us the assistance of his Spirit to observe and perform them.

Now here before I can come particularly to treat of the Words of the Decalogue, I think it requisite to propound some general Rules for the right Understanding and Expounding of the Commandments, which will be of great use to us for our right apprehending the full Latitude and Extent of them. The Psalmist tells us, That the Commandments of God are exceeding broad. They are exceeding straight, as to any Toleration or Indulgence given to the unruly Lusts and Appetites of Men ; but exceeding broad, in the Comprehensiveness of their Injunctions, extending their Authority over all the Actions of our Lives. Now that we may conceive somewhat of this Breadth and Reach of the Law of God, observe these following Rules :

*Psal.* 119.  
96.

- I. *First*, All those Precepts which are dispersed in the Holy Scriptures, and concern the regulating of our Lives and Actions, although they are not to be found expressly mentioned in the Decalogue, yet may they very aptly be reduced under one of these ten Commands. There is no Duty required, nor Sin forbidden by God, but it falls under one, at least of these ten Words, and sometimes under more than one : and therefore to the right and genuine Interpretation of this Law, we must take in whatsoever the Prophets, Apostles, or our Lord Christ himself hath taught, as Comments and Expositions upon it ; for the Decalogue

is

is a Compendium of all that they have taught concerning Moral Worship and Justice ; yea, our Saviour doth Epitomize this very Epitome itself, and reduceth those ten Words into two, Love to God, which comprehendeth all the Duties of the first Table ; and Love to our Neighbour, which comprehendeth all the Duties of the second Table ; and tells us, that upon these two hang all the Law and the Prophets, *Matth. 22. verse 37 to verse 41.* And certainly a due Love of God, and of our Neighbour, will make us careful to perform all the Duties of Religion to the one, and of Justice to the other, and keep us from attempting any Violation to his Honour, or Violence to their Right. And therefore the Apostle tells us, That Love is the fulfilling of the Law ; and *Rom. 13. 1 Tim. 1. 4.* that the end of the Commandment is Charity, <sup>10.</sup> or Love the end ; *i. e.* the Completion, or the Consummation of the Commandment, is Love both to God, and one another. But concerning this I shall have occasion to speak more largely hereafter.

*Secondly,* Since most of the Commandments are delivered in Negative or Prohibiting Terms, and only the Fourth and Fifth in Affirmative or Injoyning. We may observe this Rule, That the Affirmative Commands include in them the Prohibition of the contrary Sin ; and the Negative Commands include the Injunction of the contrary Duty : for it is necessary that the contrary to what is forbidden, must be commanded ; and again, the contrary to what is commanded, must be forbidden : As for instance, God in the third Commandment, forbids the taking of his Name in vain, therefore by consequence the hallowing and sanctifying his Name is therein commanded. The Fourth requires the sanctifying of the Sabbath-day ; therefore it surely followeth, that the Prophanation of it is thereby forbidden. The Fifth commands us to Honor our Parents ; therefore it forbids us to be Disobedient or Injurious to them. And so it is easie to collect of the rest.

II.

E

*Thirdly,*

III. *Thirdly*, Observe also, That every Negative Command binds *semper* and *ad semper*, as the Schools speak; *i. e.* always, and to every moment of time: but the Affirmative

\* *Licet Præceptum affirmativum non obliget ad semper ita ut semper actu impleatur, vel actu de eo cogitatur, obligat tamen ad semper secundum habitum, ita scil. ut homo semper sit ita dispositus, quod semper sit paratus implere præceptum quoties occurrat faciendum.* Durand. lib. 2. dist. 22. quest. 3. lit. m.

Precepts, tho' they bind always, yet they do not bind to every moment; indeed as to the \* habit of Obedience they do, but not as to the Acts. To make this plain by instance: The first Commandment, *Thou shalt have no other Gods before Me*, bindeth always, and to every moment of time; so that he is guilty of Idolatry, whosoever shall at any time set up any other God to worship, besides the Lord

*Jehovah*: But the Affirmative Precept, which is included in this Negative, *viz.* To Worship, to Love, to Invoke, to Depend upon this God, obligeth us always, for we must never act contrary hereunto; and likewise it obligeth us to every moment of time, in respect of the Habits of Divine Love, and Faith, and Worship, yet it doth not oblige us to every moment, in respect of the Acts of these Habits; for it is impossible to be always actually praying, actually praising, and actually worshipping of God; neither is it required that we should, for this would make one Duty shock and interfere with another. So likewise the fourth Commandment, which is Affirmative, *Remember that thou keep holy the Sabbath-day*, obligeth always; and whosoever at any time prophanes the Sabbath, is guilty of the Violation of this Law: but it doth not, it cannot oblige to every moment of time, since this Day only makes its weekly returns, and every parcel of time is not a Sabbath-day. So likewise the fifth Commandment is positive, *Honour thy Father and thy Mother*, and binds always, so that we sin if at any time we are refractory and disobedient unto their lawful Commands: but it doth not oblige to the Acts

Acts of Honour and Reverence in every moment of time, for that is impossible, or were it not, it would be but mimical and ridiculous.

But now the Negative Precepts oblige us to every moment of time ; and whosoever ceaseth the Observation of them for any one moment, is thereby involved in Sin, and becomes guilty, and a Transgressor before God : Such are, *Thou shalt not take the Name of the Lord thy God in vain. Thou shalt not Kill. Thou shalt not Steal. Thou shalt not commit Adultery, &c.* now there is no moment of time whatsoever that can render the Non-observation of these Commands allowable ; nor are there any circumstances that can excuse it from Guilt : Whosoever doth prophane the Name of God by rash swearing, or trivial or impertinent uttering of it ; whosoever sheds innocent Blood ; whosoever purloyns from another what is rightly his ; whosoever is guilty of any Uncleaness, let it be at what time, in what place, after what manner soever, let it be done passionately or deliberately, whether he be tempted to it or not, yet he is a Transgressor of the Law, and liable to that Curse and Death which God hath threatned to inflict upon every Soul of Man that doth Evil : whereas in the Affirmative Precepts there are some times and seasons to which we are not bound, so as actually to perform the Duties enjoyned us. This I suppose is clear, and without Exception.

*Fourthly,* Observe this Rule also, That the same Precept IV.  
which forbids the external and outward Acts of Sin, forbids likewise the inward Desires and Motions of Sin in the Heart ; and the same Precepts which requires the external Acts of Duty, requires likewise those holy Affections of the Soul, that are suitable thereunto : As for instance, The same Command that requires me to Worship God, exacts from me not only the outward service of the Lip, or of the Knee, but much more the inward Reverence and Affection of my  
Soul ;

## An Exposition upon

Soul; that I should prostrate, not my Body only, but my very Heart at his Feet, fearing him as the greatest God, and loving him as the greatest Good, and with all the tenderness and dearness of an amorous and ravished Soul, cleaving unto him, and clasping about him as my only Joy and Happiness. And therefore those are highly guilty of the Violation of this Command, who worship God only with their Bodies, when their Hearts are far estranged from him; offering up only the shell and husk of a Duty, when the pith and substance which should fill it, is given either to the World, or to their Lusts: Such as these are guilty of Idolatry even in serving and worshipping the true God; for they set up their Idols in their Hearts, when they come to inquire of him; as the Prophet complains, *Ezek. 14. 7.*

So likewise that Positive Command, *Honour thy Father and thy Mother*, doth not only require from us the external Acts of Obedience to all the lawful Commands of our Parents, and Magistrates, and those whom God hath set in Authority over us, but requires farther, an inward Love, Veneration, and Esteem for them in our Hearts. For those Men can take no farther cognizance of us, than by our Overt-acts, and if those be regular, they are likewise satisfactory to all Humane Laws; yet this is not sufficient Satisfaction to the Law of God, who is the Discerner and Judge of the Heart and Soul, and whose Law hath this special Privilege above all others, That it can with Authority prescribe to our very Thoughts, Desires, and Affections.

And then, as for Negative Commands; they do not only forbid the external Acts of Sin, but the inward Motions of Lust, sinful Desires, and evil Concupiscence. And this we find it at large, *Matth. 5.* where our Saviour makes it a great part of his most excellent Sermon upon the Mount, to clear and vindicate the Moral Law from the corrupt Glosses and Interpretations of the Scribes and Pharisees; and to shew, that the Authority of the Law reached, not only  
to

to prohibit sinful Actions, as that corrupt Generation thought, but sinful Affections too; consult Verse 21. *Ye have heard, that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill: and whosoever shall kill, shall be in danger of the Judgment.* Here they stopt, in the very bark and rind of the Command; and thought it no Offence, tho' they suffered their Hearts to burn with Wrath, and Malice, and Revenge, so long as they pent it up there, and did not suffer it to break forth into bloody Murder. But what saith our Saviour Verse 22? *But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause, shall be in danger of the judgement: and whosoever shall say unto his brother, Racha, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell-fire.* You see here, that not only the horrid Sin of Murder is forbidden by the Law, but all the Incentives to it, and Degrees of it, as Anger conceived inwardly in the Heart, or expressed outwardly in Words.

I cannot pass this place without giving you some Light for the right understanding of it:

Here are three Degrees of Sin, short of Murder, yet all forbidden by the same Precept which forbids that: Causeless Anger against thy Brother; calling him *Racha*, and calling him, *thou Fool*; whereof the one still exceeds the other in guilt; *Racha* signifies a simple witless Fellow, commonly used to upbraid such as were weak and ignorant: *Mage*, or *thou Fool*, signifies one that is not only ignorant, but wicked and ungodly; as the Scripture frequently useth the word in that sense, which is a far greater Reproach, than merely to call him weak or silly. Now according to these three degrees of Sins, our Saviour proportions three degrees of Punishment to be inflicted on those that are guilty of them, each severer than other; causeless Anger shall bring them in danger of the Judgment; *Racha*, in danger of the Council; and *thou Fool*, in danger of Hell-fire; that is, they shall make them liable to the Punishments inflicted by these.

But



But now to understand the full scope and meaning of our Saviour in these Allusions, we must have recourse to the History of the *Jewish* Commonwealth: and there we find that they had two Courts of Judicature established among them, the lesser and the greater Sanhedrim; the lesser consisted of twenty three Persons, and was erected not only in *Jerusalem*, but in every considerable City among the *Jews*, where there were sixscore Householders; these had Authority to inflict Capital Punishments upon Malefactors: but yet as the highest Crimes fell not under their Cognizance, so neither their severest Punishments under their Award. And this Consistory our Saviour calls here the Judgment; and tells, That whosoever is angry with his Brother without a cause, shall be liable to a Punishment correspondent to that which this Sanhedrim was impower'd to inflict; still applying Temporals to Spirituals, that is, he shall be liable to Eternal Death, though not so severely executed, as it would be for Crimes of a more heinous nature.

*Vide Span-*  
*hem dub.*  
*Evang.*  
*dub. 139.*

Their greater Sanhedrim was their Supreme Court of Judicature, and consisted of seventy Elders, besides their chief Speaker or Moderator. You will find their first Institution to have been by Divine Authority, *Numb. 11. 16.* They sat only in *Jerusalem*; their Sentence was decisive and determining, from which there lay no Appeal: they were to Judge of all harder matters, which could not be determin'd by other Courts, as Causes concerning a whole Tribe, or the whole Nation; Causes of War and Peace; Causes concerning the High-Priest, and the Mission and Authority of Prophets that spake unto them in the Name of the Lord: And this may be the occasion of that Speech of our Saviour, *It cannot be that a Prophet perish out of Jerusalem*; because in *Jerusalem* alone was this Sanhedrim constituted, which was to Judge of the Prophets, whether they were true or false: this Sanhedrim our Saviour here calls the Council. And they had Power not only of Life and Death, (as the other had)

*Luke 13.*  
*33.*

had) but likewise of inflicting Death in a more severe and tormenting manner than the other. And therefore our Saviour saith, Whosoever shall call his Brother *Racha*, a vain witleſs Fellow, ſhall be in danger of the Council; wherein he ſtill brings the degrees of Punishments among the *Jews*, to allude to the Punishment of Sins in Hell; and ſo the meaning is, that as he who ſhall cauſeleſly be angry with his Brother, expoſeth himſelf to the danger of eternal Death; ſo he that ſhall ſuffer his anger to break forth into any reproachful or reviling Language, although his Taunts be not very bitter nor biting, only to call him a weak ſilly Perſon; yet hereby he incurs the danger of a ſeverer Sentence, and execution of it upon him for ever.

But now the ſevereſt Sentence which this Sanhedrim could pronounce againſt the greateſt Malefactors, was that they ſhould be burnt alive with Fire. This Execution was always performed in the Vally of *Hinnom*, joyning to *Jeruſalem*, which being a place wherein were frequent Fires made, both in Idolatrous times for the ſacrificing of their Children to *Moloch*, and in their Purer times for conſuming the Filth of their City, and that which was as bad, their Malefactors; it is not unfrequent in the Scripture to denote Hell by this *Tophet*, this Vally of *Hinnom*; which for its continual Fires, was a lively Type and Representation of it; yea, the very Scripture-name for Hell, *Telma*, ſeems to be derived from the Vally of *Hinnom*.

Now as Burning of Malefactors in *Gehennâ*, or the Vally of *Hinnom*, was among the *Jews* one of their higheſt and ſevereſt Punishments, and never inflicted but where the Crime was very groſs and flagitious; ſo ſaith our Saviour, He that ſaith to his Brother, *Mæſet*, *Thou Fool*, ſhall be in danger of *Gehennâ*, of Hell-fire, i. e. of a ſeverer Punishment in the true Hell, than thoſe who were either cauſeleſly angry, or expreſſed their anger in more tolerable Reproaches, although even they alſo ſhall (without Repentance) be eternally puniſht.

## An Exposition upon

nisht. So that the fence of our Saviour in all this Allusion seems to be this: That whereas the Scribes and Pharisees had restrain'd that Command, *Thou shalt not kill*, only to actual Murder, as if nothing else were forbidden besides open Violence and Blood; our Saviour contrarywise teacheth, That not only that furious and barbarous Sin of Murder, but also rash and causeless Anger, though it only estuate and boyl in the Heart, much more if it cast forth its foam at the Mouth in reviling Speeches, fall under that Prohibition, *Thou shalt not kill*. All these Degrees deserve to be punisht with eternal Death; but, as among the Jews, some were punisht with lighter, others with more grievous Penalties, so shall it be at the great Judgment: Anger in our Hearts shall be condemn'd with eternal Punishments; but if it break forth into reviling Expressions, the Condemnation shall be more intolerable, and by so much more, by how much the Reproaches are more bitter and sarcastical.

This, in brief, I take to be the true meaning of this difficult Speech of our Saviour, the whole scope whereof shews, That not only the gross Acts of Sin, but also the inward Dispositions, and corrupt Affections unto Sin, and every degree and tendency towards it, are forbidden and threatned by the holy Law of God.

So likewise, Verse 27 of this 5th Chapter, *Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery. But I say unto you, That whosoever shall look upon a woman to lust after her, hath committed adultery already with her in his heart*. Here our Saviour brings inward Concupiscence to the Bar, and makes the Heart and Eye plead guilty, although possibly shame or fear might restrain the grosser acts of Filthiness.

Thus, by these few Instances, although many more might be added, I have shewn, that the same Precept which forbids the outward acts of Sin, forbids likewise the inward desires and motions of Sin in the Heart.

And

And indeed there is a great deal of reason for it : For God who is our Law-giver, is a Spirit ; he seeth and converseth with our Spirits. There is not the least thought that flits in thy Soul, not the least shadow of an imagination cast upon thy Fancy, not the stillest breathing of a desire in the Heart, but God is privy to it ; he sees to the very bottom of that deep spring and source of Thoughts that is in thy Heart ; he beholds them in their causes and occasions ; and knows our thoughts, as the Psalmist speaks, afar off : he beholds our Souls more clearly and distinctly than we can behold one anothers Faces ; and therefore it is but fit and rational that his Laws should reach as far as his Knowledge ; and that he should prescribe Rules to that, whose irregularity he can observe and punish. Hence it is that the Apostle, considering what an Energy the Law had upon that part of Man which seemed most free and uncontroled, his Mind and Spirit, calls it a Spiritual Law, *We know, saith he, that the law is spiri-* Rom. 7.  
*tual ; and that because the searching and convincing power* 14.  
*of it enters into our Spirits, cites our thoughts, accuseth our desires, condemns our affections, which no other Law in the World, besides this, can do : For how justly ridiculous would those be, that should command us not to think dishonourably of them, not to desire any thing to their detriment and prejudice ; and should threaten us with Punishments in case of Disobedience : but the Law of God comes into our Consciences with Authority, and in the Name of the great God, requires his Peace to be kept among our tumultuous and seditious Affections, beats down their carnal Weapons, and gives Conscience a power either to suppress all rebellious Insurrections against the Majesty of Heaven, or else to indite, accuse, and torment Men for them. And therefore the Word of God is by the Apostle said to be* Heb. 4. 12.  
*quick and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joynts and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.*

F

That

That is therefore a fourth Rule for the right understanding of the Extent and Latitude of the Commands.

- V. *Fifthly*, Another general Rule is this, That the Command doth not only forbid the Sin that is expressly mentioned, but all Occasions and Inducements leading unto that Sin; and therefore we may observe, that there are many Sins that are not expressly forbidden in any one Commandment, but yet are reductively forbidden in every one, towards the Violation of which they may prove Occasions. And as some one Sin may be an occasion to all others, so it may be well said to be forbidden in every Precept of the Decalogue; I shall instance only in two of this kind, and they are, Familiarity with evil Persons, or keeping of evil Company; and that reigning Sin of Drunkenness.

For the first of these it is evident, that though it be not expressly and *in terminis* forbidden in any one Commandment, yet as it is a strong Temptation and Inducement to the Violation of each of them, so it is a Sin against them all. There are no such sure Factors for the Devil, as wicked Company, who will strive to rub their Vices upon as many as they can infect: and therefore thou who delightest in the company either of Atheists, or Idolaters, or Swearers, or Sabbath-breakers, or Disobedient Rebels, or Murderers, or Whore-mongers, or Thieves, or Perjured Persons, or Covetous Muck worms, thou art guilty of the breach of each of these Commandments; for thou runnest thyself into the very Snare of the Devil, and takest the same course to make thyself so, which made them such. And therefore we are all forbidden to keep Company with such prophane and profligate Wretches, by the very same Commandment which forbids their Impieties, whatsoever they be.

And as for the second Sin I mentioned, Drunkenness, it is now-a-days grown to such an height of Impudence, that it confronts the Sun: And whereas in the Apostles days, even among

among the Heathens themselves, shame so far prevailed upon Vice and Debauchery, that it left Sobriety the Day, and took only the Night to itself, for they that would be drunk were drunk in the Night; yet now among us Christians, Wickedness is grown so profligate, that we meet the Drunkard reeling and staggering even at Noon-day, and ready to discharge his Vomit in our Faces or our Bosoms. Possibly some, who are besotted with this loathsome Vice, may think it no great Wickedness, because it is not expressly forbidden in this Summary of the Law; and so they cry, Peace, peace, to themselves, altho' they go on to add Drunkenness to Thirst.

But of this common Sin I say, that it is not against any one particular Commandment of the Law, but against all; for since the Moral Law is the Law and Rule of right Reason, the whole of it must needs be broken, when Reason itself is perverted by Riot and Intemperance; the Man turned out of Doors, and the Beast taken in. So that indeed Drunkenness is not so much any one Sin, as it is all; never were all the Commandments more surely broken, when *Moses* cast the two Tables out of his hands, than they are, in another sense, broken by the Drunkard. For he hath put off the Man and hath put on the Swine; and into such Swine it is that the Devil enters, as surely as ever he entered into the Herd of the *Gadarenes*; and drives them furiously down the Precipices of all manner of Sins and Vices, till at length he plungeth and drowns them in the Lake of Fire and Brimstone, and there let them drink their fill.

And therefore whatsoever is commanded, or whatsoever is forbidden, Drunkenness is forbidden, as being the greatest Advantage that the Devil hath to prompt Men to those Abominations, that were they in their right senses, they would abhor and detest. Is he, think you, fit to worship God, and to take him for his own God, who is not himself his own Man? Is not he guilty of Idolatry, who makes *Bacchus* his Deity, giving him the Libations

## An Exposition upon

of his Vomits, and falling prostrate before him? Can he forbear taking the Name of God in vain, who hath taken the Creatures of God to his bane; whose Tongue is set afloat with his excessive Cups, and whose Mouth the Devil Taps to let his Blasphemies, and Oaths, and Curses, and fearful Execrations run out the more fluently? Can he keep holy the Sabbath-day, whose last Night's Drunkenness and Excess, rocks him asleep either in his own House, or in the House of God? Is he fit to honour his Parents, who dishonoureth his own Body? Can he abstain from Murder, who first takes the ready way to destroy his own Body, and damn his own Soul; and then, through the rage of Wine, is ready upon every slight provocation to mingle his Vomit with the Blood of others? Can he keep himself from filthy Uncleaness, whose riotous Table doth but prepare him for a polluted Bed? Shall not he assevere that which is false, whose Reason is so blinded by the fumes of his Intemperance, that he knows no longer the difference between Truth and Falshood? And finally, what bounds can be set to his Concupiscence, who by thus blinding the eyes of his Reason, hath only left him Fancy and Appetite, both which the Devil rules and governs?

Thus you see there are some Sins, which though they are not expressly forbidden in the Decalogue; yet are virtually and reductively forbidden, as being the foams and the occasions of others; and among these, Drunkenness especially, which strikes at every Law that God hath enjoined us, the Guilt whereof is Universal, as well as the Sin Epidemical.

- VI. *Sixthly*, Another Rule for the understanding of the Decalogue is this, That the Commands of the first Table are not to be kept for the sake of the Second; but the Commands of the Second are to be kept for the sake of the First. The first Table commands us those Duties which immediately

ly respect the Service and Worship of God; the second those which respect our Demeanour towards Men: Now the Worship and Service of God is not to be performed out of respect to Men; but our Duty towards Men is to be observed out of respect to God. For he that worships God that he might thereby recommend himself to Men, is but an Hypocrite and Formalist; and he that performs his Duty towards Men, without respecting God in it, is but a meer civil Moralist. The first Table commands us not to worship Idols; not to swear; not to prophane the Sabbath. The Laws of the Magistrate commands the very same; and those who are guilty of the breach of them, are liable to Humane Punishments: but if we therefore abstain from these Sins, because they will expose us to shame, or suffering among Men; if therefore only we worship God, that Men may respect and venerate us, all the pomp and ostentation of our Religion is but Hypocrisy; and as such shall have its Reward: for God requireth to be served not for Man's sake, but for His own.

The second Table prescribes the right ordering of our Conversation towards Men; that we should be dutiful and obedient to our Superiours; loving and kind to our Equals; charitable and beneficial to our Inferiours; and just and righteous towards all. These Duties are not to be done only for Man's sake, but for God's; and those who perform them without respecting Him in them, lose both their Acceptance and Reward. And therefore our Saviour condemns that love and beneficence which proceeds merely upon Humane and Prudential Accounts, *Matth. 5. 46. If you love them only which love you, what reward have you? do not even the Publicans the same? And Luke 6. 33, 34. If you do good to them which do good to you, what thanks have you? for sinners also do the same. And if you lend to them of whom you hope to receive, what thanks have you?*



*you ? for, sinners lend to sinners, to receive as much again.*

But we ought not therefore to serve God for Mans sake ; but we ought to love Man for God's sake ; and to perform the Duties of the second Table out of conscience and respect to God ; and that Respect is threefold :

1. *First*, Obedience to his Authority ; for then what we do for Men is an acceptable work and service, when we do it out of a sincere principle of obeying the Will and Command of God.
2. *Secondly*, Conformity unto his Example. And this our Saviour urgeth, *Matth. 5. 45. That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven, for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good ; and sendeth rain on the just and the unjust.*
3. *Thirdly*, A comfortable Hope and Expectation of his Eternal Reward : *Luke 6. 35. Love your enemies, and do good, and your reward shall be great.*

This is the way to exalt Morality to be truly Divine ; and to make whatsoever we do towards Men, to be an acceptable Service unto God. By this means we interest Him in all the Acts of our Charity, our Justice, and Temperance ; and we may be assured, that what we thus do for His sake, shall in the end be rewarded by his Bounty.

- VII. *Seventhly*, Another Rule is this, That the Commands of the first Table, so far forth as they are purely Moral, supersede our Obedience to the Commands of the second Table, when they are not both consistent. As for instance, We are in the second Table required to obey our Parents, and to maintain and preserve our own Lives ; yet if we are brought into such circumstances as that we must necessarily disobey either God or them, either pro-  
stitute

stitute our Souls to Guilt, or our Lives to Execution, in such a case our Saviour hath instructed us, *Luke 14. 26.* *If any man come unto me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, yea and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple.* Indeed a positive hatred of these is unnatural and impious; but the hatred which our Saviour here intends, is comparative, *i. e.* a loving them less than Christ, than Religion and Piety. And if the commands of the one, or the concerns of the other are at any time to be violated, or neglected, it must only be when we are sure that they are incompatible with a good Conscience, and true Godliness.

Again in the *eighth* place, Whereas in the first Table VIII. there is one Command partly Moral and Natural, partly positive and instituted, and that is our Observation of the Sabbath: we may observe that our Obligation to the Duties of the second Table, doth often times supersede our Obedience unto that Command of the first Table. It frequently happens, that Works of Necessity, and Mercy, will not permit us to be employed in Works of Piety, nor to sanctifie the Sabbath after such a manner, as else we ought: For the Lord requireth Mercy rather than Sacrifice, *Hosea 6. 6.* And this our Saviour alledgeth, *Matth. 9. 13.* In which sense it holds true, That *the sabbath was made for man, not man for the sabbath*, Mark 2. 27. Whatsoever therefore is a Work of Necessity, or a Work of Charity and Mercy, and that not only towards Man, but even towards brute Beasts themselves, may lawfully be done on the Sabbath-day, without bringing upon us the guilt of Prophanation; for that which is purely Moral in the second Table, doth in a sort derogate from what is but positive and instituted in the first.

A

IX. A *ninth* Rule is this, Whatsoever is forbidden in any Command, both all the signs and symptoms of it, and likewise all the effects and consequents of it, are forbidden in the same. Thus under the Prohibition of Idolatry falls the Prohibition of the feasting in the Idol-Temples, and eating Meats sacrificed to them, as being too evident a sign and tessera of our Communion with them. So in the same Command wherein Pride is forbidden, (which is chiefly the first and second, for a proud Man sets up himself for his God, is his own Idol, and is his own Idolater,) in the same are forbidden all the signs and effects of Pride, as a lofty Look, and a mincing Gate, an affected Behaviour, and vain fantastique Apparel; against which the Prophet largely declaims, *Isai. 3.* the 16 to the end; because although Pride doth not formally consist in these things, yet they are signs and effects of Pride, and contrary unto that Modesty and Decency which God requires.

X. The *tenth* and last Rule is this; The Connexion between the Commands is so close and intimate, and they are so linkt together, that whosoever breaketh one of them is guilty of all: Now that Bond which runs thorough them, and knits them thus together, is the Authority and Sovereignty of God injoyning their Obedervance; so that whosoever fails in his due Obedience to any one, doth virtually and interpretatively transgress them all. Thus we find it expressly affirm'd; *James 2. 10. Whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, is guilty of all.* Not as though the Violation of one Precept were actually the Violation of another, (for many may Steal, and yet not actually Murder; many again may Murder, and yet not actually commit Adultery.) But this place of the Apostle must be understood of violating that Authority

thority which passeth thorough them all, and by which all the Commandments have their Sanction: For since the Authority of the great God is one and the same in all these Laws, he that shall so far disrespect this Authority, as wilfully to break one of them, evidently declares, that he owns it not in any: And although other considerations may restrain such an one from those Crimes which are forbidden by some Commandments, yet his Observance of them is no part of Obedience; nor can it be interpreted to be performed out of Conscience and Respect towards God, for were it so, the same Authority which withheld him from Murder, or Theft, or Adultery, would likewise restrain him from Lying, or taking the Name of God in vain: and he that is guilty of these Offences, is likewise guilty of all, because the same Authority is stamp'd upon them all alike, and is alike violated in the transgression of each; and this very reason the Apostle subjoyns to his assertion, Verse 11. *He that said, Do not commit adultery; said also, Do not kill.* Now if thou commit no Adultery, yet if thou Kill, thou art become a Transgressor of the Law; yea, of the whole Law, as breaking that Fence which God had set about his Law, even his sovereign and absolute Authority.

These are the Rules which may direct your Understandings to a right Knowledge of the Latitude and Comprehensiveness of the Law. As for the Application of them to particular Cases, I must leave that to the Judgment of Christian Prudence; only in the ensuing Treatise you will meet with sundry Examples of it.

It will be now requisite that I speak something (and that chiefly because others have spoken so much) concerning the Order of these Commands; the Number of them is no way questioned, for God himself hath determined them to be Ten Commandments, *Exod. 34. 28.*

G

but

but the Method and Disposition of them is much controverted ; and I think with more Heat and Contention than the Cause deserves ; for if all that God hath spoken be intirely delivered to us, what great concern is it, whether this or that Command be reckoned the second, third, or fourth ? This certainly tends but little to Piety ; and we had need rather to imploy our Care how to keep them, than how to reckon them.

And therefore, waving all other Differences, (as that of *Thom. A. Hefychius*, making the first Command to be this, *I am the Lord thy God* ; which we with good reason affirm to be only a part of the Preface ; and leaving out the fourth concerning the Sanctification of the Sabbath ; and that of the seventh, placing, *Thou shalt not Kill*, after, *Thou shalt not commit Adultery* ; *Thou shalt not Steal* ; whereas we according to the *Hebrew* Verity place it before ; ) all that I shall remarke is, the Difference between the Papists and us in the Enumeration of the Ten Commandments : They generally hold, that there are but three Commands in the first Table ; and therefore make seven in the second : and to compleat this number, as they joyn the first and the second into one, so they divide the tenth into two. Concerning this Division, or Union, we would not be much contentious with them, were there not a Sacrilegious and Idolatrous Design coucht under it ; for finding the second Commandment to strike so directly at their Image-Worship, they thought it expedient to deny it to be any distinct Precept of itself, but only an Appendix or Exposition of the former, *Thou shalt have no other Gods before Me* ; that so they might with the better colour omit it, as generally they have done in all their Books of Devotion, and for Instruction of the People. So that of those few among them that can rehearse the Decalogue, you shall find none that will repeat, *Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven Image, thou shalt not bow down thy self unto them,*

*them, nor serve them*; as not knowing that any such thing is forbidden them by God. And yet that they may make up the full number of the Commandments, they divide the tenth into two; one forbidding the coveting of our Neighbour's Wife; and the other, the coveting of any other of his Possessions.

The only Authority they produce from Antiquity, for this Order of the Decalogue, is that of *St. Austine*; and it is very true, that he doth in many places of his Works so conjoin and divide them: but far from any design of promoting Idolatry, or keeping the People in Ignorance, that the worshipping of Images was forbidden: Yet in this particular he went contrary to the current of all former Antiquity; yea, contrary to the very order of the Scripture, for whereas they say that the ninth Commandment is, *Thou shalt not covet thy Neighbour's Wife*; and the tenth, *Thou shalt not covet thy Neighbour's House, nor his Servant, &c.* If we consult *Exod. 20. 17.* we shall find that the Command runs thus: *Thou shalt not covet thy neighbours house, thou shalt not covet thy neighbours wife, &c.* from which it certainly follows, that they cannot make two Precepts, but appertain to one.

*Aug. Ep. 209. ad Januar.  
Sermon 148. de temporis. Lib.  
15. contra. Faust. Manich.  
Tract. 3. in Johan.*

But enough of this, which I had not mentioned, had it not been concealed out of such an impious Design.

And now I think my way is clear to the Words themselves.

In them we have the Preface, and the Precepts.

The Preface in these words: *I am the Lord thy God, which have brought thee out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage.*

The Precepts are ten; whereof the first and chief is, *Thou shalt have no other gods before me.*

## An Exposition upon

The Preface carries an equal Respect and Reverence to all the Commandments, and contains a strong Argument in it to enforce the Obedience of them.

And as Kings and Princes do usually prefix their Names and Titles before those Laws and Edicts which are set forth by them, to gain the more Attention, and the greater Veneration to what they publish; so here the great God, who is the King of Kings, being to proclaim a Law to his People of *Israel*, that he might affect them with the deeper Reverence of his Authority, and make them the more afraid to transgress those Laws that were enacted by so mighty a Potentate, and so glorious a Majesty, He displays and blazons his Name and his Stile before them, *I am the Lord thy God, which brought thee out of the land of Egypt, and out of the house of bondage*; that they might learn to fear his glorious and fearful Name, *The Lord thy God*; as we find it, *Dent. 28. 58.*

Now as all Arguments that are prevalent and cogent, are adapted to work upon one of these two Passions by which we are swayed in all the actions of our Lives, either our Fear or our Love, so here likewise God hath accommodated himself to our Temper, and proclaims,

- I. *First*, His Authority to beget Fear, *I am the Lord thy God.*
- II. *Secondly*, His Benefits and Mercies to ingage Love, *The Lord thy God, that brought thee out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage.*

And both these, that having so strong an Obligation upon our very Natures, as the Motives of Love and Fear, he might the more readily work us unto Obedience. For what Motives can be urged more enforcing than these, which are drawn both from Power and Goodness; the one obliging us to Subjection, the other to Gratitude?

*First,*

I.

*First*, He is the Lord God, the great Creator, the only Proprietor, the absolute Governour and Disposer of all things : and therefore upon this account we owe an awful Observance to all his Laws and Injunctions. It is but fit and just that we should be subject unto Him that created us, and who hath infinite Power for our Contumacies and Rebellions eternally to destroy us. He is the Lord God, the great and glorious One whose Kingdom is from Everlasting to Everlasting, and whose Dominion hath no Bounds, either of Time or Place : *Behold*, saith the Prophet, *the nations are but as a drop of the bucket, and are accounted but as the small dust of the ballance : behold, he taketh up the isles as a very little thing. All nations before him are as nothing, and they are accounted unto him less than nothing and vanity*, Isai. 40. 15, 17. His Voice shakes the Heavens, and removes the Earth out of its place ; his Way is in the Whirlwind ; Storms and Tempests are his Harbingers ; and the Clouds are the Dust raised by his Feet ; the Mountains quake at his Presence ; at his Displeasure the Hills melt away ; the World and all the Inhabitants of it are dissolved : His Fury is poured out like Fire, and the Rocks are thrown down by him : His Hand spans the Heavens, and he holds all the Waters of the Sea in the hollow of it. Heaven is the Throne of his Glory, and the Earth his Foot stool ; his Pavilion round about him, dark Waters and thick Clouds of the Skie ; ten thousand times ten thousand glorious Spirits stand alway ministering before him ; they flie on his Errands, and are ready prest to execute his Sovereign Will and Pleasure : Who is like unto thee O Lord, glorious in Holiness, fearful in thy Praises, doing Wonders, and therefore who would not fear thee O King of Nations, and tremble and be astonished when once thou art angry ? Wilt thou then, O vile and wretched Sinner, despise the Authority and Majesty of the



## An Exposition upon

the great God, before whom all the Powers of Heaven and Earth lye prostrate? Darest thou infringe his Laws, and violate his Commands, who is so great and terrible a God, that he can destroy thee by the very breath of his Nostrils? *By the breath of his nostrils they are consumed, Job 4. 9.* Yea, he can look thee to death: They perish at the rebuke of thy countenance, *Psal. 80. 16.* Art thou able to contend with this God; art thou a fit match for the Almighty? Can thy heart endure, or thy hands be strong, in the day when the Lord shall deal with thee, and come to recompence Vengeance upon thee for all thy Transgressions? Who among you can dwell with the devouring Fire? who among you can dwell with everlasting Burnings?

Certainly, did we but frequently thus over-awe our hearts with the serious consideration of the dread Majesty and supreme Authority of the great God, we should not dare so presumptuously to provoke him, as we do. Fear is a most excellent Preservative from Sin; and a strong Fence that God hath set about his Law, to keep us from breaking those Bounds which he hath prescribed us. And therefore the wise Man gives us this Advice, *Eccles. 12. 13. Fear God and keep his commandments.* And the Psalmist, *Psal. 4. 4. Stand in awe and sin not.*

2. *Secondly,* As the Authority of God is set forth to move us to Obedience by working upon our Fear; so his Benefits and Mercies are declared to win us to it from a Principle of Love and gratitude: *The Lord thy God, who hath brought thee out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage.* And indeed this, though it be a soft, yet is a most powerful and effectual Argument: Hath God surrounded thee with Blessings, and loaded thee every day with his Benefits; hast thou received thy Life, thy Being from him, and so many Comforts in which thou takest delight, and  
he

he allows thee so to do ; hast thou been delivered by his watchful Providence from many Deaths and Dangers, restored from Sickness, or preserved in Health ; doth he feed thee at his Table, and cloath thee out of his Wardrobe ; nay, what is infinitely more, hath he given thee his only Son, and his Son given thee his Life and most precious Blood ; hath he sent thee his Gospel, and in it the exceeding great and precious Promises of eternal Glory, a Glory which Hope durst not behold enough to expect, nor is Imagination large enough to conceive ; hath he sent thee his Spirit to seal and ratifie all these Promises to thee ; hath he crown'd thy head with many rich Blessings here, and will he crown it with Joy and Blessedness hereafter, and canst thou, O Soul, be so unkind and disingenuous as to deny any thing to that God, who hath denied nothing to thee ? Canst thou refuse him the only thing he requires of thee, the only Testimony which thou canst give, that thou hast any sence of his Favour ? and especially considering he requires it only that he may reward it with farther Blessings. Canst thou wrong that God who hath been so kind and gracious unto thee, and is continually doing thee good ? Canst thou despise his Precepts, who hath regarded thy Prayers ? Wilt not thou hear him speaking unto thee, who hath often heard thee when thou hast cryed unto him, and hath helped and saved thee ? Certainly the Ingenuity of Humane Nature forbids it, the Love of God constraineth otherwise, especially since he hath required Obedience from us as the evidence and expression of our Love to him ; *Job. 14. 21. He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me.* And in the Second Epistle of St. John, v. 6. *This is love, that we walk after his commandments.* And that which is a most cogent Motive, thine own Interest and eternal Concernments engage thee to it : For *what doth the Lord thy God require of thee, but to fear the Lord thy God, and to love him, and*

## An Exposition upon

*to keep his commandments, which I command thee this day for thy good, Deut. 10. 12, 13.* God might have required from us the very same Obedience which now he doth, without promising us any Reward for it ; for we owe him all that we can possibly do, as he is the Author of our Beings ; and every power and faculty of our Souls ought to be employed for him who gave them unto us. But when the great God hath been so far pleased to condescend from his Prerogative, as to command us nothing but what hath already brought us very great advantages, and will for the future bring us far greater, when His hands shall be as full of Blessings, as His mouth is of Commands ; when he enjoins us a Work that in itself is Wages, and yet promiseth us Wages for doing of that Work ; when the Mercies he hath already given us do oblige us, and the Mercies he hath promised yet to give us do allure us ; certainly we must needs be the most disingenuous of all Creatures, and the greatest Enemies to our own Happiness, if these Considerations do not win us to yield him that Obedience which redounds not at all to his profit and advantage, but our own.

Thus you see how God hath enforced the Observation of his Law upon us, both by his Authority and by his Mercy ; the one to work upon our Fear, the other upon our Love, and both to engage us to Obedience.

Now here it is observable, that in the rehearsal of those Mercies which should oblige unto Duty, mention is made only of those which seem to concern the *Israelites*, and no other People, *I am the Lord thy God, which brought thee out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage* : From which some would infer, that the Decalogue only respects them ; and that the Commands then given, do not at all appertain unto us, no more than the Benefits commemorated.

But

But the Answer is easie : For this Mercy here mentioned of Deliverance from *Egypt*, and the House of Bondage, is to be understood either Literally or Typically.

If we understand it Literally, so indeed it refers only to the People of *Israel*, whom God brought out of *Egypt* with a mighty Hand, and with a stretched out Arm ; and such a series of Miracles, that they were almost as ordinary as the common effects of God's Providence.

But if we understand this Typically and Mystically, so it is true, that God hath brought us also out of *Egypt*, and out of the House of Bondage : and therefore the inforcement of the Commandments upon this account and consideration, belongs to us Christians, as well as it did belong to the Church of the *Jews* ; for should we run up the Allegory to the Spiritual sense of it, we shall find a wonderful Agreement betwixt them, and a near Representation of our State in the State of the *Israelites* ; let it suffice to compare them together only in a few remarkable Instances : As they were kept in Bondage under the rigorous Tyranny of *Pharaoh*, who sought both by Policy and Power to destroy them ; so were we kept in Bondage under the Tyranny of the Devil, of whom *Pharaoh* was a black Type and Shadow ; and as God delivered them from his hand by a Temporal Salvation, so hath he delivered us from the power of the Devil by a Spiritual Salvation, redeeming us from the slavish Employment of lading ourselves with thick Clay ; and leading us through the Red Sea of his Son's Blood, in which all our Spiritual Enemies are destroyed ; and conducting us thorough the Wilderness of this World, unto the promised *Canaan*, that Land that floweth with Milk and Honey, the Seat of Rest, and Eternal Joy, and Felicity, even Heaven itself : and therefore if the consideration of a Temporal Deliverance were so powerful a Motive to ingage the *Israelites* unto Obedience ; how much more effectually should we be obliged unto it, whose De-

H

liverance

liverance is far greater than theirs was ; for God hath delivered us from the Power of Darkneſs, and hath tranſlated us into the Kingdom of his dear Son, *Coloff. 1. 13.* He hath delivered us from the Wrath to come, *1 Theſ. 1. 10.* He hath aboliſhed Death for us, and brought Life and Immortality to light through the Goſpel, *2 Tim. 1. 10.* And therefore as our Deliverance is Spiritual, ſo ought our Obedience to be ; that being delivered from the Juſtice of God, the condemning Power of the Law, the reigning Power of Sin, the Sting of an accusing Conſcience, the Rage and Malice of the Devil, and the intolerable Torments of Hell, we might with all Love and Thankfulneſs chearfully ſerve that God, whoſe Mercy, hath been extended towards us in thoſe things which are of higheſt and moſt precious concernment.

And thus you ſee the reaſon of this Preface, *I am the Lord thy God, which brought thee out of the land of Egypt ;* and how it is both applicable and obligatory to us Chriſtians, as well as to the Jews ; containing a Declaration of God's Authority to inforce, and of his Mercy to oblige us to the Obedience of thoſe Laws which he delivers.

I come now to the Precepts themſelves ; whereof the firſt and chiefeſt is, *Thou ſhalt have no other gods before me :* Which becauſe it is Negative, and all Negatives depend upon, and muſt be meaſured by the Truth of their contrary Affirmative, therefore I ſhall firſt conſider what Duties are commanded in this Precept ; and then, what Sins are prohibited.

Four Things are here required :

- I. *Firſt*, That we muſt have a God : Againſt Atheiſm.
- II. *Secondly*, That we muſt have the Lord Jehovah for our God : Which forbids Idolatry.

*Thirdly*,

*Thirdly*, That we must have the only true God the Lord III.  
Jehovah alone for our God : And this forbids *Politheism*,  
or the worshipping of many Gods ; and *Samaritanism*, or  
the worshipping of false Gods together with the True, like  
those *Samaritans* spoken of, *2 Kings* 17. 33. who feared  
the Lord, and yet served their own Gods ; making a  
strange Medley in Religion, and blending those things to-  
gether that were utterly irreconcilable : as if they intended  
not only to be Partakers themselves with Devils, but to  
make God so too : which is the greatest Gratification that  
can be given to that proud and wicked Spirit, whose Am-  
bition it is to Emulate and Rival God in Worship. The  
Apostle hath told us, *That those things which the Gentiles*  
*sacrifice, they sacrifice to devils, and not to God,* *1 Cor.* 10.  
20.

Now thus to joyn any other thing with God, as the  
Object of our Worship, is infinitely to debase and despar-  
age him ; since it intimates, that something besides God is  
excellent, and perfect as Himself. And therefore *Zephan.*  
1. 5. God severely threatens to cut off, and to destroy  
those that worship and swear by the Lord, and that swear  
by *Malcham*.

*Fourthly*, It requires that all these Services and Acts of IV.  
Worship which we tender unto the true and only God, be  
performed with sincerity and true Devotion : This is im-  
plied in that expression before me, *Thou shalt have no other*  
*gods before me*, or in my sight : And this forbids both Pro-  
phaneness on the one hand, and Hypocrisie on the other.  
For because the most secret and retired Apartments of the  
Heart, are all naked and bare in the sight of God, and our  
very Spirits are as it were dissected, and so exposed to his  
view and observation ; therefore to have no other God be-

## An Exposition upon

fore him, denotes that our serving and worshipping of him ought to be sincere and affectionate. It is not enough to have no other God before Men, not to fall down prostrate before any visible Idol set up in a Temple ; but the Law is Spiritual , and searcheth the very thoughts and inward parts of the Soul, and if there be any Idol set up in the Heart, although it be in the darkeſt corner of it, any ſecret Luſt, or hidden Sin, which is the Soul's Idol, and keeps it from being chaſt and true to its God ; any crooked ends and ſiniſter reſpects in the Worſhip of God, this is to have another God in the ſight of Jehovah, and before him ; Indeed we are very apt to reſt contented if we can but approve ourſelves before Men, and carry a fair ſhew of Religion and Godlineſs. But conſider how weak and fooliſh this is : For firſt, we cozen them with our Appearances ; and then we cozen ourſelves with their Opinions of us. It is not only before Men (whoſe ſight is terminated in the bark and outside of things) that we offer up our Services, but before that God who is the Searcher of the Heart, and the Tryer of the Reins, who looks quite through us, and judgeth not according to outward appearance, but judgeth righteous Judgment : For us to regard Men, and ſeek to commend ourſelves to them in the Service of God, is as great a Folly and Irreverence, as it would be for one who is to treat with a mighty Prince, to regard and reverence only the Images in the Tapſtry and Hangings : Alas, Men are but as ſo many blind Images, in reſpect of God, they cannot ſee the heart, nor the affections ; and thoſe outward Acts of Worſhip which they do ſee and commend without the heart, are deſpiſed by God ; he requireth truth in the inward Parts, and is not delighted with the oſtentation of Performance, but with the ſincerity of Intention : for every one is delighted with that which doth moſt of all declare ſome ſingular excellency that is in him. But now it is God's Excellency and Prerogative, to contemplate the  
Heart,

Heart, to weigh and consider the Spirits of Men; and therefore he is chiefly delighted in the unfeigned desires and breathings of the Heart after him, because by these we own him to be an all-knowing God: But when we perform Duties of Religion only to be seen and applauded of Men; we make God only our Pretence, but Men our Idols; and set up as many Gods before him, as we have Spectators and Observers.

And thus we have seen what positive Duties are required of us in this Precept: That we should Worship a God, and him the true God; and the true God only, and that in Truth and Sincerity, as doing all our Services before Him. So that you see this first Command respects Worship.

It would be too long, and indeed almost endless, to insist particularly on all the Duties that are included in the true and sincere Worship of the true and only God: I shall therefore speak only of the three chief and most remarkable ones,

*First*, The Love of God:

I.

*Secondly*, The Fear of God.

II.

*Thirdly*, Invocation of, and rendring Praise unto Him. III.

In these three especially doth consist the having the Lord for our God.

*First*, In this Command is required of us the most supreme and endeared Love of God; yea, indeed, the Love of God is not only the Sum of this, but of all the Commands of the first Table: And therefore (as I lately told you) when our Saviour would give an Abridgement of the

1st.



## An Exposition upon

the Law, he compriseth all the ten under two great Commands, *Matth. 22. 37, 38, 39. Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self.* From whence the Apostle deduceth that great Conclusion, *Rom. 13. 10. That Love is the fulfilling of the Law.* It is so, if not formally, yet virtually and effectively; for it will powerfully and sweetly sway us to yeild a ready Submission and Obedience to what is required of us; and that not only as it is the Dictate of Divine and Sovereign Authority, but from the free spontaneous Tendency of the Soul itself, which when it is once toucht with this celestial and serene Flame, must rebel against its own Inclinations, as well as against God's Commands, if it be not carried out towards that Object in which alone it can find full acquiescence and satisfaction.

Now this Love of God hath in it three Acts or Degrees, Desire, Joy, and Zeal:

- I. *First*, An earnest and panting Desire after God, *Psal. 42. 1, 2. As the hart panteth after the water-brooks, so panteth my soul after thee O God. My soul thirsteth for God, for the living God: oh when shall I come and appear before God?* As the poor imbois'd Deer that is clotey pursued, faints and melts with the heat of the Chace, and hasteth to the known River where it was wont to quench its thirst, to find both safety and refreshment there; so doth the holy amorous Soul reach and breathe after God; he thirsteth after the Water-books, the streams of his Ordinances, wherein God doth pour out his Grace and his Spirit to refresh the longing desires of this holy Impatience: But not being satisfied with this, he still makes up to the Fountain, and never rests contented, till he hath ingulph

ingulph't and plung'd himself into God, and is swallowed up in Beatitude.

*Secondly*, From the fruition of the beloved Object springeth Joy : for Joy is nothing else but the rest and acquiescence of Desire. And therefore according to the measures of God's communicating himself to our Souls; such proportionably will be the increases of our Joy. Something we enjoy of God in this life, whilst we are absent from him in the Body ; he is pleas'd to give us transient Glances of himself when he fills his Ordinances, and our Duties with his Spirit : and yet these reserved Communications are so ravishing, that the distended Soul is often forced, by the Agony of Sweetness, to cry out with holy *Si- meon*, *Now Lord let thy servant depart in peace, for mine eyes have seen thy salvation*. How over-flowing then will our Joy be, when we come to Heaven, where our fruition of God shall be intire and eternal ; where we shall see him as he is, and know him as we are known by him ; where the unveiled Glories of the Deity shall beat full upon us, and we for ever Sun ourselves in the Smiles of God. Certainly the Joy of such a State would be intolerable, but only that God who fills us, will then likewise enlarge and support us.

*Thirdly*, If our fruition of God be hindred and obstructed, our love to him will then express itself in an holy Zeal : Zeal is the Indignation of the Soul, and a Revenge that it takes upon whatsoever is an impediment to the obtaining its desires. The earnest desire of a true Saint, is the Enjoyment of God, and the Glory of God ; and of both these Sin is the only let and hindrance. And therefore a Soul that is passionate for God, hath not so great an Indignation against any thing as against Sin : Can he endure to see that God whom he loves dearer than his life, daily provoked

voked and injured ; to hear his Name blasphemed, to see his Ordinances despised, his Worship neglected, his Servants abused, and the most sacred Truths of Religion denied, and the sacred Mysteries of it derided ? He is the most meek and patient Man on Earth in his own concerns ; unwilling to observe the Wrongs that are done him, and much more to revenge them : but when God is injured, the dear Object of his Love and Joy, he can no longer refrain, but whatsoever befalls him, riseth up to vindicate his Honour, and thrusts himself between to receive those strokes which were aimed at God ; and what he cannot prevent, or reform, that he bitterly bewails.

This is true Zeal ; and he that saith he loves God, and yet is not thus zealous for him, is a Lyar.

Now trie your Love to God by these things : Are your desires fervent and affectionate after him ? Do you find an holy Impatience in your Spirit till you enjoy him ? Will nothing else content you but God ? Can you say, That there is none in Heaven nor in Earth that you desire in comparison with him ; and if the whole World were thrown into your bosoms for your Portion, you would pluck it thence, and cast it at your feet, resolving that you will not be put off with such Trifles ? Do you find a joy springing and diffusing itself through your hearts when you are engaged in Communion with him ? a sweet and potent Delight, to which all the Pleasures of Sin are but flat and insipid. Are you jealous for the Lord of Hosts ? Are your Anger and Grief never so much kindled for any Wrongs that are done unto you, as they are for the Provocations that are daily committed against the great Majesty of Heaven ? Canst thou mourn and weep for these in secret, and if thou hast power and authority to do it, punish and avenge them openly ? thou maist for thy comfort conclude, that certainly God hath kindled this heavenly flame of Love

Love in thy breast ; a flame that aspires Heaven-ward, and will at last carry up thy Soul with it, and lodge it there where the Desire of Love shall be satisfied, the Joy of Love perfected, and the Zeal of Love eternally rewarded.

So much for the first principal Duty required in this first Precept, The Love of God.

*Secondly*, In this Command is required of us the Fear of God ; for certainly we cannot have the Lord for our God, unless we supremely Fear and Reverence him, yea, as Love ; so the Fear of God is made the Sum of all the Commandments, and indeed the Substance of all Religion : For although it be but one particular Branch and Member of that Worship and Service which we owe unto God, yet it is such a remarkable one, and hath such a mighty influence upon all the rest, that often-times in Scripture it is put for the whole ; and generally the Character of a true Worshipper and obedient Servant of God, is given by this Periphrasis, That he is a Man fearing God. 2ly.

Now the Fear of God is either servile or Filial ; and both are a strong Bond to Duty and Obedience. Those who are acted only by a slavish Fear, will beware how they stir up the dread Wrath and severe Justice of God against themselves, by any wilful Neglects or known Transgressions. And how much more those who are acted by a Principle of filial and reverential Fear of God, who fear as much to offend, as to suffer for it ; and to whom Mercy and Goodness proves as powerful motives of Fear, as Wrath and Fury : yea, there is no Attribute nor Perfection in God, but is very justly the Object of our Fear ; for where this Grace is true and genuine, it works in us rather a sedate Awe and Respect of God, a profound Reverence and Resilition of the Soul, than any turbulent and

*Timor reverentia est resili-  
tio ab altitudine Dei ad vita-  
tem propriam par Alaricod l.  
10. Tract. 5.*

tempestuous Passions of a Fright and Horrour. And certainly, if we acknowledge that there is a God, it is but reason that we should thus fear him according to his essential Greatness and Glory: For take away the fear of a Deity, and a Supreme Power, which is able to reward and punish the Actions of Men, and you open a Flood-gate for all Villany and Wickedness to rush out and overflow the whole World. And where this restraint of Fear is taken off from the Spirits of Men, all Laws given to curb their Licentiousness, are of no more force, than Fetters of Air to chain up Mad-men: and therefore very fitly doth God injoyne the Fear of Himself in this first Command, as that which will season and dispose the Heart to obey Him in all the rest.

- 3ly. *Thirdly*, Another principal Part of Worship required in this first Precept, is, The Invocation of the Name of God in our Prayers and Praises. The two former, *viz.* Love and Fear, respect the inward Worship of God in our Hearts, but this appertains to his outward Worship, and by it we give express Testimonies we both Love and Fear him: for Prayer and Praises are the Tribute and Homage of Religion; by the one we acknowledge our dependance upon him; by the other we own all our blessing and comforts to be from him; and to one of these two, all of external Worship may be referred. Certainly such as neither pray unto God, nor praises him, cannot be said to have a God; for they acknowledge none, but are Gods unto themselves. For wherefore do we affirm, that there is a God, if we make no Addresses unto him? if we have recourse only to our own Power or Policy to accomplish our Designs; and when they succeed, ascribe the success of them only to our own Wisdom and Conduct, we make these our Idols, and give them the Honour which is due unto God only. And therefore the Prophet *Habak. i. 16.* speaks

speaks of these who sacrifice to their Net, and burn Incense to their Drag, because by them their Portion is fat, and their Meat plenteous.

Now as the Love and Fear of God are often used in Scripture for his whole Worship and Service, so likewise is this Invocation of his Name. So we find it *Gen. 4. 26. Then began men to call upon the name of the Lord.* That is, (as many learned Expositors understand it, although some take another way) then began Men solemnly and publickly to worship God in their Assemblies. And *Jer. 10. 25. Pour out thy fury upon the heathen that know thee not, and upon the families that call not on thy name: i. e. those who do not worship nor serve thee.* And the like we may observe in very many other places.

There is but one thing more that I shall remark to you, and that is, That as this first Command requires in the general, that the true God should be truly worshipped; so the three next following Commands prescribe the means and branches of his Worship, and the way and manner how he would have it performed. For the second Commandment requires us to worship God who is a Spirit, without any visible Image or Representation of the Deity: for as it is impossible that there should be any true Resemblance made of a Spirit; so it is most impious to give any part of Divine Honour and Reverence unto dumb Idols; which as to their Materials, are but the Creatures of God, as they are Statues are but the Creatures of Art, and as they are Images, are but the Creatures of Fancy and Superstition. The third Commandment requires that we should never mention the Name of the great God slightly and impertinently; but whensoever we have occasion to utter it, we should do it with all prostrate Veneration, and serious Affection. The Fourth, prescribes us the time which God hath set apart and sanctified for his solemn Worship. So that you see each Command of the first

## An Exposition upon

Table is concerned in giving Rules for Divine Worship ; but the first, which enjoyns it in the general, is the ground and foundation of the other three.

And thus much shall suffice concerning the Duties required in this first Command, *Thou shalt have no other gods before me.*

In the next place let us see what is forbidden in it.  
It forbids us four Things :

- I.       *First*, Atheism, or the belief and acknowledgement of no God.
- II.       *Secondly*, Ignorance of the true God.
- III.      *Thirdly*, Prophaneness, or the wretched Neglect of the Worship and Service of God.
- IV.      *Fourthly*, Idolatry, or the setting up and worshipping of false Gods.

1<sup>st</sup>.       *First*, Atheism, or the acknowledging of no God, is forbidden and condemned by this Command : And well may this be reckoned the first Sin forbidden, for certainly Religion and Worship will be found to be one of the most soppish Vanities that ever was imposed upon the credulous World, if either there be no God, to whom we might direct our Devotions; or only a God of *Epicurus* and *Lucretius's* stamp ; that sits unconcern'd in Heaven, and loaths the Fatigue of Business, taking no thought nor care of Humane Affairs. For if there be no God, or one-ly such an one, what difference is there whether we Pray or Blaspheme ; whether we lead holy and pious Lives, or let loose the Reins to all manner of Lewdness and Riot, and wallow in all the impure Delights that Vice and Sensuality can

can recommend to our corrupted Appetites? For if there be no God, there can be no future Cognizance taken of either, no Rewards nor Punishments proportioned to either. And therefore it will be here necessary to shew the Folly and Unreasonableness of Atheism, and to convince Men that there is a God, without which all Religion and Worship is but Folly and Madness.

Some perhaps may judge it altogether needless to insist upon such a Subject as this, among those who all acknowledge and worship the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom he hath sent. I heartily wish it were both unnecessary and impertinent; but truly if we consider that usually the Practices of Men are guided and influenced by their Principles, we shall find reason enough to suspect that there are some Notions of Speculative Atheism that lies at the bottom of all that Practical Atheism which we may observe so generally to prevail in the World: For any considerate Person would think it impossible that Men should so daringly rush into all those Prodigious Crimes and Villanies, that every-where rage and reign, were it not that they entertain loose and wavering Apprehensions of the Existence of a Deity, and encourage themselves in their Vices by some uniform'd and callow Thoughts, that perchance all that Religion teacheth concerning God and a future State, are only politick Devices and Fictions.

Nay, indeed our Age hath too many, who, not only with the Fool, say in their hearts, but are arrived to that height of desperate impudence, as to avow it in express words, yea, to dispute and argue it, that there is no God.

I shall therefore confirm this great and primary Truth, upon which depends all our Religion, and all our Hopes, by some convincing and demonstrative Arguments, which I intend to make as plain and obvious as the matter will permit.

*First.*



I. *First* then, The universal Consent of all Nations strongly proves the being of a Deity : For that which all agree in, must needs be accounted a Dictate of Nature ; and what is such must needs be acknowledged to be a Maxim of Truth. Next to the Report of our Senses, we may credit the Reports that Nature and all Mankind give concerning the Truth and Existance of Things. Now if we should Impannel all the Nations of the World upon this Tryal, not only the more civilized, where Custom, or the Authority of Laws might be suspected to introduce this Belief, but those that are the most Rude and Savage, they would all with one Consent return this Verdict, That there is a God. Nay, although one part of Mankind hath so strangely dissented from another, about all other things, as concerning their Laws, Government, and Customs, yea, and Manner of Worship ; yet these that differ in all things else, seem only to agree in these two, Humane Nature, and the Belief of a Deity. Never was there

*Nulla gens est, neque tam immanis, nec tam fera, quæ etiam si ignores velle habere Deum deceat, tamen habendum sciat. Cicero.*

any Nation so wild and barbarous that acknowledged no God ; but their great Fault and Folly was, that they acknowledged too many. And it is strange to think, that the whole Race of Mankind in so many Generations as have successively followed one another since the beginning of the World, (yea and if there were no God from all Eternity) should not they have grown wise enough to free themselves from so troublesome an Opinion as that of the Existance of a God : an Opinion that crosseth their worldly Interests, contradicts their sensual Desires, damps their Joys, torments their natural Consciences, and which, those who are wicked, would give whatsoever is dearest to them, to have it utterly rooted out of their minds : It is strange (I say) that they should not all this while be able to deliver themselves from the Tyranny and Fetters

Fetters of this Fancy, were it only imposed upon them by false Reports and Surmises.

How could the World be so easily drawn into such several Shapes and Forms of Religion (which among the Heathen were almost infinite; and among others, too various and different,) were there not a natural Inclination in the Souls of Men to imbrace some Religion or other, and an indelible Character of a Deity imprinted on their Minds? Inſomuch, that in the Times of Darkneſs, when the Truth was not clearly revealed to the World, becauſe they knew neither the true Object, nor the right Way for Worſhip, this reſtleſs Notion of a Deity, put them upon inventing divers vile, uncouth, and ridiculous Superſtitious. But yet this is ſo far from invallidating, that it ſtrongly confirms to us their Belief of a Deity, in that they ſubmitted themſelves to Obſervances not onely unreaſonable, but many times barbarous and inhumane, if they thought them acceptable to the Gods they worſhipt; yea, rather than they would be without a Deity, they would dig them Gods out of their Gardens; or conſecrate Dogs, and Serpents, and any Virmin that firſt met them in the morning, and had the good luck thereby to creep into Honour.

*Porrum & cape nefas violare aut frangere morſu O ſanctas gentes quibus hæc naſcuntur in hortis Namina. Juven.*

What then, is it likely that the World received this Notion firſt by Tradition, whereas before Men generally believed there was no God? This cannot be: for would they in reaſon quit their former Perſwaſion, to receive this new falſe one, eſpecially when it is the only thing that fills them with Fears and Torments, and a thouſand Afrights and Horrors; yea, thoſe who would fain wear off this Notion of a God, and perſwade themſelves to be Atheiſts if they could, what violence have they offered to themſelves to do it? And when they thought they had prevailed, yet this Impreſſion hath ſtill returned, when they have been ſtartled with

with Thunder, or Earthquakes, or Sickness, and the dreadful Apprehensions of approaching Death.

Possibly some few may have been found in the World, who have dissented from the rest of Mankind in this Belief of a Deity ; yet their Dissent is not sufficient ground for us to conclude that therefore it is not a Dictate of Nature. For how many are there that violate the Laws of Nature, and do those things which the innate Light and Reason of a Man abhor and abominate ? Yet none will from thence infer, that there are no such things as Natural Laws ; so neither, though some might have utterly razed out of their minds the Notion and Belief of a God, yet it will not hence follow, that this Belief of a Supreme Being is not an Impression of Nature.

But suppose the number of Atheists had been never so great, is it not far more probable that it should rather be a Dictate of Nature, that there is a God, than that there is not ; since the dis-belief of his Being would open a wide Gap to all manner of Lewdness and Licentiousness, yea, and to the bold commission even of those Sins which are against Nature itself ? Shall such Men be thought to speak the sense of Nature, whose Opinion so directly tends to bring in Sins contrary to the Light and Laws of Nature ? For take away the Belief of a Deity, and it is as much to be doubted, whether the refined Discourses of Reason, and the consideration of Decency, and the intrinsical Rewards of Vertue, will be of force sufficient to restrain Men from the most enormous and unnatural Vices. That therefore must needs be a Dictate of Nature, which is almost the only thing which gives Authority to the Law of Nature ; and such is the Belief of a God.

*Secondly,* Another convincing Demonstration of the Existence of a Deity, is taken from the serious consideration and review of the Frame and Order of the Universe ; in which

which there are as many Wonders, as there are Creatures: and certainly he must needs be very blind and stupid, that reads not God in every one of them. Cast but your eyes upwards, and contemplate the vast Expansion of the Heavens, which are the Canopy of the World, the Roof of this great House the Universe, the Lid or Cover that is put over all the Works of Nature. Behold how gloriously this Canopy is studded; how many glittering Lights are hung up in this Roof to illuminate our inferior World, and to discover to our eyes all visible Objects, and to our mind the Invisible God, who hath guilded the Rays of the Sun, or silver'd the Face of the Moon? Who hath marshall'd the huge Host of Heaven, and set the Stars in such array, that not one of them hath broken its Rank, nor straid out of its Course and Order? Whose Hand is it that turns the great Wheels of Heaven, and makes them spin out Days, and Months, and Years, and Time, and Life unto us? Who hath ordered the Vicissitudes of Day and Night, Summer and Winter, that these run not into one another, and blend themselves and the whole World in Confusion; but with a perpetual Variety observe their just seasons and interchanges? Do not all these wonderful Works proclaim aloud, that certainly there is a great and glorious God, who sits inthron'd on High, and who hath thus paved the bottom of Heaven with Stars, and adorned the inner parts of it with Glories, yet to us unknown? Upon which very Reflection the Psalmist tells us, *The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament sheweth his handy-works*, Psalm 19. 1.

But not to carry the Atheist up to Heaven, let us descend lower, through the vast Ocean of liquid Air, and there observe how the grosser Vapours are bound together in Clouds, which, when the drowth and thirst of the Earth calls for refreshment, dissolve themselves into small drops, and are as if it were sifted into Rain: How comes

K

it

## An Exposition upon

it to pass, and whose Wisdom and Providence hath so ordered it, that there should not fall whole Clouds and Cataracts, but Drops and Showers? that they should not tumble upon us, but distil! An Effect so wonderful, that there is scarce any other Work of Nature that the Scripture doth more frequently ascribe unto God as a demonstration of his Power and Government, than that he sendeth Rain upon the Earth.

Yea, and these Clouds, how often are they charged with Thunder and Lightnings; as though it were so ordered of purpose, that if their Contexture cannot convince, yet their Terrour might affright the Atheist? Who can give any satisfactory account, how that Artillery came there planted? or how those Terrours of Mankind are there generated? Let the Atheist tell me how it comes to pass, that such contraries meet together in one, and that the same Cloud should be both a Fountain of Water, and yet a Furnace of Fire. And therefore the Prophet ascribes this particularly to God's Almighty Providence, *Jer. 10. 13. He maketh lightnings with the rain:* and accounteth it such a remarkable instance of the Divine Operation, that he repeateth it again, *Chap. 51. 16.*

If we descend into the lowest story of this great Building, the Earth; what a Shop of Wonders shall we find there! That the whole Mass and Globe of it should hang pendulous in the Air without any thing to support it; and whereas small Bodies of little weight fall through the Air, yet that this great and ponderous Body should be fixed for ever in its place, having no foundation, no support, but that Air which every Mote and Flie doth easily cut thorough; that this round Ball of Earth should be inhabited on every part; that the feet of other Men should be opposite to ours, and yet they walk as erect, and be as much upon the face of the Earth as we are; that the middle point of the Earth should be the lowest part of it,  
and

and of the Universe, and whatsoever is beyond that is upwards: These and many others are such unaccountable Mysteries to our Comprehension; and yet are found so infallibly certain by Experience, and manifold Proofs, that he must be an Atheist out of meer spight, who shall seriously consider them, and not be induced by that consideration to adore the Infinite Power and Wisdom of the Author of them.

It would be too long to instance in the various sorts of Creatures that we behold; how artificially they are framed; what an excellent Configuration there may be observed in their several parts; what Subserviency of one to another; how they are suited to the Offices of Nature; what secret channels and conveyances for Life and Spirits; what springs of various motions are included in the small body of a Flie, or of a Mite. Certainly there is not the least thing that an Atheist can cast his eye upon, but it confutes him; but especially if he shall seriously consider the wonderful Structure of an Humane Body, the excellent contrivance and use of all the parts, he cannot chuse but after he hath admired the Artifice of the Work, admire also the Infinite Wisdom of the Maker, and cry out with holy *David*, \* *I<sup>s</sup> Psal.* *am fearfully and wonderfully made, and curiously wrought in* <sup>139.15.</sup> *the lowest parts of the earth.* Yea, not only a *David*, but *Galen* an Heathen, (one who it is thought was not over credulous in Matters of Religion) yet when he had minutely inspected the many Wonders and Miracles that were contained in the Frame of our Body, he could not forbear composing an Hymn to the praise of our All-wise Creator.

*Bacon's  
Essay of  
Atheism.*

And therefore as the Lord *Nerulam* observes, God never wrought a Miracle to convince an Atheist, because his ordinary Works may convince him; and unless Men will be wilfully and stubbornly blind, they must needs subscribe to that of *St. Paul*, *God hath not left himself without* <sup>AR: 14.</sup> <sup>out 17.</sup>

## An Exposition upon

out witness, in that he doth good, and gives us rain from heaven, and fruitful seasons, filling our hearts with food and gladness. And Rom. i. 20. *The invisible things of God are clearly seen from the creation of the world, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse.* When we see Footsteps evidently imprinted on the Earth, shall we not easily collect that certainly some one hath past that way? When we see a stately Fabrick built according to all the Rules of Art, and adorned with all the riches and beauty that Magnificence can expend about it; must we not presently conclude, that certainly there was some skilful Architect that built it? Truly every Creature is *quoddam vestigium Dei*; we may observe his Footsteps in it, and see how his Attributes, his Wisdom, his Goodness, and his Power have past along that way. And the whole World, it is a stately Fabrick, an House that God hath erected for himself; the magnificence and splendor of it is suitable to the state of the Great King; it is his Palace built for the House of his Kingdom, and the Honour of his Majesty. And we may easily conclude, that so excellent a Structure, must needs have an excellent Architect; and that the Builder and Maker of it is God.

Now that which makes some proud Spirits backward to acknowledge God in the Works of Nature, is, that they think they can by their Reason alone give a plausible account of those Effects and Phænomena which we see in the World, by deducing them from Second and Natural Causes. And therefore many of those who are of an inquisitive and searching Genius, when they find such Effects depend upon, and flow from such and such Natural Causes, applaud themselves in the discovery, and look no further nor higher, but neglect the first and chief Cause of all, even God.

Hence

Hence some have thought that Reason and Philosophy are great Enemies to Religion, and Patrons of Atheism; but in truth it is far otherwise; and the Atheist hath not a more smart and keen Adversary (since he will not submit his Cause to be tryed by Scripture,) than true Reason and profound Philosophy. But if any who seem to be knowing and learned Men, are less inclined to the Belief of a Deity, it is not their Learning but their Ignorance that makes them so. The same Lord *Verulam* hath well observed, That a little Philosophy inclines a Man's mind to Atheism, but depth in Philosophy brings it about again to Religion. And I dare challenge the most learned Men in the World, to give a satisfactory account of the most vulgar and common Appearances in Nature, without resolving them at last into the will and disposal of the God of Nature; if I should ask them, What makes the Grass green, or a Stone to fall downwards, or the Fire to aspire upwards, or the Sun to enlighten and warm the World? What answer can they give, but that it is the property of their Natures; or what is altogether as insignificant and unintelligible? But if I should question farther, How came their Natures to be distinguished with such properties? they must either here be silent, or confess a first Cause which indowed their Natures with such properties and actions: for although a Man may for some few successions of Causes and Effects, find one to depend upon another, yet they must all at last, be resolved into, and terminate in God.

And this is the second Demonstration of the Being and Existence of a Deity.

*Thirdly*, Unless the Being of a God be presupposed, there can no tolerable account be given of the Being of a-  
*Hoc qui existimet fieri potuisse, non intelligo cur non idem putes, si innumerabiles unitis & viginti literarum forme aliquo conspiciantur, posse ex his interram excussis, annales Eunii, ut deinceps legi possint, effici: quod nescio an ne in uno quidem versu possit tantum valere fortis na. Cic de Nat. Deor. lib. 2.*



# An Exposition upon

any thing: We see innumerable Beings in the World, different from each other both in kind and particular. Now what rational account can the Atheist give, how these things come to have a being? There are but two ways imaginable: Either that the World was formed by Chance; or else, that it had its being from all Eternity. And accordingly (as if it were still fatal for them to encounter with the same Inconveniencies, for which they disavow Religion) Atheists are divided into two Sects.

- I. *First*, There is the *Epicurean* Atheist, who affirms, that the World indeed had once a beginning, but it was merely by Chance: for there having been from all Eternity infinite Particles of Matter moving too and fro in an infinite Space, at last meeting casually, they linked one in another; and so by meer chance formed this World which we now see. A Fancy so grossly ridiculous, that were it now again taken up by some who pretend to be great Lights in Reason and Philosophy, I would not condescend so much as to mention it.

\* But as *Cicero* saith, both judiciously and ingeniously,

As soon shall they persuade me that an innumerable company of loose and disordered Letters, being often shaken together, and afterwards thrown out upon the ground, should fall into such exquisite order as to frame a most ingenious and heroic Poem, as that Atoms straying too and fro at random, should ever casually meet together to make a World consisting of Heaven; and of Air; and Sea, and Earth, and so many sorts and species

\* Si in Scythiam, aut in Britanniam Sphæram aliquam contuleris, hanc quam nuper familiaris noster effecit Posidonius, cujus singula conversiones idem efficiunt in sole. Et in luna, Et in quinque stellis errantibus quod efficiatur in cælo singulis diebus Et noctibus, quæ in illa barbarie dubites, quin ea Sphæra sit perfecta ratione. Hi autem dubitant de mundo, ex quo oriuntur Et fiunt omnia, casum ipse sit effectus, aut necessitate aliqua, an ratione, an mente divinâ: Et Archimedem arbitrantur plus voluisse in imitandis sphære conversionibus, quam naturam in efficiendis: præsertim cum multis partibus sint illa perfecta, quam hæc simulata solertiis. Cicero de Nat. Deor. 1. 2.

of

of living Creatures, in the frame and compofure of which we fee fuch wonderful and inimitable Skill Had *Archimedes*, or \* *Pofidonius's* Sphere, in which were imitated all the motions and conversions of the Sun, Moon, and Planets, been prefented to the moft ignorant or illiterate Nations under Heaven, they could not be fo grofly ftupid as to think fuch a Piece, a Work of meer Chance, but of accurate Art and Study. And fhall any doubt when he fees the great Machine of the World, the fame and many other Conversions made in a more perfect manner, than they can be reprefented in any fuch Type, whether it be a Work of uncertain Chance, or elfe the Product of a moft perfect Mind, and comprehensive Understanding? For certainly if a ftrong and mastering Reason be required only to imitate the Works of Nature, much more then to produce them.

\* *Quod fi Mundum efficere potest concurfus atomorum, cur porticum, cur templum, cur domum, cur urbem non potest, quæ sunt minims operosa? multo quidem faciliora.* Cic. de Nat. Deor. l. 2.

And why had not thofe Atoms that could thus fortuitoufly frame a World, why had they not built Houfes too, and Cities, and woven us Garments, that fo by very good Chance we might have found thefe Neceffaries ready provided to our hands, and faved the trouble and labour of making them? Did ever any Atoms fall into fuch exact order, and knit fo artificially together, as to frame a Clock or a Watch, or any other piece of ingenious Mechanifm? And will the Atheift then be foilly as to believe that thefe little dufts of Beings, fhould by meer hazard meet and joyn together to frame the whole World, and beftow fuch various forms and motions upon Creatures, as we daily fee and admire? Look but upon the moft contemptible Worm that crawls, we fhall find it a far more excellent piece of Machanifm, a far more curious Ingine, than any that ever the Art or Wit of Man could frame. And fhall Chance make thefe! yea, Creatures of a more wonderful com-

composure, which yet could never make a Watch or a Clock, or any of those Ingines which we have contrived for the use and service of life? And what will they say to the accurate Operations of Sense and Reason? Is it possible that one small Dust should see or feel another? and if not one, then not ten thousand put together. Shall their Configuration give them this Faculty, which their Being and Substance doth not? Which I shall then believe, when I shall be convinced that a Statue carved the most exquisitely that Art can perform, can any more see, or taste, or feel, than it could whilst it was rude and unformed Wood. But suppose that sense could be caus'd by meer matter put in motion; yet what shall we say to the refined Speculations, and profound Discourses of Reason? Is it likely, or indeed possible, that little Corpuscles should reflect, and argue, that Atoms should make Syllogisms, or draw up Parties between Pro and Con? Or will the Atheist grant, that there is no other difference between himself and a meer senseless Block, but only configuration of Parts? and that when he disputes most subtilly for his Cause, all his Reasons and Arguments are but a little Dust that flies up and down in his Brains? But that the agitation of material Particles, should produce any sprightly acts of Wit and Discourse, is so monstrously abhorrent to true Reason, that I doubt I shall never be perswaded to believe it, until some cunning Man convince me, that the High-way too is in a deep Speculation, and teeming with some notable Discourse, whensoever the Dust is stirred and flies about it.

And yet, forsooth, Men must now-a-days be Atheists, that they may be rational; and think it an high demonstration of their Parts and Ingenuity, to doubt of a Deity, and call all Religion into question. Whereas, were any thing in the Belief of a God, and the most mysterious Points of our Religion, half so absurd and ridiculous, as there is in Atheism, I should most readily explode it, and  
count

count it altogether unworthy to be entertained by any Man that is ingenious and rational.

*Secondly*, Therefore, others being prest with the huge and monstrous Absurdities of this way of giving an account of the Appearances of Nature, they hold, That the World is from Eternity, and never had any beginning at all. And these are the *Aristotelian* Atheists. 2.

But *first*, It is altogether unreasonable to deny a God, and yet grant that very thing for which alone they deny him. The only reason that tempts Atheists to deny a Deity, is because they cannot conceive a Being infinite and eternal; and therefore when they yield the World to be so, what do they else but run into the same Inconveniency which they would avoid; and that they may not grant one Eternal Being, grant innumerable? So fatal it is for Error to be inconsistent with itself, and to trip up its own Principles. 1.

*Secondly*, If the World be Eternal, there must of necessity have been past an infinite succession of Ages. Now, our understanding is as much non-plust to conceive this, as an infinite Being that should create the World: for if the World had no beginning, then an infinite number of Days, and Years, yea, of millions of Years and Generations of Men, are already actually past and gone. And if they are past, then they are come to an end: and so we shall have both a number that is actually infinite, and likewise somewhat infinite and eternal that is come to an end. A very proper Consequence for one that avoids the Belief of a Deity, because he would be Rational, and cannot conceive a Being that is Infinite. 2.

JOHN

L

Again,

3. Again, *thirdly*, If there have already been infinite successions of Generations in the World, certainly those which are yet to come, will make them more; and so we shall find a Number greater than that which is allowed to be actually Infinite. Or if to avoid this Contradiction, the Atheist should affirm, That the Generations to *Abraham*, and the Generations to *David* were both equal, because both infinite; he will thereby fall into two other gross Contradictions: the one, That a Number added to a Number should make no addition; the other, That since the Generations to *Abraham* were but a part of the Generations to *David*, the part should be equal to the whole.

4. *Fourthly*, There is no one moment in succession which was not once present: and consequently imagine a Duration as long as you please, yet in it of necessity there must be some one moment, which when it was present, all the rest were future; and if all the rest were future, this moment was then the beginning. So that it is impossible there should be a successive Duration without a beginning, and therefore impossible it should be from Eternity.

5. Again, *fifthly*, In all the Revolutions of Generation and Corruption that can be imagined, yet the Life of Animals must necessarily be before their death. For none can die till he hath lived; and none can live, but he must pass sometime before he dies. There was therefore a time before any Animal died; consequently their corruption and death was not from Eternity: neither before their death, had they lived an infinite Time, but only some few Days or Years; and therefore their generation and life was not from Eternity.

These.

These things I do but cursarily mention, to give you a taste of the Folly and Unreasonableness of Atheism; nor perhaps would it be proper to insist on them at large. But by these few Arguments you may see how unreasonable it is for an Atheist to boggle at the Belief of a Deity; whereas let him lay down whatsoever Principles he will, he shall find his reason more puzzled and intangled by these Absurdities that will necessarily follow upon them, than he shall by any Difficulties that are consequent upon the Belief of a God.

Which Belief unless we entertain, we can give no tolerable account at all of the various Beings that are in the World; for neither are they eternal, neither have they hapned by chance, as I have demonstrated to you. It is therefore absolutely necessary that there be some first Cause of all Things which we behold, which is not it self caused, nor produced by any other: for if every thing were caused by some Pre-existent Being, then there never was a Being before which there was not another; and so this gross Absurdity will follow, that before there was a Being, there was a Being. A fit Consequence for Atheists, who pretend only to rational Speculations, to swallow. Therefore we must necessarily rest in some first Cause from which all other things have their origine, and is it self caused by none; and that is the great God whom we Adore, the great Creator and both Governour of Heaven and Earth, and of all things visible and invisible.

This is therefore a third Demonstration of a Deity.

*Fourthly*, Perhaps it would shrewdly puzzle the Metaphysicks of an Atheist, to answer the Argument of *Bradwardine*. It is possible that there should be such a Being as should exist necessa-

Bradward. *de Causa Dei*. l. 1. c. 1. § 1. 1. c. 14.

L 2

rily;

rily; since it is no more a Contradiction to exist necessarily, than to exist contingently, and a far higher and more absolute Perfection: But if it be possible that there might be such a Being, then it is certain that there is; because necessity of Existence is included in the very essential conception of it; or else this Contradiction would follow, That it is possible for that not to be, which yet is necessary to be. This Being therefore must needs be Eternal, Independant, and Self-sufficient; and that is the God whom we adore.

5. But to leave these more Abstruse and Scholastick Notions, in the *fifth* place, If there be no God, then neither have there been any Miracles performed in the World; nor any Prophecies or Predictions of future Contingencies.

1. *First*, There can be no Miracles performed without a Divine and Infinite Power: for certainly if there be no Being above Nature, there can be no Effects either above, or contrary to the course of Nature: for Nature when it is left to itself, cannot act contrary to its own Laws. Now that there have been miraculous Works performed, the Atheist cannot deny, unless he will deny the truth of all Records, and think it reasonable to make all Faith and Credit among Mankind a Sacrifice to his Opiniativeness. All Heathen Authors, as well as the Scriptures, give abundant Testimony to this: and although they deny the Doctrine of the Scripture, yet there is no reason they should disbelieve it, when it only relates matter of Fact. In this behalf we desire they would give it as much credit, as they give to the Histories of *Livy*, or *Tacitus*, or any other Author of approved Honesty: and certainly it is but reasonable to credit the consonant Depositions.

positions of several plain Men, who all profess themselves to have been Eye-witnesses of those things they write: Yea, the *Jews* and Heathens who lived in those very times, and were most inveterate and cankar'd Enemies against the Name of Christ, would have given whatsoever was dearest to them in the World, could they have proved any Forgery in those Miracles, or Deceit in the Relaters of them: But the Evidence was so clear, that they were forced to confess even in spite of their own Malice, that such strange Works were done and really effected. But yet their spleen against the Truth was such, that they imputed them only to the Power of Magick, and the Operation of evil Spirits. But will our Atheist do so too? If so, he must needs acknowledge a God, by acknowledging a Devil; if not, he hath as little reason to believe any thing in the World which he himself hath not seen, as to believe the truth of those Reports, which we have received from undoubted hands, delivered to us by the unquestionable Testimonies of those who have known and seen what they have reported.

Therefore if ever there have been any such extraordinary Effects, as restoring sight to the Blind, and feet to the Lame, and life it self to the Dead, and that by no other application than only a word's speaking, there must certainly be a God. For these things are not within the power of second Causes, being so contrary to the course of Nature; and therefore must be ascribed to a Supreme Deity, an Infinite Power, who is the Author, and great Controller of Nature.

*Secondly,* As there could have been no Miracles performed, so neither could there be any Prophecies or Predictions made of contingent Events, unless we acknowledge

2.



ledge a God, who in his infinite Wisdom and Counsel foresees whatsoever shall come to pass, and revealeth his secret unto his Servants the Prophets. We have many Prophecies recorded which have already had their undoubted Effects : not to instance in all, I shall only mention two ; the one is that Prophecy of our Lord Jesus Christ concerning the final Destruction of *Jerusalem*, *Matth. 24. 2.* which received its full accomplishment about forty Years after they had crucified the Lord of Life and Glory. And the other, that Prediction concerning *Cirus*, that he should Re-edifie *Jerusalem* after it had been destroyed by the *Babylonians*, *Isai. 44. 28.* and to make this Prophecy the more remarkable, it is said, *Chap. 45. 4.* That for *Israel's* sake God had called him by his name. This was a famous and very particular Prophecy of a Person named near two hundred Years before he was born, and those things punctually foretold of him which he should afterwards perform. The like we have the *1 Kings 13. 2.* where the Prophet declaims against the Idolatrous Alter and Worship of *Bethel*, and foretels that *Josiah* should destroy it ; calling him by his very name three hundred and forty Years before he was born, *O alter, alter, thus saith the Lord, Behold, a child shall be born unto the house of David, Josiah by name, and upon thee shall he offer the priests of the high places that burn incense upon thee, and mens bones shall be burned upon thee ;* which we read was exactly fulfilled by the same *Josiah*, *2 Kings 23. 20.* For *he slew all the priests of the high places which were there, upon the altars, and burnt mens bones upon them.* Now let any Atheist give a rational account how these future Contingents could be thus certainly and circumstantially fore-known and predicted, were there not a God in Heaven that revealeth Secrets. They could not certainly see such free and contingent

*Dan. 2. 28.*

tingent events in the Sars, especially so long before they were to be produced; or if they might, yet certainly they could not read Names there, nor spell the Constellations into Words and Syllables. There is therefore a God who giveth knowledge, and declareth things to come according as it pleaseth him to illuminate the minds of his Servants the Prophets, to whom, and by whom he spake.

And this is a fifth Demonstration of the being of a Deity.

The *sixth* and last is this, There is a Conscience in Man; therefore there is a God in Heaven. Conscience could have no power at all over us, unless it were given it from above. How comes it to pass that wicked Wretches are still haunted with pale Fears and ghastly Horrors, that they are sometimes a terrour to themselves, and to all that are about them; they would, if it were possible, abandon themselves, and run away from their own Being, but only that they have a Witness and a Judge within them of all their Crimes and Impieties, and feel such secret stings, and unseen whips lashing their Souls, that the tortures they endure, and inflict on themselves, make them sometimes weary of their lives, and put them upon that desperate Curse of Choaking both themselves and their Consciences too with an Halter; whence I say, should this proceed, were there not a God, a Just and Holy Deity whom Conscience reveres? These Torments and Regrets do not always proceed from fear of Shame, or Punishment from Men. No: but Conscience hath a power to put them upon the rack for their most secret Sins, which no eye ever saw, no heart ever knew but their own; yea, and it forceth them sometimes themselves to confess and divulge their own Infamy,

famy, and voluntarily to render themselves to Humane Justice: Whence is this, but only from that secret influence of a Supream Being, that hath an awe and authority over Conscience, and makes it review the sins of a Man's life with horror, because it knows the Just and Holy God will at last review them with Vengeance.

And therefore we find that those who in their prosperity have lived most regardless of a Deity, yet when their Conscience hath been awakened by Dangers, or Sickneſs, or any surprizing Accident, the apprehensions of a God have then strongly returned upon them, and filled them with Amazement and Confusion. \* Thus the Historian reports of that mad wicked Emperour, *Caligula*, who made an open mock and scorn of Religion, yet when it thundred would creep under his Bed to hide himself from the Vengeance of that *Jupiter*, whom at other times he would not spare to deride and \* threaten. And therefore certainly if there be any such thing as natural Conscience in all Men, it will necessarily follow that there must be a God; for were there no God, there would be no Conscience.

\* Nam  
qui Deos  
tanopere  
contem-  
neret, ad  
minima  
tonitrua  
& fulgu-  
ra commi-  
vere, ca-  
put obvol-  
vere; ad  
vero ma-

jora, proripere se à strato sub lectumque condere solebat. Suet. in Cal. cap. 51.

\* Cum Jove Capitolino secreto fabulabatur — nec sine jurgiis, nam vox comminan-  
tis audita est eis perire deorum negotia. Id. c. 22.

And thus I have given you these six rational Demon- strations, that there is such a Supream and Infinite Being as a Deity. Many others might be added; but these I account sufficient to convince any Atheist, who will indeed be swayed by that Reason which he so much despises and adores, that there is another G O D besides and above it.

Well then, what remains, but that as we have evinced the Folly and Unreasonableness of Speculative Athe- ism,

ism, so we condemn the Impiety of Practical Atheism; the Prophaneness and Irreligion of those, that as the Apostle speaks, live as without God in the World; that live as though there were no God, nor Devil, nor Heaven, nor Hell, nor future State, nor any distribution of Rewards in it: Indeed every wicked Man is in this sense an Atheist, and such the Apostle hath condemned, *Tit. 1. 16. They profess that they know God; but in works they deny him, being abominable, and disobedient, and to every good work reprobate.* Did they really and cordially believe, that there is a Just and Holy God that takes notice of all their Actions, a Great and terrible Majesty, who will call them to a strict account for all their Cogitations, all their Discourses, and all their Works; an Almighty God who hath prepared Wrath and Vengeance to inflict on all those who despise his Authority, and transgress his Law; would they dare to prophane his glorious and reverend Name by impertinent using of it in their trivial talk? would they dare to rend and tare it by their Oaths and Blasphemies, and hellish Execrations and Curses? Did they believe, that he hath prepared *Tophet* of old, that the pile thereof is Fire and much Wood, and that all the Wicked of the World shall be cast into it, and there be made an everlasting Burnt-sacrifice to the incensed Wrath of the great God: Did Men believe the horrors and torments of the Fire and Sulphur, the stench and darkness, the burning chains and fiery whips, the woes and anguish of the Damned in Hell, which are as far from being utterable, as they are from being tolerable; did they but as certainly believe these things, as it is certain that if they believe them not, they shall eternally feel them, would they dare still venture on to treasure up to themselves Wrath against the Day of Wrath? would Swearing, and Lying, and Stealing, and Drunkenness,

M

and

and Uncleanneſs ſo generally reign among us as they do? Indeed we perſwade ourſelves that we do believe theſe things, we profeſs that there is a God, and that God infinitely Holy, and infinitely Juſt; and that he will recompence Tribulation, Anguiſh, and Wrath upon every Soul of Man that doth evil. But alas, this is only a Verbal Belief, contradicted and born down by a Practical Atheiſm. The little influence that the Belief of an Holy and Juſt God hath upon us, to regulate our actions, and to cauſe us to walk in an holy awe and dread of his Divine Majeſty, clearly evinceth, that we may poſſibly fancy theſe things, but do not believe them: for if thou diſt ſeriously and heartily believe that there is a Great and a Jealous God who hath ſaid, *Vengeance is mine, and I will repay it*; what is there in the World that could perſwade thee to offend Him?

Poſſibly, though thou believeſt that there is a God, yet thou art not fully perſwaded that he is ſo Holy, nor ſo Juſt as his Word declares him to be; not ſo holy in hating thy of ſins, nor ſo juſt in puniſhing them. But if thou relieſt on this confidence, know,

1. *Fiſt*, That this is only to hope in his Mercy in ſpight of his Truth. He hath ſworn that he will take Vengeance on all impenitent Wretches, and wound the hairy Scalp of ſuch an one as goeth on ſtill in his ſins. And God will be true to his Threatnings, as well as to his Promiſes, although thou, and ten thouſand others like thyſelf, eternally periſh,

2. Nay, *ſecondly*, If thou believeſt there is a God, and yet thinkeſt that this God will ſpare thee, though thou go on in the preſumption of thy heart, to add Iniquity unto Sin, thou art far worſe than an Atheiſt: for it is  
better

better to have no Opinion of God at all, than to have such an Opinion as is unworthy of him; for the one is but Infidelity, the other is Contumely.

\* Even *Plutarch*, an Heathen, could say, That it were far less injurious to him, if any should deny that there is such a Man in the World as *Plutarch*, than if he should grant, that such an one indeed there is, but that He is Faithless, Inconstant, Cruel, or Revengeful. So it is not so heinous an Affront against the Divine Majesty, to deny that there is any such Supreme Being, as to acknowledge that there is indeed a God, but this God is not either infinitely holy in hating thy Sins, or infinitely true to his Threatnings, or infinitely just in punishing Mens Impenitency and Disobedience. This is a degree of Impiety worse than Atheism; and yet this, are all ungodly Sinners guilty of.

• Εργον ἐν αὐτῷ θελοῦμαι μᾶλλον τὸς ἀνθρώπους λέγειν ὅτι ἐμὸ μὴτε γινώσκειν τὸ παρῶν μὴδε εἶναι Πλάτωνα, ἢ λέγειν ὅτι Πλάτωνος ἔστιν ἀνθρώπου ἀβέλους, δουλοῦ, διχρήστου, ἀγροῦ, ἐπὶ τοῖς πυλῶσι θυμῶντος, &c. *Plut.* ἀπὸ δεισιδαιμονίας.

Know then, O Sinner, and tremble, that there is a God who sees and observes all thy Actions, who writes them down in the Book of his Remembrance, and will call thee to a strict account for them: God will then judge thee out of thine own mouth, thou wicked Servant. Thou believest that there is a God, why dost thou not then fear and serve him? Thou believest that there is an Heaven, and an Hell, and an Eternity to come, why then dost thou not live answerably to this Belief? Either blot it out of your Creed, and avow that you do not believe in God the Father Almighty, or else live as those should do, who own so Great and Terrible, so Pure and Holy a God. For a Speculative Atheist to be profane and wicked, is but consonant to his Prin-

M 2

ciples:

ciples : For wherefore should not he gratifie all his lusts and sensual desires, whose only hope is in this Life, and who doth not look upon himself as accountable for any thing hereafter ? But for thee who acknowledgest a Deity, to live as without God in the World, to break his Laws, to slight his Promises, to despise his Threatnings, is the greatest and most desperate Madnes in the World : Thou shewest thyself hereby to be worse not only than an Atheist, but worse then a Devil ; for the very Devils believe and tremble, and yet thou who professest thyself to believe, dost not tremble.

If therefore we would not be inexcusable, since we know God, let us glorifie him as God, yeilding all holy Obedience to his Laws, and humble Submission to his Will ; conforming ourselves to his Purity, depending upon his Power and Providence, and trusting in his infinite Mercy and Goodness, till we at last arrive unto that state of perfect Bliss and Felicity, where we shall fully know the ineffable Mystery of the Deity, see Him that is now invisible, and live there as much by Sense and Sight, as here we do by Faith and Expectation.

And thus much for the first Sin forbidden in this first Commandment, which is Atheism.

- 2ly. The second Sin that it forbids, is, Ignorance of the true God. For this Precept which requires us to have the Lord Jehovah for our God, as well includes the having of him in our understandings, by knowing him aright, as in our wills and affections, by loving, fearing, and worshipping him ; the right Worship of God must of necessity presuppose the knowledge of the Object to which we direct that Worship, or otherwise we do but erect an Alter to the unknown God, and all our Adoration is but Superstition ; yea, and we ourselves are but  
Idola-

Idolaters, although we worship the true Deity : for all that Service which is not directed to the Supream Essence, whom we conceive to be the infinitely and eternally Holy, Just, Merciful, and Glorious, beyond what we can conceive, is not tendered to the true God, but to an Idol of our own making, shaped out in the Ignorance and Blindness of our Minds. And therefore our Saviour Christ lays this as a black Brand upon the *Samaritan* Worship, - *John* 4. 22. *Ye worship ye know not what* ; and that because with other Gods they worshipped the true God, under a confused Notion of the God of the Land, as you may read *2 Kings* 17. 26. without any distinct knowledge of his Nature, Will, and Attributes.

It hath been a Proverbial Speech, That Ignorance is the Mother of Devotion ; but certainly such a blind Mother must needs bring forth a blind and deformed Daughter ; a Devotion more rightly called Superstition than Devotion ; a Devotion shaped only by the Fancy, and imposed by irrational Fear or Humor.

Now because the Being and Existence of a Deity, is a Notion so common and natural to Mankind, as I have already demonstrated ; and that we are strongly inclined to the worship of a God, it will be necessary rightly to know that God, to whom this Homage of our Souls, and all our Affection and Veneration is due. For while we remain ignorant of this, it is impossible but that we should be Idolaters, giving that which is proper to God alone, to some vain created Fiction of our own deluded Understandings.

Idolatry therefore is a Sin more common among us then we imagine. For as many ignorant Persons as there are, so many Idolaters there are, who though they fall not down before Stocks and Stones, yet form such uncouth



couth Idea's and strange Images of God in their minds, that no more represent his infinite Perfections and Excellencies, than those dumb Idols that the Heathens worship.

In prosecution of this General, I shall lay down these following Propositions:

- I. *First*, That it is a very hard and difficult matter to have right and genuine Conceptions of the Divine Majesty, when we address ourselves unto him to worship him. I think I may here appeal to the common Experience of Christians, whether their most difficult part of their Duties be not rightly to apprehend the Object of them. Our Fancy is bold and busie, and still ready to make too much use of its Pencil, and to delineate a God in some shape or other, before whom we present our Services; so that when we should be wholly intent upon our Adoration, we must necessarily be engaged in Reformation; to pull down, and break in pieces those false Images that we had set up: And yet as soon as we have done this, our Imagination falls to work again, makes new Pictures of a God, and sets them full before our eyes, as so many Idols for us to worship. And although both Reason and Religion endeavour to correct these bold attempts of Fancy, yet it is a mighty distraction in our Duty, to be then disputing the Object, when we should be adoring it. I shall only instance in one Duty, and that is Prayer: How few are there that do not fashion God in some bodily shape, when they come to pray unto him! We are too apt to Figure out his Limbs, and to conceive him a Man like ourselves. All the proportions that Fancy hath to draw with are Corporeal; and whensoever we frame a Notion of Angels, or God, or any spiritual Substance, we do it by sensible Resemblances.

ces. Now this is infinitely derogatory to God who is a Spirit; and therefore cannot be represented in any Form without a vast incongruity: and he is the Father of Spirits, infinitely more spiritual than Spirits themselves, in comparison with whom Angels and the Souls of Men are but drossie and feculent Beings, and therefore cannot be worshipped under any Form without Idolatry: for that is not a God which we can shape and mould in our Imaginations.

We read how jealous God is least any Resemblance should be made of him, *Dent. 4. 15, 16. Take the good heed unto yourselves (for ye saw no manner of similitude on the day that the Lord spake unto you in Horeb, out of the midst of the fire) lest ye corrupt yourselves, and make you a graven image, the similitude of any figure.* And certainly if the erecting of a visible Image of God be gross Idolatry, it is no less than a mental and spiritual Idolatry, to frame an invisible Image of God in our Fancy and Conceptions.

And therefore although the Scripture frequently ascribes to God the members and lineaments of a Man, as eyes, and mouth, and ears, and hands, and feet, &c. yet we must not be so stupidly ignorant as to believe that these are properly appertaining to the Divine Essence, (which was the old exploded Heresy of the Anthropomorphitæ) but these descriptions are given us only in condescension to our Weaknesses and Infirmities; and though they are spoken ἀνθρωποπαθῶς, after the manner of Men, yet they must be understood θεοπρεπῶς, after such a manner as becomes the Majesty of the Divine Nature: And by such expressions the Scripture only means, that all those powers and faculties which are in us, are likewise to be found, although in an infinite and transcendent

dent eminency in the Being of God. He hears and sees, and is able to effect whatsoever he pleaseth ; and that without any configuration of Parts, or Organs, which are utterly repugnant to the Simplicity and Spirituality of his Essence. And therefore to shape and fashion out such a God in our thoughts, when we pray unto him, is but to make and worship an Idol : And unless Faith and Religion demolish such Images which we set up in our Fancy, the Worship which we direct unto them, is hardly to be esteemed the Worship of the true God, but the worshipping the Work of our own making, and a Creature of our own Imagination.

And yet unless we do represent God to ourselves, when we worship him, it is very hard, if not altogether impossible, to keep up the intention of our Spirit, and to hinder our Mind from straying and gadding. Therefore,

2. *Secondly*, The right way to attain unto a true Notion, and a sound Understanding of the Divine Nature, is by a serious consideration of his Attributes. For these are his very Nature ; and when we know them, we know as much of God as can be known by us in this our weak and imperfect Estate. These Attributes of the Divine Nature are manifold, and commonly are distinguished into Negative, Relative, and Positive ; I shall only enumerate the chief of them, Simplicity, Eternity, Unchangeableness, Immensity, Dominion, All-sufficiency, Holiness, Truth, Omnipotence, Omniscience, Justice, and Mercy : Of which the principal, and that most respect us, are Mercy and Justice ; all the other are declared to us in order to the Illustration of these. For the glory of these hath God created the World, and all things in it ; especially those two capital kinds of Creatures, Angels

gels and Men : for these hath he permitted Sin, which is so odious and detestable to his infinite Purity : for these hath he sent his Son into the World to taste of Death for every Creature : for these hath he proclaimed his Law, and declared his Gospel, the Threatnings of the one, and the Promises of the other : for these hath he appointed a Day, and will erect a Tribunal of Judgment, that he may make the Glory of his Mercy, and of his Justice conspicuous ; his Justice in the eternal Damnation of impenitent Wretches, who are Vessels of Wrath fitted by their own sins for destruction ; his Mercy in the Salvation of penitent and believing Souls, who are Vessels of Mercy fitted by his Grace for eternal Glory. All other Attributes, I say, serve to illustrate these two ; and as we conjoin them either to Mercy or Justice, so they are most enforcing Motives either of Hope or Fear : it is a mighty support to our Hope, when we reflect upon the Mercy of God accompanied with the Attributes of Eternity, Immutability, Truth, and Omnipotence. And again, it will affect us with a profound Fear and Dread of this Great and Glorious God, to consider that the same Attributes attend on his Justice ; so that both are Almighty ; the one to save, the other to destroy.

Now if we would conceive aright of God, when we come to worship him, let us not frame any Idea of him in our Imaginations, (for all such Representations are false and foolish,) but labour to possess our hearts with an awful esteem of his Attributes ; and when we have with all possible reverence collected our thoughts, and fix them upon the Contemplation of infinite Justice, infinite Mercy, infinite Truth, infinite Power, and the rest, let us then fall prostrate, and adore it, for this is our God : And therefore the Apostle tells us, *1 John 4. 8. God is*

N

*love ;*

## An Exposition upon

*love ; not only loving, but Love itself in the abstract.  
And 1 John 1. 5. God is light.*

3. *Thirdly*, All the knowledge that we have, or can have of God here, is collected from what he hath been pleased to discover of himself, either in his Works, or in his Word.

We have but two Books to instruct us ; the Book of the Creatures, and the Book of the Scriptures. From the Works of Creation and Providence, we may come to know much of God, even his eternal Being and Godhead ; and the Lectures which are read out of this Book, are so convincing and demonstrative of many of the glorious Attributes of God, that the Apostle tells us, the very Heathens themselves were left without Excuse, because they did not worship him as God, when by the things which they saw, they knew him to be God, *Rom. 1. 21.*

But to us God hath vouchsafed more clear and lively Discoveries of himself ; declaring to us those Attributes by his Word, the knowledge of which we could never have attained by his Works alone. And therefore the Scriptures are called the lively Oracles of God, *Acts 7. 38.* And they are the Glass wherein with open face we behold the Glory of the Lord, *2 Corinth. 3. 18.*

4. *Fourthly*, When we have improved our understandings to the highest advantage, and stretcht them to the largest and most comprehensive size, yet still we shall be left in the dark, and it will be utterly impossible to know God as he is in himself : He dwelleth in that Light to which no mortal Eye can approach ; he hides and veils himself with Light and Glory : it is his alone  
Privi-

Priviledge and Prerogative, as to love, so to know himself, for nothing better can be loved, nothing greater can be known. God is incomprehensible to all his Creatures, but is comprehended by himself; and that Ever Blessed Essence which is Infinite to all others, is yet Finite to its own view and measure. All the Discoveries we receive of God, are not so much to satisfy an inquisitive Curiosity, as to excite pious Affections and Devotion. For Reason, which is the eye of the intellectual Soul, glimmers and is dazled when it attempts to look stedfastly on Him who is the Father of Lights; and its weakness is such, that that Light which makes it see, doth also strike it blind. Yea, our Faith which is a stronger Eye than that of Reason, and given us that we might see Him who is invisible, yet here in this life it hath so much dust and ashes in it, that it discerns but imperfectly, and receives the Discoveries of a Deity refracted through the Glass of the Scriptures, so allayed and attemper'd, that though they are not most expressive of his Glory, yet they are fittest for our Capacity. The full manifestation of his Brightness, is reserved for Heaven: This beatifical Vision is the Happiness and Perfection of Saints and Angels, on whom the Godhead displays itself in its clearest Rays. There we shall see him as he is, and know him as we are known by him. Here we could not subsist, if God should let out upon us the full Beams of his excessive Light and Glory. And therefore we read in Scripture what dreadful apprehensions the best of God's Saints have been possessed withal, after some extraordinary Discoveries that God had made of himself unto them. Thus *Isaiab* cries out, *Isai. 6. 5. Wo is me, for I am undone, because I am a man of unclean lips, and mine eyes have seen the king, the Lord of hosts.* And when our Saviour Christ put

forth his Divine Power but in the working of a Miracle, the Glory of it was so terrible and insupportable, even to Holy *Peter*, that he crys out, *Luke 6. 8. Depart from me, for I am a sinful man, O Lord.* Though God be the very life of our Souls, and the manifestations of his Love and Favour better than Life itself; yet such is our limited Estate here in this World, that we cannot see God and live. Frail Nature is too weak to contain its own Happiness, until Heaven and eternal Glory enlarge; and then it shall see those inconceivable Mysteries of the Trinity in Unity, the Hypostatical Union of the Humane Nature with the Divine; then it shall view and surround the incomprehensible God, and be able to bear the unchecked Rays of the Deity beating full upon it. In the mean time we must humbly content our selves with those imperfect Discoveries that God is pleased to allow us, still breathing after that Estate where we shall enjoy perfect Vision, and in it an intire Satisfaction and Happiness.

Let us then most earnestly covet the knowledge of God, and endeavour to make ourselves here as like to what we hope to be hereafter, as the frailty of Humane Condition will permit. This is the chief glory of a Man, one of the highest Ornaments and Perfections of a rational Soul; that which doth in some sort repair the Decays of our fallen Estate, and renews those Primitive Characters which Ignorance and Errour have obliterated in our Souls. And indeed without the knowledge of God, we can never be brought to love him, to trust and confide in him, nor to serve him as we ought: And although there may be a great deal of Zeal in ignorant Persons, yet Zeal without Knowledge, is but a religious Frenzy; it is Religion frightened out of its wits. A Man that knows not the bounds of Sin and Duty, is a fit  
Sub-

Subject for the Devil to work upon, who will be sure so to manage him, that he shall do a great deal of mischief very honestly, and with very good intentions.

*Thirdly,* A third heinous Violation of this first Command, is by Prophaneness. Now Prophaneness may be taken either in a more large and general, or in a more proper and restrained sense; if we take it properly, so it signifies only the neglect, or despising of Spiritual Things: for in a strict acceptation he is a prophane Person, who either slights the Duties of God's Service, or the Privileges of God's Servants. But in the larger and more common sense of the word, every ungodly Sinner who gives up himself to work Wickedness, and lives in a course of infamous and flagitious Crimes, is called and reputed a prophane Person. And indeed such an one is prophane in the highest degree, that not only neglects the more spiritual Duties of Religion, but the natural Duties of Moral Honesty, Temperance, and Sobriety: For as there are but two things in Practicals, which make an excellent and accomplisht Christian, Religion and Vertue; the one directing our Worship towards God, the other our Conversation towards Men: so on the contrary, the despising of Religion, and neglect of Vertue, make up that consummate and accomplisht Prophaneness which we see so common and prevalent in the World.

But concerning the Wickednesses which usually meet together, and are concerned in this sort of prophane Persons, I shall not now speak, reserving them to be treated of in their proper place, when I come to insist on those Commands which each of their Sins transgresseth.

At present I shall only take notice of that which is pro-



properly called Prophaneness, and speak of it as a distinct Sin, distinctly prohibited in this Precept. And here I shall first give you some account of the Name, and then of the Thing.

\* *Profanum omnes penè consentiunt idesse quod extra fanaticam causam sit, quasi porro à fano, & à religione secretum.*  
 \* Profane hath its Notion or Etymology, *Quasi porro*, or *procul a fano*; which signifies far from the Temple.  
 Macrob. Saturnal. lib. 3. cap. 3.

Now because their Temples were the usual places wherein they solemnly worshipped, therefore the word Prophane is transferred to denote those who neglect and put far from them the Worship of God: and so according to this propriety of signification, many others besides lewd and debauched Wretches, will be found to be Profane: For not only those who let loose the reins to all manner of Villanies, but even those whose Morality is unblameable, and perhaps exemplary; who lead a sober and rational life, and scorn a vitious Action, as a baseness below the Nature, and unworthy the Spirit of a Man; yet such grave, prudent, and honest Persons do, too many of them, especially in these our days, deserve the Censure and black Brand of being Prophane. And therefore that we may the better Judge who are the Prophane, and on whom that Imputation justly lies, let us consider first, What the Sin of Prophaneness is; and secondly, What are the true and proper Characters of a prophane Person.

- First*, What Prophaneness is? I answer in the general,
1. Prophaneness is the slighting and neglecting of Things holy and sacred; an undervalluing and contemning of those Things that are spiritual and excellent. And whosoever is guilty of this, let his outward Demeanour in the World be as fair and plausible as Morality

ality or Hypocrisy can adorn it, yet he is a prophane Person ; and heinouſly violates this firſt Command which enjoyns us to worſhip, reverence, and honour the moſt high God, whom we profeſs to own.

Now the ſpiritual and ſacred Things are,

*Firſt*, God himſelf in his Nature and Eſſence, whom we prophane, whenſoever we entertain any blaſphemous or unworthy thoughts of him, derogatory to his infinite Perfections. 1.

*Secondly*, God in his Name ; which we prophane when in our trivial and impertinent Diſcourſes we raſhly bout out that great and terrible Name, at which all the Powers of Heaven and Hell tremble : And how much more do we prophane it by Oaths and Execrations ; which are now grown the familiar Dialect of every Mouth, and lookt on only as a Grace and Ornament of ſpeaking ! Scarce can we hear any Diſcourſe, but theſe Flowers are ſprinkled among it ; and the Name of God muſt be brought in either as an Expletive, or an Oath : And what doth ſadly fore-bode the growing Prophaneneſs of the next Age, Children are taught or ſuffered to call upon God in their Play, before they are taught to call upon him in their Prayers. 2.

*Thirdly*, God in his Attributes ; which we then prophane, when our affections or actions are oppoſite or unſuitable unto them. We prophane his Holineſs by our impurity ; his Omnipotence by our diſpondency ; his Omnſcience by our hypocrifie ; his Mercy by our deſpair ; his Juſtice by our preſumption ; his Wiſdom by our ſinful policy ; his Truth by our ſecurity, notwithstanding his Threatnings ; and our ſlothfulneſs notwithstanding his Promiſes. And in this ſence every ſin that we commit is a kind of Prophaneneſs, as it manifeſts a contempt of the infinite Perfections and Excellencies of the Deity : 3.

for

for there is no Man whose heart is possessed with a reverential and due Esteem of the great God, that can be induced by any Temptations to sin against him, and provoke him. Every sin is a slighting of God, either a slighting of his Justice, or Mercy, or Holiness, or Power, or all of them : For what dost thou else when thou sinnest but prefer some base Pleasure, or some sordid Advantage, before the Great God of Heaven ? The Devil represents the Delights of Sin, or the Profits of the World unto thee to intice thee ; but thy Conscience represents unto thee the everlasting Wrath of the great God if thou consentest ; his Justice ready to sentence thee to everlasting Torments, and his Power arm'd to inflict them. Now if thou yeildest, what dost thou but vilifie and despise the Almighty God, as if his dread Power and severe Justice were not so considerable as to out-weigh either the impure pleasures of a vile Lust, or the sordid gain and advantage of a little transitory Pelf ? Nay, couldst thou by one act of Sin make all the Treasures and Delights of the whole World tributary to thee ; should the Devil take thee when he tempts, as he took Christ, and shew thee all the Kingdoms of the World, and the Glory of them, and promise to instate it all upon thee ; yet to prefer the whole World before the Authority of God, who hath strictly forbidden thee to think any thing in it worth the venturing upon his Displeasure, and the hazarding his Wrath and Vengeance, is a most notorious slighting and contemning the great God, and argues a prophane Spirit : How much more then when we sin against God for nothing, and desie his Wrath and Justice, without being provoked to it by any Temptation ? We find how heinously God takes it, and speaks of it as a mighty Affront and Indignity, that our Lord Christ should be so undervalued as to be sold for thirty Pieces of Silver ; for  
it

it argued not only Treason but Contempt; *Zech. 11. 13.* *A goodly price that I was prized at by them.* And yet truly Judas was a very thrifty Sinner in comparison with many among us, who not only betray Christ to the mocks and injuries of others, but crucifie him daily, and put him to an open shame for far less. Yea, there are many that would not suffer so much as an hair of their heads to be twicht off for that for which they will not stick to lie, and swear, and blaspheme. What should tempt the impious Buffoon to deride Religion, travest the Holy Scriptures, and turn whatsoever is Sacred and Venerable, into Burlesque and Drollery; but only that he may gain a little grimning and sneering Applause to his Wit, from a company of mad Fools like himself? Or what should tempt the cheap Swearer to open his black Throat as wide as Hell, and to belch out his Blasphemies against Heaven, and the God of Heaven, but only that he fancies that a well-mouth'd Oath will make his Speech the more stately and gentile? And are these Matters of such consequence, as to be called or accounted Temptations? Certainly there can be nothing else in these sins besides a meer mad humour of sinning; which declares a most wretched Contempt of God, when we do that for nothing which his Soul hates, and his Law forbids; and a most prophane Spirit, in making that common and trivial, which is infinitely holy and sacred.

Thus you see how God is prophaned in his Nature, in his Name, and in his Attributes.

*Fourthly,* The Time which God hath set apart and consecrated for his own Worship and Service, is sacred and holy; which we prophane when we imploy any part of it in the unnecessary Affairs of this Life, but much more in the service of Sin. This is a sacrilegious robbing God of what is dedicated intirely to him; and that either

4.

O

by

by his immediate appointment, as the Sabbath ; or by the appointment of those whom God hath set over us, and intrusted not only to preserve our Rights and Properties, but also his Worship inviolate, as special Days of Joy or Mourning, Thanksgiving or Humiliation.

5. *Fifthly*, The Ordinances of Jesus Christ are holy and sacred ; which we prophane when either we neglect them, or are remiss and careless in our attendance on them. But of this I shall speak more anon.

Thus I have shewn you what Prophaneness is ; it is a slighting and despising of spiritual and sacred Things, such as are holy originally, as God, his Name and Attributes ; and such as are holy by Institution, as his Sabbaths and Ordinances.

- II. By what we have thus spoken concerning Prophaneness, we may the easier dispatch the second General propounded, which was, To give you some particular Characters of a prophane Person ; that we may be the better able to look into our own hearts and lives, and both observe and correct that Prophaneness which resides there.

- I. *First*, Therefore, he is a prophane Person that thinks and speaks but slightly of Religion. Religion is the highest Perfection of Humane Nature ; by it he differs more from brute Beasts, than he doth by his Reason ; for brute Creatures have some notable resemblances and hints of Reason, but none at all of Religion. They Glorify God as all the Works of the Creation do, by shewing forth his infinite Attributes in their frame and production ; but they cannot Adore nor Worship him : This is a Pre-eminence peculiar to the most perfect Pieces of the Creation, Men and Angels. For as it is a Perfection of the Deity to be the Object of Worship, to whom all Adoration both in Heaven and Earth ought to be directed, so it is the Perfection of rational Creatures to ascribe Honour,  
and

and Glory, and Praise, and Worship to Him who sitteth upon the Throne, and the Lamb for ever and ever. And therefore they who despise Religion, despise that which is their own chiefest Excellency, and prophane that which is the very Crown of their Natures and Beings.

But alas, have we not many such prophane Persons among us, who deride Piety, and make a scoff of Religion, that look upon it only as a Politick Invention to keep the rude and ignorant Vulgar in awe.

Yea, and those who take up their Religion, not by choice, but meerly by chance, either as a Patrimony left them by their Fathers, or as a received Custom of the Country wherein they were born, never troubling themselves to examine the reasonableness and certainty of it; these likewise are prophane spirited Men, who do not believe Religion to be a matter of that concernment as to require their exactest study and industry in searching into its Grounds and Principles, but think that any may suffice, whatsoever it be.

Again, those who do secretly despise the holiness and strictness of others, and think they are too precise, and make more ado to get to Heaven than needs. But indeed they are not too precise, but these are too prophane, who thus contemn Religion as unnecessary and superfluous.

*Secondly*, He is a prophane Person who neglects the publick Worship and Service of God, when he hath opportunity and ability to frequent it. And alas, how many such are there, who yet think it foul scorn to have this black Name fixt upon them? yea, and are the readiest in the World to brand others with it, that are not of their Way and sentiments. But let them be who they will that despise and forsake the solemn Assemblies, they do interpretatively despise and forsake God, whose espe-

## An Exposition upon

cial Presence is only in two places, Heaven and the Church, in the one by his Glory, in the other by his Presence.

Now these are of two sorts; some that absent themselves out of a wretched Sloath, and Contempt of the Word and Ordinances of Jesus Christ; others that withdraw themselves out of a pretended Dissatisfaction and Scruple of Conscience. Both are Prophane; but the one sort strangely mingles Prophaneness and Hypocrisie together; and the other is Prophane out of Ignorance or Atheism.

- I. *First*, Some are negligently Prophane, and absent themselves from the Ordinances of Jesus Christ, and the solemn Worship of God, upon meer Sloath and Reachlessness. And how many such carelessly prophane are in these Parts, the Thinness of our Congregations doth too evidently declare. If we should now go from House to House, should we not find the far greater part of the Inhabitants idly lolling at Home? who after they had snorted out the Forenoon in their Beds, and thereby perhaps digested their last Night's Drunkenness, spend the Afternoon in their Chappel, the Chimney, either with vain Chat, or intemperate Cups, and sacrifice to their God, their Belly, while they should be worshipping the great God of Heaven: Possibly a fair Day, or want of other Diversion, may sometimes bring these Droans to Church, yet this is so seldom, that we may well suspect they come, not indeed for Custom sake, but rather out of Novelty, than Devotion: But if it prove a wet or louring Day, these tender People, whom neither Rain nor Cold can prejudice at a Fair or Market, dare not stir out of their Doors, nor step over their own Threshold into God's, lest they should hazard their Health, instead of gaining their Salvation. What shall I say to such Brutes and Heathens as these are, who not only deny the Power, but  
the

the very Form of Godliness, (some few of them may perhaps be now present to hear me, and may my Word, nay, not mine, but the Word of the Living God strike them :) *God will pour out his wrath upon the heathen, and upon the families that call not on his name.*

Secondly, Some again are humourfomely Prophane, who withdraw themselves from the publick Worship of God, meerly upon pretended Scruple and Dissatisfaction. I think it is no Uncharitableness to say, That where Scruple at the Administration of Ordinances, is only pretended to colour Contempt of the Ordinances, their Religion is only made a Masque and Vizer for Hypocrisie: for he that shall scruple to pray by a set Form, and yet not scruple to swear Extempore; he that shall scruple to eat and drink at the Lord's Table kneeling, and yet not scruple to drink at his own Table, or at an Ale-bench, till he cannot stand; he that shall scruple the Cross in Baptism, and yet not scruple the breaking his Baptismal Vow; he that shall scruple Obedience to Mans Laws, and yet not scruple Disobedience to God's, but shall lie, and defraud, and perjure, and oppress, and look upon it as the priviledge of his Perverseness and Contradiction, to do so; I shall make no scruple to call such a scrupulous Swearer, or Drunkard, or Cheat, a gross and prophane Hypocrite. 2.

I do not, I dare not say, that all those that separate from our Communion, are of this Note, no more than that all who joyn with us, are free from these Crimes: no, I believe, and know the contrary; and that very many who have in the simplicity of their hearts followed *Absolom* in a Rebellion, do now likewise follow *Corah* in a Schism. Towards such I would take up words of Meekness, and in the bowels of Love expostulate with them; but alas, they do not, they will not hear me: <sup>2 Sam. 15.</sup> <sup>11.</sup>

I



I would beseech them to account of us as Ministers of Christ, and Stewards of the Mysteries of God, as well as others: And if they cannot deny that we are so, will they deny us Audience when we come as Ambassadors from the great King of Heaven, to deliver his Message to them in his Name? Do we not preach the same Truths, and exhort you as far as we are able, to the practice of the same Holiness? Do we not Administer the same Sacraments wherein are represented and sealed to all believing Partakers the Benefits of the Death of our Lord Jesus Christ? What is it then? are we therefore rejected because as we have our Commission from God, so we have our Mission by Law and Authority from Men? If it be so, this is not Zeal, but Contumacy and Perverseness; or are they our own personal Faults and Miscarriages, the neglect of our Ministry, or the scandal of our Lives, that makes Men to abhor the Offerings of the Lord, and forsake his Tabernacle? Indeed I had much rather deplore than excuse them. Yet since this Imputation cannot without great Wrong and Injustice be laid upon all, why is the Defection from all? why are godly, laborious, and conscientious Ministers forsaken and despised as well as the rest? But suppose they were all as black as Aspersions and Calumnies would render them; yet certainly they cannot be thought worse than the Scribes and Pharisees, who were not only vicious in their Lives, but corrupt in many principal parts of their Doctrine; yet such was the Authority and Reverence of *Moses's* Chair, that our Lord Christ himself, who was the great Teacher of the World, sends his own Scholars to learn of them; only because they were the allowed and authorized Instructors of the People; *Matth. 23. 2. The Scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses seat. All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, that observe and do; but do not ye after their works:*

*works : for they say, and do not.* Or finally, is it that that the Ordinances of Jesus Christ are (as they say) burdened with some Observances which they cannot so well digest and comply with? Not now to defend these Things in particular, let me only say, That they nothing hinder the Energy of the Gospel, where it is attended on with an humble submissive Soul, and tractable and docile Affections: And what slight Opinions soever the overweaning Fancies of the Men of this Generation may have taken up concerning our way of Worship, yet I am sure that many thousand of Souls have been converted and saved since our happy and blessed Reformation from Popery, by the Ordinances of Jesus Christ, administered with all the same Observances which are now so much villified and condemned. And I pray God Profaneness be not laid to the charge of a great many who not only neglect, but deride and despise that Worship which God hath accepted and rewarded; and that way of Administration which he hath sanctified in the Conversion, and sealed in the Salvation of many blessed and glorious Saints now in Heaven.

Yet I do not think all those who do as yet refrain from our publick Assemblies merely out of the Dissatisfaction of their Consciences; who do desire and endeavour to be satisfied, and would willingly close with their Duty as soon as it is discovered to them, without sticking at the Examples of others; or their own former contrary Practice; I dare not, I say, think them guilty of Prophaneness; although for the present they may be very much misguided.

But for others, that either absent themselves out of meer Carelessness, and a wretched Neglect of the Commands of Christ, or only out of Humour and Frowardness, and because they have been of another Way, therefore

therefore they will stiffly and pertinaciously maintain it; and cast all the Odium they can devise, and all the Dirt they can rake together, though it be with Lyes and Slanders, upon us; such as search for all manner of Arguments, not so much to satisfy their Consciences, as merely to cavil against our Worship; and when they can neither condemn it by Scripture nor Reason, do it by bitter Invectives, odious Reflections, and a scoffing Contempt, on purpose to make it both hateful and ridiculous to the People; such I shall be bold in the Lord to pronounce Prophane and Irreligious Wretches. And whereas they cry out upon the Prophaneness of others, and make that a Pretence why they separate, and rend the Body of Christ into Schisms, they themselves are most prophane, despising the Holy Ordinances of Jesus Christ, and thereby making themselves unworthy to be admitted to such Holy Mysteries, and worthy to be excluded, and not only by their own voluntary Obstinacy, but by a judicial Censure.

So much for the second Character of a prophane Person.

3. *Thirdly*, He is also a prophane Person who neglects the performance of religious Duties in private. Every House ought to be a Temple dedicated to God, and every Master a Priest, who should offer unto God the daily Sacrifices of Prayers and Praises. But alas, how many prophane Persons have we, and how many prophane Families, who scarce ever make mention of God but in an Oath, nor never call upon his Name but when they imprecate some Curse upon others? How many who wholly neglect the Duty of Prayer, and think they sufficiently discharge their Trust, if they provide for the Temporal Subsistence of their Families, though they utterly neglect the Care of their Souls, and their Spiritual Concernments? Such prophane

phane Families as these, God ranks with Infidels and Heathens, and devotes them to the same common Destruction. Jer. 10. 25.

Nor ought our Family Duties to be seldomer performed by us than Morning and Evening. In the Morning Prayer is the Key that opens unto us the Treasury of God's Mercies and Blessings: in the Evening it is the Key that shuts us up under his Protection and Safe-guard. God is the great Lord of the whole Family both in Heaven and Earth; other Masters are but under him entrusted to see that those who belong to their Charge, perform their Duties both to him and them. One of the greatest Services that we can do for God, is to pray unto him, and praise him: And how unjust and tyrannical is it for a Master of a Family to exact Service to himself, when he takes no care to do Service to his great Lord and Master, to whom it is infinitely more due?

Neither is there any Excuse that can prevail to take off your Obligation from this Duty.

Not that thou art ignorant, and knowest not how to pray; for many are the Helps that God hath afforded thee: Do but bring Breath and holy Affections, others have already brought to thy hands Words and Expressions proper enough for the Concerns of most Families: and besides, use and common practice will facilitate this Duty, and by an incessant conscientious performance of it, thou wilt thorough the promised assistance of the Holy Ghost, be soon able to suite thy Affections with pertinent Expressions, and to present both in a becoming manner unto the Throne of Grace.

Not the multiplicity and incumbrance of thine Affairs: For the more, and the weightier they are, the more need hast thou to ask counsel and direction of God, and to beg his blessing upon thee in them; without which thou wilt but labour in the fire, and weary thyself for very vanity.

P

Not

Not thy Bashfulness and Modesty : For will it not be a far greater shame to thee, that those whom thou governeſt, and perhaps over-aweſt even by thy rash and unreaſonable Paſſions, ſhould be able to over-awe thee from ſo excellent and neceſſary a Duty. Be aſhamed to ſin before them ; be aſhamed to talk looſly, to prophane the Name of God, to be intemperate, or unjuſt before them, to deſile thy mouth and their ears with unclean and ſcurrilous Diſcourſes ; be aſhamed to neglect thy Duty ; but be not aſhamed to pray ; for our Saviour hath told us, *Mark 8. 38. That whoſoever ſhall be aſhamed of him in this adulterous and ſinful generation, of him alſo ſhall the Son of man be aſhamed, when he cometh in the glory of his Father, with his holy angels.* And therefore ſince there is no juſt Reaſon why thou ſhouldeſt refrain Prayer from the Almighty, whoſoever thou art that doeſt ſo, be thy Converſation in all other reſpects never ſo blameleſs, (which yet is not very probable that it ſhould be, when thou begeteſt not Grace from God to direct it) thou art a prophane Perſon, and declareſt thyſelf to be ſo by thy neglect of the moſt Holy and Spiritual of all thoſe Duties wherein we are to draw nigh unto God.

4. *Fourthly,* He is a prophane Perſon, that performs holy Duties ſlightly and ſuperficially. All our Duties ought to be warmed with Zeal, wing'd with Affection, and ſhot up to Heaven from the whole bent of the Soul. Our whole hearts muſt go into them ; and the ſtrength and vigour of our ſpirits muſt diffuſe themſelves into every part of them, to animate and quicken them : And therefore the Apoſtle commands us, *Rom. 12. 11. To be fervent in ſpirit, ſerving the Lord.* Sacrifices (which under the *Jewiſh* Oeconomy were the greateſt part of God's ſolemn Worſhip) were commanded to be offered up with Fire ; and no other fire could ſanctifie them, but that which miraculoſly ſhot itſelf down from Heaven, or from the preſence of God in the Sanctuary, which was ever after kept burning for

*Lev. 9. 24.*

*Lev. 6. 4.*

for that very use : So truly all our Christian Sacrifices both of Praise and of Prayer, must be offer'd up unto God with fire ; and that fire which alone can sanctifie them, must be darted down from Heaven ; the celestial flame of Zeal and Love, which comes down from Heaven, and hath a natural tendency to ascend thither again, and to carry up our Hearts and Souls upon its wings with it.

But indeed commonly our Duties are either, *first*, offered up with strange unhallow'd fire ; they are fired by some unruly passion of hatred, or self-love, or pride and vain glory. Like those cholerick Disciples that presently would command fire to come down from Heaven to consume those who had affronted them by refusing to give them entertainment ; only that God by such a severe Miracle might vindicate their Reputation, and revenge the Contumely that was done them. But this is a fire kindled from beneath, and smells strong of Brimstone ; and therefore our Saviour himself sharply checks their furious Zeal, *Te know not what manner of spirit ye are of.* And certainly whensoever we pray thus in the bitterness of our spirits, devoting our Enemies to destruction, and that because they are ours, rather than God's, when we pour out a great deal of Gall mingled with our Petitions, such a Prayer cannot be from the Dove-like Spirit of God, which is meek and gentle ; and makes those so who are lead and inspired by him. Every party and perswasion of Men is very ready boldly to prescribe unto God those Ways and Methods by which he ought to be glorified ; and if any shall but question their Principles, or oppose their rash and unwarrantable Proceedings, their touchy Zeal is straight kindled, and nothing less than solemn Prayers must be made, to devote such an one to ruine and destruction, as an Enemy to God and to Religion. Here's fire indeed ! but it is Wild-fire kindled from beneath, the Fewel of it is Faction, Popularity, Pride, Contention, and vain Glory ; and it sends forth a great

great deal of smog from corrupt and inordinate Passions.

2. Or *secondly*, If there be none of the former Incentives to heat them, then our Duties are commonly very cold and heartless; our Prayers are dull and yawning, and drop over our Lips without any spirit or life in them: How often do we beg God to hear us, when we scarce hear our selves; and to grant us an answer, when we scarce know what it is that we have askt? We make our Requests so coldly and indifferently, as if we only begg'd a Denial. So likewise in our hearing of the Word, we bring with us very slight and prophane Spirits to those holy and lively Oracles: what else means the vagrancy and wanderings of our Thoughts, our lazy and unbecoming Postures, which would be counted rude and unmannerly to be used in the presence of some of those that are here with us, were they any where else but in the Church? What means our weariness, our watching every Sand that runs, our despising the Simplicity of the Gospel, our prizing the sound of Words more than the weight of Things, but especially our indulged Sloath and Drowziness? a Sin that I have observed too common in this place. What, cannot you watch with God one hour? Do we speak Poppy and Opium to you? Or do you expect that God will now reveal himself to you in Dreams? Have ye not Houses; have ye not Beds to sleep in; or do you despise the Church of Christ? Certainly God requires our most wakeful and vigilant Attention when he delivers to us the most important things of his Law, and of our Salvation. These and many other things which to particularize, would perhaps be to descend below the Majesty of this Work, do too evidently declare, that the precious Truths of the Gospel are grown vile among us, that we have taken a Surfeit of this heavenly Manna, this Bread of Life, and now begin to loath it. Beware least this Surfeit bring not a Famine after it.

It plainly argues much Prophaneness in our Spirits, when we

we bring only our outward Man, our dull and heavy Carcasses to attend upon God, while our Hearts and Minds are straying and wandering from him : This is a sign that we despise God, and account any thing good enough, the Lame and the Blind to be offer'd up unto him. Against such God hath thundered out a most dreadful Curse, *Cursed be Malac. 1. the deceiver, which hath in his flock a male, and voweth and sacrificeth to the Lord a corrupt thing ; for I am a great king, saith the Lord of hosts, and my name is dreadful.* Thou who sufferest thy Thoughts or thine Eyes, which are the Index of them, to rove in Prayer, or to be seal'd up with sleep in hearing, thou despisest the great God before whom thou appearest, and thinkest it enough if thou affordest him thy bodily presence, although thy heart be with the eyes of the Fools in the ends of the Earth: for such a Service is but Mockery ; and it is less irrision to tender God no Service, than to perform it slightly and perfunctarily ; the one is Disobedience, but the other is Contempt.

This is a fourth Character of a prophane Person.

*Fifthly,* He is a prophane Person that performs holy Duties for worldly Ends and Advantages : For what greater contempt of God can there be, than to make his Service truckle under the base and low designs of this present Life ? This is to make Religion tributary to Interest, and God himself an Homage to Mammon. And this all Hypocrites are guilty of ; though they masque their Designs with specious Pretences, and draw the Veil of Religion over their sordid and wicked Contrivances : yet they cry out with *Jehu, Come see my zeal for the Lord of hosts ;* when he drove on so furiously only for the Kingdom.

Indeed an Hypocrite (though he be not commonly so esteemed) is the most prophane Wretch that lives ; the gross profligate Sinner offers not half so much Indignity to Religion as he doth ; For,

*First,*



1. *First*, The Hypocrite calls in God to be a Complice and Partaker with him in his Crimes, and intitles his Majesty, who is infinitely pure and holy, to the Wickedness he commits, as if they were done for his sake, and meerly upon his account ; and so makes God to be the Patron of Sin, who will be the Judge and Condemner of Sinners. All his Injustice, Rapine, and Rebellion, are coloured over with the fair pretences of the Glory of God, the Interest of the Kingdom of Christ, the Advancement of the Power of Godliness, Reformation of Idolatry and Superstition, &c. and there is no act of Fraud or Violence, Faction or Sedition, but he thinks it justified and hollowed by these glorious Names ; which is nothing else but to rob Men, and make God the Receiver, who is the Detester, and will be the Punisher of such Crimes. Now the open and flagitious Wretch, although he hates God as much as the Hypocrite, yet he doth not so much deride him ; his Wickednesses are plain and avowed ; and every one may see from whence they proceed, and whither they tend, that they come from Hell, and directly tend thither : Religion is not at all concerned to colour, but only to condemn them. And judge ye, which doth most despise God and Godliness, either he who professeth it not at all, or he who professeth it only that he may abuse and abase it, and make it subservient to such vile and fordid ends as are infinitely unworthy of it.

2. *Secondly*, The wound that Religion receives from Hypocrites is far more dangerous and incurable, than that which the open and scandalous Sinner inflicts upon it. For Religion is never brought into question by the enormous Vices of an infamous Person : all see, and all abhor his Lewdness. But when a Man shall have his mouth full of Piety, and hands full of Wickedness, when he shall speak Scripture, and live Devilism, Profess strictly and Walk loosely ; this lays a grievous Stumbling-block in the way of others, and tempts them to think that all Religion is but Mockery,

## the First Commandment.

III

kery, and that the Professours of it are but Hypocrites, and so imbitters their hearts against it, as a solemn Cheat put upon the credulous World. Certainly such Men are the causes of all that Contempt which is cast upon the Ways and Ordinances of God; and their secret Prophane-ness hath given occasion to the gross and open Prophane-ness that now abounds in the World; and the Hypocrisy of former Years, hath too fatally introduced the Atheism of these.

Nay, an Hypocrite must needs be an Atheist, and in his heart deny many of God's glorious Attributes, but especially his Omniscience, and say within himself as those, *Pf. 73. 11. Tush, God shall not know; and is their knowledge in the most High?* For did they but believe that God looks through all their Disguises, and that his Eye, which is Light unto itself, pierceth into their very Souls; did they but seriously consider that all things are naked and before him; that he knows our thoughts afar off, and is privy to our closest designs, they would not certainly be either so daringly wicked, or so childishly foolish, as to plot upon God, and seek to cozen and delude Omniscience.

Now this Prophaneness of the Hypocrite in seeking Temporal Things by Spiritual Pretences, is much more abominable than the Prophaneness of others who seek them by unjust and unlawful means; for the one only makes Impiety, but the other Piety itself an Instrument of his vile and forded Profit, than which there cannot be a greater scorn and contempt put upon Religion.

*Sixthly*, He is a prophane Person who makes what God hath sanctified common and unhollowed: And have we not many such prophane Persons among us? Many that abuse the holy and reverend Name of God, which ought to be had in the highest esteem and veneration, about light and frivolous matters; who only make mention of him in their idle Chat, but are mute and dumb when any thing should be

6.

be spoken to his praise; many that prophane his Sabbaths, and although God hath liberally allowed them six Days for the Affairs of Earth, yet will not spare the seventh for the Affairs of Heaven, but impiously invade what he hath set apart and consecrated for himself, and his own immediate Worship and Service. Many that never speak Scripture, but when they abuse it, making the Bible their Jest-book, and prostituting those Phrases and Expressions, which God hath sanctified to convey unto us the knowledge of himself, and eternal Life, to the Laughter and Mirth of their loose Companions: So that those very words which the Holy Ghost inspired into the Pen-men of the sacred Scriptures, for the Edification of the Church, the Devil inspires into these Wretches for their own Damnation, and the Damnation of those that have pleasure in such horrid Prophane-ness.

7. *Seventhly*, He is a prophane Person who despiseth Spiritual Priviledges and Enjoyments: Upon this very account the Scripture sets that black and indelible Brand upon *Esau*, *Lest there be any prophane persons among you, as Esau, who for one morsel of meat sold his birth-right.* And why is *Esau* stigmatized as prophane for selling his Birth-right, but because in those first Ages of the World, the First-born or Eldest of the Family was a Priest, and that sacred Function by right of Primogeniture belonged unto him. And therefore we read that the Tribe of *Levi* were taken by God to be his Priests and Ministers, - in exchange for the First-born: Now to slight and undervalue an Office so holy and sacred, a Priviledge so eminent, a Dignity so sublime and spiritual, to part with it only for the satisfying of his Hunger, was a sign of a prophane Spirit, in preferring the God his Belly, before the God of Heaven, and for ever renouncing his Right of Sacrificing to the true God, only that he might Sacrifice one pleasant Morsel to his impatient Appetite.

And

And certainly if it were so prophane in *Esau* to slight and contemn the Priesthood in himself, they are also prophane who vilifie it in others, and make those the Objects of their lowest Scorn and Contempt, whose Office it is to Stand and Minister before God and Christ. Certainly if a Dishonour done to an Ambassadour, reflects upon the Prince that sent him, will not Christ account it as an Affront and Injury done unto him, when you affront and injure those his Messengers and Ambassadours whom he hath sent to treat with you in his Name, and about the Concernments of his Kingdom.

But not to speak more of this, least we should be thought to plead for ourselves: Are not those prophane who despise and contemn the high Priviledges and Dignity of the Children of God; who despise those whom God so highly honours as to adopt them into his own Family, admit them into near Communion and Indearments with himself, to make them his own Sons, and give them the Priviledge of Heirs of eternal Glory? Doubtless he who despiseth him that is begotten, despiseth him likewise that begetteth; and the common Disrespect which is shewn to the Servants and Children of God, argues a secret Contempt of him who is their Master and their Father.

Now lay these things to your own Hearts, and bring them home to your own Consciences, and see whether you are in none of these particulars guilty of Prophaneness: Do none of you think slightly of Religion, accounting it either a Politick Design, or a Needles Preciseness? Are none of you negligent in the publick Worship and Service of God; nor yet in Private and Family Duties; or if you perform them, is it not very carelessly and perfunctorily; or if you seem zealous in them, is it not your Zeal excited by some Temporal Advantages, and low base Worldly Ends and Designs? Do you not make that Common and unhallowed, which God hath made holy, either by abusing his

Q

Name,

Name, polluting his Sabbaths, or vilifying his Word in your ordinary Gallery ; and lastly, do none of you despise Spiritual Priviledges and Enjoyments, and those likewise who are invested with them ? If so, how fair and specious soever your Lives and Actions may be, altho' you may think the rude debauched Sinner at a vast distance from yourselves, and account him the only prophane Person, yet certainly this black Stile belongs as properly to you, and you are prophane Violaters of this first Command which requires you to take the Lord for your God, and accordingly to honour and reverence him, and whatsoever appertains unto him.

And thus much for the third notable Transgression of this Command, Prophaneness.

4ly. The *fourth* and last breach of this Command is by Idolatry, *Thou shalt have no other gods besides me* ; which they transgress who set up any other God besides the Lord Jehovah. Idolatry according to its Etymology and use, signifies a serving of Images, or Idols ; now, an Idol, though it properly signifies an artificial Effigies or Resemblance made to represent any thing or person, yet in Divinity it signifies any thing besides the true God, unto which we ascribe Divine Honour and Worship.

And as an Idol is twofold, one internal in the fiction and imagination of the Mind ; another external and visible, either the Work of Mens hands, as Statues and Images, or else the Work of God's hands, as the Sun, Moon and Stars, or any other Creature ; so there is a twofold Idolatry, the one Internal, when in our Minds and Affections we honour and venerate that as God which indeed is not so, but is either a Creature of the true God, or a Fiction of a deluded Fancy : the other External, which we are then guilty of when we express the inward Veneration of our Souls, by outward Acts of Adoration. As for instance : Whosoever shall believe the consecrated Bread in the Sacrament to be tran-

transubstantiated and changed into the true and proper Body of Jesus Christ, and upon this belief, shall in his mind revere and honour it as his God (as the Papists do) he is guilty of internal Idolatry : but if to this internal Veneration, he add any external Rites of Worship, as Prostration, Invocation, &c. he is then likewise guilty of internal Idolatry.

It is the former of these two kinds of Idolatry, which is here prohibited in this first Commandment, *Thou shalt have no other gods before me* ; that is, thou shalt not give unto any thing either in Heaven or Earth, that inward Heart-worship of Affiance, Love, Fear, Veneration, and Dependance, which is due only to the true God, the Lord Jehovah : The imperate Acts, or outward Expressions of this inward Worship, is that which we call external Idolatry, which is specially forbidden in the second Commandment, of which I shall treat in its place and order.

Now concerning this Internal Idolatry, observe these following Propositions :

*First*, Whosoever acknowledgeth, and in his heart worshippeth another God different from that God who hath revealed himself unto us in his holy Scriptures, he is guilty of this Internal Idolatry, and the breach of this first Commandment. And therefore not only those miserable Creatures who worship the Devil, or those that have recourse to Diabolical Arts and Charms, or those who worship Men whose Vices were their *Δυνάμεις*, and their Crimes their Consecration, as *Bacchus*, and *Venus*, and others of the Heathenish Gods ; nor those who worshipt Men famous for their Vertues, as the Heathens did their Hero's, and the Papists do their Saints ; or those who worship any of the Creatures of God, as the Host of Heaven, Fire as the *Persians*, or Water as the *Egyptians*, or the Creatures of Art, as Statues and Images, as if posselt and animated by their Deities ; in which respect *Trismegistus* called Images the Bodies of the Gods : And with the same Madness are the Papists posselt,

1.

*Aug. de Civ. Dei. l. 8. c. 23.*

Q 2

who

## An Exposition upon

who are perswaded that God and Christ, and the Saints dwell in certain Images made to represent them, and by those Images give answers to their Votaries, and perform many wonderful and miraculous Works: whereas if there be any Spirit that possesseth them (as perhaps there may) we have reason to believe that since their Worship of them is the very same with the Heathens, those Spirits are likewise the same, *viz.* not God, nor Saints, but Devils and damned Spirits. But I say, not only these are Idolaters and Transgressors of this first Command, but those also who compound a God partly out of the figment of their own erroneous Minds, and partly out of his own Infinite Attributes: And thus are all *Arians*, *Socinians*, and *Antitrinitarians* guilty of Idolatry; for they acknowledge one Infinite and Eternal Being, but denying the Persons of the Son and the Holy Ghost, they worship an Idol, and not the true God, for the only true God, is both Father, Son, and Holy Ghost.

2. *Secondly.* Whosoever acknowledgeth, and in his heart worshippeth more Gods than the only Lord Jehovah, is guilty of Idolatry, and the Violation of this first Commandment. Thus was the Idolatry of those Nations which the King of *Affyria* planted in *Israel* after he had carried away the ten Tribes into Captivity; for it is said, *2 Kings* 17. 33. *That they feared the Lord, and served their own gods.* And upon this account also are all *Arians* and *Socinians*, who deny the Natural Divinity of Jesus Christ, justly charged with Idolatry; for since they say that Christ is God, and do worship him as God, yet deny that he is of the same Nature and Substance with the Lord Jehova, they must of necessity make more Gods than one, and those of a divers Essence and Being; and therefore are not only guilty of Blasphemy, but Idolatry; of Blasphemy in robbing Christ of his Eternal Sonship and the Divine Nature; of Idolatry in attributing Divine Honor and Worship unto him whom.

whom they believe to be but a Creature, and not God by Nature.

*Thirdly*, Whosoever doth ascribe or render to any Creature, that which is proper and due only unto God, he is an Idolater, and guilty of the Transgression of this first Commandment. Now this Attribution of the Divine Properties to the Creatures, is either Explicite or Implicite, Explicite when we do avow the Attributes of the Divine Nature to be in those things which are not capable of them; as those who hold the Body of Christ to be Omnipresent. Implicite when we render unto any Creature that inward Worship, Esteem, and Affection which is due only unto the infinite Perfections of the Deity. And although our Reformed Religion be very well purged from the former Idolatry, yet certainly the Professours of it are not well purged from this latter Idolatry; for even among Protestants themselves we shall find very many that are in this sence Idolaters: For,

*First*, Whosoever chiefly and supremely loves any Creature, is an Idolater; because our chiefest love is due only unto God. Hence the covetous Person is expressly called an Idolater, and Covetousness Idolatry, *Col. 3. 5: Mortify your earthly members, uncleanness, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry.* And the sensual Epicure is likewise an Idolater, *Phil. 3. 19.* His Belly, saith the Apostle, is his God: The proud Person is an Idolater, for he loves himself supremely, sets up himself for his own Idol, and falls prostrate before that Image which he hath portrayed of his own Perfections in his own Fancy and Imagination. And generally all such who love and admire any thing above God, or esteem any thing so dear that they would not willingly part with it for his sake, they have set up another God before him, to which they give that Service and Respect which is due only to the great God of Heaven.

*Secondly,*



2. *Secondly*, Whosoever puts his trust and confidence in any Creature more than in God, is guilty of this inward Heart-Idolatry; as when we depend upon Interest, or Power, or Policy for our safe-guard and success, more than on that God, who is able both with and without created helps and means to relieve us: And that we do so appears, when we are secure and confident in the enjoyment of such created Comforts and Supports; but altogether diffident and dejected when we are deprived of them: For since God is always the same, we should likewise have the same courage and spirit, did we place our whole affiance in him.
3. *Thirdly*, He is an Idolater, and a very gross one, who sets up any Creature in his heart, whether Saint or Angel, to pray unto it, and to betake himself unto that vain Refuge in our straits and necessities: for Invocation properly belongs to God alone, as an Act of Worship which he hath challenged to himself, and the highest Glory that we can give to his Divine Majesty: And therefore he hath commanded us, *Psal. 50. 15. Call upon me*; not upon any Saint or Angel, *in the time of trouble, and I will deliver thee*. And therefore the Papists are most gross and stupid Idolaters, who direct their Petitions not unto God, but unto Saints and Angels; which is nothing else but to advance them in his Throne, and to ascribe unto them his infinite Perfections; for Prayer and Adoration supposeth the Object of it to be Omnipresent and Omnipotent; Omnipresent to hear, and Omnipotent to save, or else they are in vain.

*Thus much for the First Commandment.*

The

## The Second

## C O M M A N D M E N T.

**T**hou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing, which is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth. Thou shalt not bow down thy self to them, nor serve them: for I the Lord thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me: and shewing mercy unto thousands of them that love me, and keep my commandments.

**I**dolatry is twofold; either Spiritual and Internal, residing in the Affections and Disposition of the Soul; which we are guilty of when we devote our supream Love, Fear, and Dependence unto any created Being, which are due only unto the true and only God. And this Idolatry is forbidden in the first Commandment, as we have already seen.

Or else it is more Gross and External, consisting in a visible Adoration of any thing besides God; who as he challengeth the Affections of the Soul, so requires also the

Homage

## An Exposition upon

Homage and Reverence of our Bodies, in those Services which we perform unto him. And this Idolatry is particularly forbidden in this second Commandment, which I have now read unto you.

In which we have these three Parts :

- I. *First*, The Precept itself, which runs negatively, and is branched forth into two several Prohibitions ; but both tending to the same end and effect : The one forbidding Images to be made, *Thou shalt not make to thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing* ; the other forbidding them to be worshipped, *Thou shalt not bow down thy self before them, nor serve them*.
- II. *Secondly*, Here is added a severe Comination against those that shall presume to violate this Command, *I the Lord thy God am a jealous God, visiting the sins of the fathers upon the children, unto the third and fourth generation*.
- III. *Thirdly*, Here is likewise for the encouragement of Obedience, the addition of a gracious Promise of, *Shewing mercy unto thousands that love God, and keep his commandments*.

- I. I shall begin with the Command, or Prohibition, which is twofold : Thou shalt not make Images ; Thou shalt not worship them. Not that the Carvers or Painters Art, but only the Peoples Idolatry ; not the Ingenuity in making, but the Stupidity in worshipping those dumb Representations, is here forbidden. The brazen Serpent in the Wilderness, the Cherubims, and other Resemblances in the Temple, are a sufficient proof and evidence of this.

This Prohibition therefore must be interpreted according to the subject matter which is here spoken of ; and that being only Divine Worship, it is plain that it is not unlawful to represent to the eye any visible thing by an artificial

facial Image of it : but only when God saith, Thou shalt not make ; and, Thou shalt not worship ; the meaning is, thou shalt not make any thing with an intention of Worship ; and thou shalt not worship any thing which thou, or others have made. But concerning the Prohibition of this Command, I shall speak more hereafter.

Now for the more full and clear understanding of this Precept, I must desire you to recal to mind one of those several general Rules which I formerly gave you, as helpful to instruct you in the due Extent and Latitude of the Commandments ; and that was, That the Negative Commands do all of them include the Injunction of the contrary positive Duties ; as when God forbids the taking of his Name in vain, by consequence he commands the hallowing and sanctifying of his Name ; where he forbids Murder, he commands all lawful care and endeavour to preserve our own, and the life of others ; where in the first Precept he forbids the owning and cleaving unto any other God besides himself, he enjoins us to acknowledge him as our God, to love, fear, and hope in him only : So here in this second Command, where he forbids the worshipping of Images, by consequence he requires to worship him according to the Rules which he hath prescribed us. And therefore as under the first Command is comprehended whatsoever appertains to the Internal Worship of God ; so under this second is comprehended whatsoever appertains to the External and Visible Worship of God.

Now here I shall first speak concerning the External Worship of God ; and then of those Sins which are contrary unto it, and condemned in this Commandment.

Concerning the Worship of God I shall lay down the following Propositions :

*First*, The true and spiritual Worship of God in the general, is an Action of a pious Soul, wrought and excited in us by the Holy Ghost, whereby with godly Love and

1.

R

Fear

Fear we serve God acceptably according to his Will revealed in his Word ; by Faith embracing his Promises, and in Obedience performing his Commands, to his Glory, the Edification of others, and our own eternal Salvation. This is the true spiritual Worship of the true God, who is a Spirit ; and it comprehends in it both the inward Worship of our Hearts and Souls, and likewise the outward Worship of holy and religious Performances ; of which I am now particularly to treat.

2. *Secondly*, Therefore this external Worship of God is a sacred Action of a pious Soul, wrought and excited by the Holy Ghost, whereby with all reverence we serve God both in Words and Deeds according to his revealed Will, in partaking of his Sacraments, attending on his Ordinances, and performing those holy Duties which he hath required from us, to his Glory, the Edification of others, and our own eternal Salvation. This Worship of God altho' it be external, is nevertheless spiritual ; for it proceeds from the Spirit of God exciting our Spirits to the performance of it, and is directed by a spiritual Rule, unto a spiritual End, the Glory of God, and our own Salvation.

3. *Thirdly*, The parts of this external Worship are divers and manifold ; whereof the most principal and essential are the Celibration of the Sacraments, Solemn Prayer, and Solemn Praise and Thanksgiving : But besides these, there be many other things which belong to the Service of God, yea, as many as there are Duties of Religion and Piety ; such are a free, open, and undaunted profession of the Truth, a religious Vowing unto God things that are lawful, and in our own power, an Invoking of the Testimony of God to the Truth of what we assert, or to the faithful Discharge of what we promise, when we are duly called to do it by lawful Authority ; a diligent reading of the Word of God, and a constant and reverent Attendance on it when it is read and preached ; and divers other Duties too long to be here

here particularly enumerated ; some of which belong to the proper Worship of God, immediately as parts of it, others mediately, as means and helps to it.

*Fourthly*, Although God doth especially delight in the acts of our internal Worship, and principally regards the esteem and veneration that we have for his great and glorious Majesty in our Hearts ; yet this alone sufficeth not, without the performance of those parts of external Worship and visible acts of Piety and Religion, which may to the Glory of God express the devout dispositions of our Souls. The inward acts of Piety are those of Faith in believing, of Hope in expecting our Reward, of Charity in loving both God and our Neighbour, of Fear in reverencing him, of Patience in a contented bearing whatsoever burdens it shall please the All-wise Providence of God to lay upon us, and of a chearful Willingness to perform all the Duties of Obedience which he enjoyns us. These belong to the internal Worship and Service of God, and are especially pleasing and acceptable unto him. And indeed without these all other acts of Worship are both dead and unfavoury : for as the Spirit of a Man is his Life, so the internal and spiritual Piety of the Heart, our Love, Fear, and Reverence of God is the Life of all our Duties, without which they are but as a dead Carcass, so far from being a sweet-smelling favour, that they are noisom and offensive to that God to whom we offer them.

But of this internal Worship I have already spoken.

That which we are now to consider, is the external Worship of God, which he hath absolutely required from us, when we have ability and opportunity to perform it.

For although there need no overt-actions to make the sincerity of our affections and intentions known unto God, yet it is necessary for his Glory, and the good Example of others, to declare that to the World by visible Signs and

Expressions, which was before known unto him in the secret Purposes and Thoughts of our Hearts.

1. For *first*, God hath no less strictly enjoined his external Worship, than he hath his internal: What can be more external than the Ceremonial part of the Evangelical Law, the Participation of Baptism and the Lord's Supper? Both of which are yet most expressly commanded, *Matth. 28.*

*19. Go teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost. Acts the 2. 38. Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ.* And for the Communion of the Body and Blood of Christ, see *Luke 22. 19. Do this in remembrance of me.* Which Command they do heinously violate, and refuse to give the most evident Sign and Testimony that they are Christians, who either totally neglect, or else very seldom attend this most Holy and Spiritual Ordinance.

2. *Secondly*, We find that God doth severely both threaten and punish such as give external Worship unto any other but himself: How often are the *Israelites* reprov'd for bowing the Knee to *Baal*, for baking Cakes to the Queen of Heaven? Yea, and very usually Idolatry is set forth in Scripture by some of those visible Actions which some of these false Worshipers used to express their Devotion towards their false Deities, as bowing the Body unto them; *Jesh. 23. 16. Served other gods, and bowed your selves unto them. Judges 2. 12, 17, &c. Kissing the hand unto them in token of reverence. Job 31. 26, 27. If I beheld the sun when it shined, or the moon walking in brightness; and my heart hath been secretly inticed, or my mouth hath kissed my hand: This also were an iniquity to be punished by the judge; for I should have denied the God that is above.* So likewise bowing the Knee to any Idol, and kissing it; *Hos. 13. 2. Let the men that sacrifice, kiss the calves.* And so when *Elijah* complained of the total defection of the *Israelites* from.

from the Service of the true God, unto Idolatry; God to comfort and encourage him, tells him, That he alone was not singular, but that there were *seven thousand in Israel, all the knees that had not bowed unto Baal, and every mouth which had not kissed him*, 1 Kings 19. 18. And therefore certainly since he makes so punctual a Computation of those who had not alienated their Bodily Worship to the Service of an Idol, he doth respect and accept those who in Faith and Sincerity tender it to himself.

*Thirdly*, God hath created the whole Man, both Soul and Body for himself, and he sustains both in their being; and therefore he expects Homage and Service from both: from the Soul as the chief seat of Worship, from the Body as the best Testimony of it. 3-

*Fourthly*, Not only our Souls, but our Bodies too are redeemed by Christ; and therefore both should be employed in his Worship and Service: The whole Man is bought with a Price, the whole is justified, the whole is sanctified; yea, our very Bodies are said to be the Temples of the Holy Ghost, 1 Cor. 6. 19. And where should God be worshipped, or that Worship appear, but in his Temple? And therefore upon the account of that Purchase which Christ hath made of us to himself, the Apostle draws this Inference, in the aforementioned place, *Ye are not your own, for ye are bought with a price; wherefore glorify God in your bodies, and in your spirits, which are God's*. 4-

*Fifthly*, The Body is likewise to partake of the Blessings of Obedience, and therefore it is but reasonable it should partake of the Service of Obedience: Many Blessings are promised to our outward Man here in this life, and hereafter it is to be made a glorious and incorruptible Body, like unto the Body of our Lord Jesus Christ: it is to be clothed with Light, and crown'd with Rays; never more to suffer Injuries without, or Diseases within: and therefore certainly Duty belongs to it, since so many great and unspeak- 5-



unspeakable Priviledges belong unto it.

Thus you see how reasonably God requires from us the Service not only of the inward, but of the outward Man : And therefore we are not to flight that outward Reverence which is necessary to testifie a due fence of his glorious Presence when we come before him : neither must we rob him of any part either of his Service, or of his Servant, but sacrifice ourselves intirely unto him ; our Bodies upon the Altar of our Souls, Hearts and Affections, and both Soul and Body upon that Altar which alone can make both acceptable, even the Lord Jesus Christ.

This is a fourth Position.

5. *Fifthly*, All that outward Reverence which we shew towards God in his Worship and Service, must be measured and estimated according to the Customs and Usage of Places and Countries ; so that what they use as a sign and expression of Honour to their Superiours, they ought much more to use it in the presence of the great God, the King of Kings, and Lord of Lords. And therefore uncovering of the Head, bowing of the Body, an humble submit and settled composure of the whole Man, which among us are but fitting signs of Respect and Reverence, when we appear in the presence of those who are much our Superiours, ought likewise to be used by us in the presence of God, who is infinitely such, not indeed that they are essential parts of Worship, but Signs and Testimonies of it.
6. *Sixthly*, The last Position is this : We ought not to worship God with any other external Worship, than what himself hath commanded and appointed us in his holy Word. The Scripture hath set us our Bounds for Worship, to which we must not add, and from which we ought not to diminish ; for whosoever doth either the one or the other, must needs accuse the Rule either of Defect in things necessary, or of Superfluity in things unnecessary : which is an high Affront

to

to the Wisdom of God, who as he is the Object, so he is the Prescriber of all that Worship which he will accept and reward.

I well know that this Rule hath given (I cannot say Cause, but) Occasion to many hot Disputes about Ecclesiastical Rites and Constitutions; some condemning whatsoever is prescribed or used in the Service of God, besides things expressly commanded in Scripture, for Incroachments upon the Authority of God, and Additions unto his Worship, which he requires to be performed according to the Pattern in the Mount, and the Model he hath delineated for it: Others again maintaining the Priviledge and Authority of the Church in ordaining some things for the more decent and reverend performing of the Service of God, which are not particularly required in the holy Scriptures.

I shall not plunge myself into this angry and quarrellous Controversy: only give me leave to say, and sadly to lament, That the Seamless-Coat of Christ is rent in pieces among them, whilst some think it more decent to sew on Loops and Fringes to it, and others will have none. And truly I think our Differences are of no greater importance in themselves, though too woful in their Consequents, than this amounts unto. I shall clearly express my sence of this Matter in a few words, without any Reflection or Bitterness, and so leave it to the Judgment of every ordinary Discretion.

Things which belong to the Worship of God, may be considered either as Parts of that Worship, or only as Circumstances and Modifications of it.

*First* therefore, Whatsoever is imposed on us as a substantial part of the Worship of God, if it be not expressly required of us in the holy Scriptures, is to be not only refused, but abominated: For this is a plain Addition to what God hath commanded, and by it we lay an Imputation upon

I.

## An Exposition upon

on him, as though he wanted Wisdom to ordain what is necessary for his own Service.

Then, and then only is any Constitution of Man imposed for a part of Divine Worship, when Obedience unto it is urged upon us, not only from the Authority enjoyning it, but also from the Necessity of the thing considered simply and nakedly in its own Nature: For as it is with God's Laws, some things are commanded because they are good, and some things are good only because they are commanded; so is it with Laws and Impositions of Men about Matters of Religion and Worship, some things they command us to observe, because they are in themselves necessary antecedently to their Command, as enjoyned us before by God; and therefore this is no Ordinance or Doctrine of Man, but of God; unto which the Magistrate, who is the Guardian of both Tables, doth well to add the Sanction of Secular Rewards and Punishments: Other things are necessary for our Observance, only because they are commanded by their Authority, to whom we owe conscientious Obedience in things lawful and indifferent. But we utterly deny that the imposition of any such things makes them any parts of Worship, of which they are only Circumstances; or that these Observances are necessary to us, or acceptable to God antecedently to the command of Authority; or that the Worship of God were imperfect, defective, unacceptable, and invalid to the ends for which it is appointed, were not these Observances commanded, and performed: If indeed we thought otherwise, the bitterest of all their Invectives, and the loudest of all their Exclamations in calling our Worship, Superstition, Will-Worship, and Idolatry, would not shew so much Passion, as a just and rational Zeal. But God for ever forbid that any such Ordinances of Man should be introduced into our Church. We all joyn in this Vote; and do utterly renounce any such Authority, and deny any such Practice. We usurp  
not

not upon the Consciences of any, nor endeavour to persuade them that that is in it self necessary, which is not so by God's Commands, or the Law of Nature; or that that is unlawful which is not condemned by either. We endeavour to keep ourselves and you as much from a Positive, as a Negative Superstition: we endeavour to put due bounds between things simply necessary, either by the Command of God, or their own natural Reason and Goodness, and such as are in themselves indifferent. We say, that nothing is a part of Worship, but what belongs to the former; but some things that belong to the latter may be used in Worship as fit and decent Circumstances: And when such things are imposed, they become necessary; not indeed in themselves (for no Humane Authority can alter the nature of things) but to our Practice, and our Consciences are obliged to them: But how? not indeed simply and absolutely, so that it shall never be lawful to omit them; but only in two Cases, in case of Scandal, and Contempt. We ought not to omit them, if we judge any Offence will be taken by others at our Neglect: we ought not to omit them at any time out of a Contempt and Disrespect towards them. And thus you see we put a vast difference between that which is a part of Worship, and that which is but a Circumstance of Worship: If any thing be commanded us by Men, as a part of Worship, which is not commanded us by God, we ought not to submit unto it. But,

*Secondly*, If any thing be imposed on us not as a part of Worship, but as a Circumstance and Modification of Worship, we may and we ought to submit unto it.

2.

*First*, If the things so imposed be in themselves lawful and honest; which they are, if not condemned by the Scripture.

1.

S

*Secondly*,

## An Exposition upon

2. *Secondly*, If they tend to Order and Decency in the Church. Of which certainly they are as fit to be Judges who have Authority both in Church and State, as every private, and perhaps less-knowing Christian.
3. *Thirdly*, If they are imposed by the Command of a lawful Power, to whom we ought to submit in all things that are lawful.
4. *Fourthly*, If they are such as neither for their levity nor number eat out or distract the Seriousness and Devotion of our Spiritual Worship: Which I think cannot justly be imputed to the Observances of our Church, being very few for Number, and very grave and modest for Use.

If such things as these be imposed upon us, the Worship of God is not thereby either changed or adulterated, neither is there any addition made unto it; but the Substance of that Worship is still in Conformity to God's Laws, when yet the outward and indifferent manner of it is in Conformity to Man's. Certainly it is no addition to Baptism, to give a Name to the Baptized, though we find no express command for it. And I much wonder among our carping Brethren, some or other had not scrupled this, as well as another Observance. It is no addition to the Ordinances of Jesus Christ, to appoint at what hour they shall be celebrated, or in what Garment, or in what decent Posture; for all these things are extrinsecal to the Worship of God, and fall under the Cognizance and Direction of our Superiours.

Certainly did we but rightly weigh what is required as a part of Worship, and what only as a Circumstance of Worship, a great deal of Heat, and Contention, and uncharitable Prejudice would be removed and prevented. It is true our Saviour, *Matth. 15. 9.* condemns the Scribes and Pharisees, that taught for Doctrines the Commandments of Men: that is, they taught those things which were but

but the Traditions and Ordinances of their Elders, to be in themselves absolutely necessary to the serving and worshipping of God. But certainly this Reproof falls not upon these, who though they do injoyne what they judge fit for Order, yet do not teach them for Doctrines; and are so far from thinking their Commandments an assential part of Worship, that they would Abhor and Anathematize all those that do so. Necessary they are to be submitted unto, and practised, because enjoined by that Authority to which God hath committed the Care of the first Table, as well as the second; but not necessary in themselves as any part of the Worship and Service of God, without which, although they were not imposed by Men, it would be unacceptable to him: And whosoever thinks so, let him be accursed.

And now that I have delivered my Judgment without Bitterness, give me leave to make some few Lamentations in the Grief and Bitterness of my Soul: Is it not to be bitterly lamented, that in a Reformed and Orthodox Church there should be such Schisms, Rents, and Divisions; Altar against Altar, Pulpit against Pulpit, and one Congregation against another? And what is all this Contention and Separation for? Oh, they will tell you, it is for the Purity of Religion, for the true and sincere Worship of God; that they may serve him purely without Humane Additions or Inventions. Thus goes the Cry; and a company of poor ignorant well-meaning Souls, because it is very demurely and gravely spoken, take it up, and joyn with it, never examining the grounds and bottom of it; but conclude, that these must needs be in the right, who complain of Corruptions; and pretend to a happy and glorious Reformation. Alas, my Brethren, was there ever any Schism in the World that did not plead the same? Did not others upon the same Pretences separate from their Communion, upon which they now separate from ours? And may not

the same Argument serve to crumble them into infinite Fractions and Sub-divisions : till at last we come to have almost as many Churches as Men, and scarce a Man constant and coherent to himself.

But what is it in our Worship which they dislike ? The Substantials of it are all the same with their own : We utterly disavow that we make that any part of Worship, which the Scripture hath not : and I think that Man very much forsaken of Reason and common Understanding, who shall endeavour to perswade us, that we intend Worship, when we ourselves most earnestly and seriously profess the contrary.

Is it then that we differ about meer Accidents and Circumstances ? I confess we do : but assert withal, that these things are not a just Cause of Separation from us. \* If we look back upon the Primitive Times, we shall find that almost every Church had its different Rites and Observances ; and yet under that Diversity maintained Unity and Communion : Yea, and at this day, the reformed Churches observe different Customs one from another, and yet they inviolably

hold Communion together, and we with them. The Gallican, Belgick, Helvetian, and German Churches reject us not, nor we them, although we differ in Rites and Discipline, and those things which are left to the prudence of every Church to constitute as they shall judge most necessary for Order and Edification. Now certainly if these different Rites and Observances be no ground for one National Church to separate from the Communion of another, they can be no ground for private Persons to separate from the Communion of that Church to which they belonged. Nay, although they might with reason dislike many Usages either as trivialous or incongruous, yet it becomes.

\* *Alii jejunant Sabbato ; alii verò non : alii quotidie communicant corpori & sanguini Dominico ; alii certis diebus accipiunt : alibi nullus dies intermittitur quò non offeratur ; alibi sabbato tantum & Dominico.*  
Aug. Ep. ad Januarium Ep.  
118.

comes the temper and modesty of a pious Christian, in things meerly circumstantial, to submit his Practice to the Judgment of that Authority under which he lives, and not to separate from the Communion of the Church, to forsake its Assemblies, to disown its Administrations, only because he thinks some things might be more conveniently ordered, according to the Model of his own, or other Mens apprehensions: Which in the Folly and sad Consequences of it, would be to act like him who took up a Beetle, and struck with all his force, to kill a Flie that he saw on his Friend's forehead. What else were this but to rend the Body of Christ by an angry contending about the Fashion of its Garments; and to tear away its Limbs by a violent striving to strip off those Cloaths which they think indecent? For my part I freely profess, That were my Lot cast among any of the Reformed Churches beyond the Seas, I would presently joyn in their Communion, and not at all scruple to conform myself to their received Customs, although perhaps in my own private Persuasion I may judge some of them to be less serious, and less reverent than those of the Church of *England*, which are now so passionately decried and condemned. \* I have ever venerated that Oracular Advice of St. *Ambrose* to St. *Austin*: 'If thou wilt  
' neither give Offence, nor take Offence, conform thyself  
' to all the lawful Customs of the Churches where thou  
' comest.

\* Nec  
disciplina  
ulla est in  
his melior  
gravi pruden-  
tisque

*Christiano, quam ut eo modo agas, quo agere viderit Ecclesiam adquam cunque foret deven-  
neris. Quod enim neque contra fidem, neque contra bonos mores injungitur, indifferenter  
est habendum, & pro eorum inter quos vivitur societate servandum est. — Mater mea  
Mediolanum me consecuta, invenit Ecclesiam Sabbato non jejunantem; cepertis perturba-  
ri, & fluctuare quid agerit, cum ego talia non curabam, sed propter ipsam consului de hac  
re beatissima memoria virum Ambrosium; respondit se nihil docere me posse nisi quod ipse  
faceret, quia si melius nosset, idpetius observaret. Cumque ego putassem, nullâ reductâ ra-  
tione, auctoritate solâ fuisse, nos voluisse admonere ne Sabbato, jejunaremus, subsecutus est &  
ait mihi; Cummi Roma venis jejuno Sabbato cum hic sim non jejuna. Sic etiam tu, ad  
quam forte Ecclesiam veneris, ejus morem serva, si cuiquam non vis esse scandalo, nec quen-  
quam tibi. — Ego verò de hac sententiâ etiam atque etiam cogitans, ita semper habui tan-  
quam eam celesti oraculo suscepim. Aug. ad Jan. Ep. 118.*

But



But I will not farther enlarge on this cholorick and touchy Controversy; only I pray, that our wanton Dissentions about these less important Matters, may not provoke God to deprive us of the Substance and Essentials of our Religion; and reduce us to such a condition wherein we should be heartily glad, could we enjoy the Liberty of the Gospel, and the Ordinances of our Lord Jesus Christ, under any of those Forms of Administration, which are now so furiously debated amongst us. It were just with God to extinguish the Light of his Gospel, when we use it not to work by, but all our study and strife is how to snuff it.

And thus much in the general, touching the External Worship of God required in this Commandment.

The Sins forbidden by it are two:

Contempt of the Worship of God; and  
Superstition in performing it.

Concerning the former, I have already spoken largely, in giving you the Characters of a Prophane Person.

I shall therefore at present speak onely of Superstition.

Concerning the Etymology of the Word, both *Tully* and *Lactantius* are agreed, that it is derived from *Superstites*, *Survivers*; but about the reason of the Notion they much differ: *Tully* saith, *Qui totos dies precabantur & immolabant, ut sibi sui liberi superstites essent, superstitiosi sunt appellati: i. e.* They who immoderately prayed and sacrificed, that their Children might survive them. But *Lactantius* is not content with this reason, and therefore gives another: *Superstitiosi autem vacantur, non qui filios suos superstitites optant (omnes enim optamus, sed aut ii qui superstitem memoriam defunctorum colunt; aut qui parentibus suis superstites celebrant); imagines eorum domi, tanquam Deos*

*Pena-*

*Penates* : i. e. Men were called superstitious not from desiring that their Children might survive them, but because they celebrated the surviving memory of the Dead ; or because that surviving their Parents they worshipt their Images as their Household Gods.

But whatsoever be the Etymology of the Word, we may take this short Description of it, That it is a needless and erroneous Fear in Matters of Religion ; and this is twofold, either Negative or Positive.

Negative Superstition is, when Men do fearfully abstain from, and abhor those things as wicked and abominable, which God hath not forbidden, and therefore are in themselves lawful and harmless. And those who are biggoted with this Superstition, will be sure to cry out against all that do observe such things as they condemn, for miserably seduced and superstitious Souls. Which is the exact humour of the Men of our Days, who (as *Diogenes* is said to have trampled upon *Plato's* Pride with far greater Pride) so these exclaim against Superstition with far greater Superstition. For Superstition is not either the observing, or not observing of such things, but the doing of either with an erroneous fear lest God should be displeased and provoked if we did otherwise : He is therefore negatively Superstitious who makes the not doing of that which is lawful and harmless, a matter of Conscience, and of Religion.

Positive Superstition is, when Men do fearfully observe and perform those things which either are forbidden, or at least no where commanded by God : Or if you will, it is a restless fear of the Mind, putting Men upon Acts of Religion which are not due, or not convenient.

Now this Positive Superstition expresseth it self two ways : For sometimes it gives Divine Honours to that which is not God : And sometimes it performs needless and superfluous Services to the true God. Both these are the effects

effects of Superstition ; but are commonly known by their proper names, the one being Idolatry, and the other Will-Worship. And both these are forbidden in this Commandment :

- I. *First*, Idolatry is a part and species of Superstition ; so we find it expressly *Acts* 17. 16. compared with Verse 22. In the 16 it is said, That *Paul's spirit was stirred in him, when he saw the city of Athens wholly given to idolatry.* And in the 22 it is said, That *Paul* reprov'd them as being too superstitious. And therefore though all Superstition be not Idolatry, yet all Idolatry is Superstition, yea, and the blackest kind of it.

Now Idolatry is nothing else but the giving of religious Worship unto an Idol : and an Idol is not only an artificial Image or Representation of any thing, whether real or fictitious, set up to be worshipped, but any Creature of God, whether Angels or Men, Sun, or Moon, or Stars, &c. to which we give any religious Honour and Service. The worshipping of any Creature, whether in Heaven above, or in the Earth beneath, or in the Water under the Earth, is Idolatry ; which is particularly and by name forbidden in this Commandment. And indeed this is a Sin so absurd and stupid, that it is a wonder it should ever be so bewitching as to inveigle the far greater part of the World. The Prophet *Isaiah* doth very frequently deride the folly and madness of Idolaters, especially Chap. 44. 16. He burneth part of his wooden God in the fire ; he roasteth his meat with it, and is satisfied ; he warmeth himself ; and the residue thereof he maketh a God, he falleth down unto it and worshippeth it, and prayeth unto it, and saith, Deliver me, for thou art my God. A most gross and bestial Stupidity ; as if there were more Divinity in one end of a Stick than the other : and yet a Sin most strangely bewitching, after which all the Heathen World ran a Whoring ; and from which all the Remonstrances and Threatnings

nings which God makes to his own People of *Israel*, could not restrain them : yea, and so strangely belotting is it, that a very great part even of those who profess the Name and Doctrine of Jesus Christ, are most foully guilty of it ; I mean the Papists ; who to hide their shame in this particular from the notice of the People, have covered it with a greater, and thought fit rather to Expunge this second Commandment, than to leave their Image-Worship to be censured and condemned by it : For in all their Catechisms and Books of Devotion, which they have published for the use of the Vulgar, they have sacrilegiously omitted this second Commandment, as fearing that the Evidence of it would convict and condemn them of Idolatry in the Consciences of the most ignorant and illiterate that should but hear it rehearsed.

Let us now proceed to consider who may justly be condemned of Idolatry, and the Violation of this Precept.

*First*, He is an Idolater that prays unto any Saint or Angel ; for he ascribes that unto the Creature which is an Honour due only unto God the Creator. Our Faith and our Invocation ought to be terminated in the same Object ; Rom. 10. 14. *How shall they call on him in whom they have not believed.* And therefore if we cannot without Blasphemy say, that we believe in such a Saint, or Angel, neither can we without Idolatry pray unto that Saint or Angel.

1.

*Secondly*, The most execrable Idolatry that is, is that of entering into League and Correspondence with the Devil ; to consult and invoke him, and by any wicked Arts implore, or make use of his help and assistance. And of this are those guilty in the highest degree, who enter into any express Compact with the Devil, which is always ratified with some Homage of Worship given to him : And in a secondary and more low degree, those who apply them-

2.

T

selves

selves to seek help from such forlorn Wretches, such as the Traditionary Charms and Incantations, or any vain Observances, to free them from Pains and Diseases, or other Troubles that molest them. For all those things which have not a natural Efficiency to produce that Effect for which they are used, may very reasonably be suspected to have been agreed on formerly between the Devil and some of his especial Servants, and that all the Vertue they retain is only from that Compact; which as it was Explicite in those that made it, so it is Implicite in those that use them; for they still act in the power of that first Stipulation and Agreement.

3. *Thirdly*, Whosoever bows down his Body in religious Adoration of any Image, or other Creature, is guilty of Idolatry; and doth most expressely transgress the very Letter of this Command, *Thou shalt not bow down before them, nor worship them*. It is but here a vain Refuge unto which the Papists betake themselves, when they excuse themselves from being guilty of Idolatry, because although they worship Images, yet they worship the True GOD by them.

1. For, *first*, they worship the Images of very many Creatures, both Men and Angels. For me now to examine their Evasion concerning *λατρεῖς, δουλῖα, and ὑπερδουλῖα*, would perhaps be as improper in this Auditory, as the Distinction itself is vain and frivolous.

2. *Secondly*, Whereas they pretend to worship the true God by an Image, we reply, That it is most impious to attempt to represent God by any visible Resemblance, and therefore much more to worship him, could he be so represented. For God who is infinite, cannot be circumscribed by Lines and Lineaments; and being invisible cannot be resembled: And therefore God doth again and again inculcate it upon the *Israelites*, that when he delivered the Law unto them, he appeared not in any shape, that they might  
not

not audaciously attempt to delineate him, and so be inticed to Idolatry: Thus *Deut. 4. 12. Ye heard the voice of words, but saw no similitude. only ye heard a voice.* And Verse 15, *Take ye therefore good heed unto yourselves, (for ye saw no manner of similitude in the day that the Lord spake unto you in Horeb, out of the midst of the fire) lest ye corrupt your selves, and make you a graven image, the similitude of any figure.* When therefore they plead, That they worship the onely true God by Images; this is no better than to excuse one horrid Sin, by the commission of another.

Thirdly, To worship the true and onely God by an image, is gross Idolatry. This the Papists deny; and place Idolatry in worshipping of Images set up to represent false and fictitious Gods; or else in worshipping them with a belief that they themselves are Gods. But,

First, Upon the same account the *Israelites* were not Idolaters in worshipping the Golden Calf: for they were not so brutish as to believe that Calf itself to be their God. Nay, it is most evident, that they intended to worship the true God under that Representation. See *Exod. 32. 4, 5. These be thy gods, O Israel, which brought thee out of the land of Egypt.* They could not be so stupid as to think that that very Calf which they themselves had made, had delivered them from *Egypt*; but they worshipt the true God who had given them that great Deliverance, under this Hieroglyphick Sign and Resemblance; which appears Verse the 5th, *Aaron made proclamation and said, To morrow is a feast to the Lord;* in the Original it is *Jehovah*, the proper and incommunicable Name of the true God. And yet that this Worship of theirs although directed unto the true God, was horrid Idolatry the Scripture abundantly testifies, Verse 31 *Oh, this people have sinned a great sin. For they have said, Neither be ye idolaters, as were some of them: as it is written, The people sat down to eat and drink, and*

rose up to play. Acts 7. 41. *They made a calf in those days, and offered sacrifice to the idol.*

2. Again, *secondly*, Micah and his Mother were certainly guilty of Idolatry in making and worshipping their Images: and yet that they were made to be Symbolical Representations of the true God, and erected to this very purpose, that he might be worshipt by them, appears clearly from the History, as we have it recorded Judges the 17. 3, 4. *I had wholly dedicated (saith she) the silver unto the Lord, (Jehova hebr.) for my son to make a graven and a moulton image: Which when he had done he hired a Levite to be his priest.* And in confidence of the Reward of so much Piety, concludes, Verse 13. *That certainly now the Lord Jehova would bless him, and do him good.* Nothing can be clearer then that all this Worship was intended by him to the true and only God; yet being performed by Images, it was no better than rank Idolatry.

3. *Thirdly*, If the Papists in worshipping the true God by Images be not Idolaters, then neither was *Jeroboam* who made *Israel* to sin, an Idolater, in setting up his Calves at *Dan* and *Bethel*. For whosoever, rationally considers the occasion and Political grounds of this Innovation, must needs conclude, that *Jeroboam* intended not to introduce a new God, (which would have made the People to fall faster from him, than Tyranny and Oppression did from *Reboam*), but only to set up some visible Signs and Representations of the true God, and to persuade the People that they need not go to *Jerusalem* to seek his Presence, and to offer their Gifts and Sacrifices; for the same God was as much present with them in those Figures as he was at the Temple of *Jerusalem* between the Cherubims. And therefore we find that the Idolatry of *Jeroboam* is distinguished from the Idolatry of those who worshipped *Baal* and other false Gods: See the 1 Kings 16. 31. where God speaks concerning *Ahab*, as if it had been a light thing for him

*Joseph.*  
*Antiq.*  
*Jud. lib.*  
*8. c. 3.*

him to walk in the sins of *Jeroboam* the Son of *Nebat*, he went and served *Baal*, and worshipped him.

Nay, *fourthly*, although some among the Heathens might be so grossly stupid as to suppose the Images themselves to be Gods, and so to worship them, yet their wise and learned Philosophers were far enough from such a senseless Error; yea, they were forced to use as many Distinctions and subtil Evasions concerning their worshipping of Images, as now the Papists do; and truly most of them are the very same, and seem but borrowed out of the Schools of the Heathens. But especially they insist on this, That they venerated not their Statues, not as they were made of

such or such Materials, but only as they were the Houses and Bodies of God, where his Presence resided, and by which his Power was manifested: That they worshipped not the visible Sign, but the invisible Deity by it. And what doth the Papist say more than this? *viz.* That they worship the Images of God, not as if they were themselves God, but only

as they are the visible Signs and Symbols of the Divine Presence; and so all their Worship is directed unto God thorough them. So that in matters of Idolatry, I profess I can find no difference at all between Heathens and Papists: for as the more learned Papists do profess that they worship the true God by the Image; so likewise did the more learned Heathens. And for the ignorant and vulgar Papists, I am very apt to suspect that they do, as the ignorant Heathen, terminate and limit their Worship in the very

*Non hoc visibile colo, sed numen quod in illis invisibiliter habitat. Et qui videbantur sibi purgatiora esse religionis, dicebant; nec simulachrum, nec demonium colo, sed per effigiem corporalem, ejus rei signum inuor quam colere debeo. Arnob. lib. 6.*

\* *Dis  
Chris-  
stom. Or-  
rat. 12.  
de primâ  
Dei no-  
titiâ.*

\* *Tert.  
eipn pñrn*

*ἐν τῷ πνεύματι καὶ ἐν ἀγάπῃ τοὺς ὁδοὺς ἀλλὰ θεῶν ἀναθήματα καὶ ἀγάλματα. Celsus Orig. Cont. Cels. lib. 7.* Where he likewise proves, that it is lawful to make Images of God, because according to the Doctrine of Christians themselves, God made Man according to his own Image: The very Argument urged by the Papists, and made use of by the second Council of Nice.

Images



Estienne  
Apol. pour  
Herodote.

Images before which they fall prostrate, esteeming them to have Divine Power and Vertue of their own. For they are most grossly blinded and insatuated in this their Image-Worship, and may as well take a Stone or a Block to be a God, as the great Dragon to be a Saint; as the poor Woman did, who offered one Candle to St. *Michael*, and another to his Dragon, that is, the Devil. And therefore certainly if the Heathen World were ever guilty of Idolatry, so is now the Popish Church, their Worship, and all the Reasons of it being so exactly parallel.

And thus much concerning the first Branch of Superstition, which is Idolatry.

2. The *second* is Will-worship: Concerning this I shall speak but very little, having already prevented myself. Now Will-worship is nothing else but the inventing and ascribing any other Worship unto God, besides what he hath been pleased to command and institute; God will not be worshipped according to our fancies, but his own appointment: For as we must have no other God besides the true, so that God must have no other Service performed unto him, besides what himself hath required and prescribed: for this were to impute folly and weakness unto him, as if indeed he would have Servants, but knew not what service to injoy them.

And thus we have finisht the Prohibition, *Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, &c.*

Let us now consider the Sanction of this Precept; and that is twofold:

I. *First*, By denouncing a severe and fearful Threatning against all those who should presume to violate this Precept: *For I the Lord thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me.*

*Secondly,*

## the Second Commandment.

143

*Secondly*, By making a gracious Promise of Mercy to the careful and conscientious Observers of this Precept : *Showing mercy unto thousands of them that love me, and keep my commandments.*

II.

In the Threatning we have these things considerable :

*First*, Who it is that denounceth it : *I the Lord thy God.* 1.

*Secondly*, What it is that he denounceth and threatens : *To visit the iniquity of the fathers upon the children.* 2.

*Thirdly*, The Persons against whom this Threatning is directed : *Those that hate him.* And by the Context they are such as contemning the only true God, prostitute themselves unto Idols. 3.

*Fourthly*, The Duration and Continuance of that Vengeance which he will take upon them : *It shall be to the third and fourth generation.* His wrath shall extend to their Children, and their Childrens Children. 4.

*First*, Let us consider who it is that denounceth this Threatning ; *I the Lord thy God am a jealous God* : So most read the words as our *Englisk* Translation renders them. But others no less rightly read them thus : *For I the Lord thy God am strong and jealous* : For the word *El*, which is here used, signifies the mighty God. And according to this Acception, the words contain in them a Description of God. 1.

*First*, By his relation to us, *Thy God* ; a God who hath separated thee from all People of the Earth, to be his peculiar Treasure ; who hath brought thee near unto himself, even into the Bond of the Covenant ; who hath betrothed thee in Righteousness, and is not only thy Maker, but thy Husband, as the Prophet speaks, *Isai. 54. 5.* This God 1.

God it is who commands thee faithfully to perform the Marriage-vow that is between thee and him; and not to go a Whoring after the Vanities of the *Gentiles*, nor to expose thy shame and nakedness before any False or Idol-God. For Idolatry is Spiritual Adultery, and most frequently set forth under that Name and Notion in the Holy Scriptures.

2. *Secondly*, Thy God is described by the mightiness of his Power: He is *El kana*, a strong and jealous God; able to revenge any dishonour that is done him by thy unchast lewdness.

3. *Thirdly*, He is described by that violent Passion which in Men is called Jealousy: *I the Lord thy God am strong and jealous*. Now Jealousy is an affection or passion of the Mind, by which we are stirred up and provoked against whatsoever hinders the enjoyment of that which we love and desire: The Cause and Original of it is Love; and the Effect of it is Revenge. Now God to deter the *Israelites* from Idolatry, sets forth himself as a strong and jealous God, that they might be assured not to escape Punishment; for he is strong, and therefore can inflict it, and he is jealous, and therefore will inflict it, if they shall dare to abuse and injure that love which he hath placed upon them.

Now this Jealousy is not to be ascribed unto God, as if there were properly any such weak and disturbing passion in him, but only by way of accommodation and similitude; speaking after the manner of Men: So that there is not *idem affectus*, but *idem effectus*; not the same inward affection, but the same outward effect. And so likewise is it to be understood when God is said to be angry, to be grieved, to repent, &c., that is, his actions towards us are like the actions of one that is angry, or grieved, or repents, although the infinite Serenity of the Divine Essence is not liable to be discomposed or ruffled by the tempests of any such like passions as are incident to us mutable Creatures.

Now

Now the reason why God calls himself here a jealous God, you will find in these following Particulars :

*First*, Jealousy is distrustful and suspicious : it dares not rely upon the truth and fidelity of the Person of whom we are jealous, but is full of misgiving doubts and fears. And so God (although in propriety of Speech he can doubt nothing, nor fear any thing, yet) is pleased to express his Jealousy by such speeches as intimate distrust and diffidence. And therefore when the *Israelites* made that solemn Promise to the Lord, *Deut. 5. 27. All that the Lord our God shall speak unto us, we will hear it and do it.* God returns answer, as one that misdoubted the real performance of so fair a Promise, Verse the 28 and 29. *I have heard the voice of the words of this people ; they have well spoken all that they have spoken : O that there were such an heart in them, that they would fear me, and keep all my commandments always, that it might be well with them, and with their children for ever.* 1.

*Secondly*, Jealousy is searching and inquisitive : It is an hard matter to escape the discovery of a jealous Eye, which is still prying and seeking after that which it would be loth to find. So the Eye of the all-seeing and all-knowing God is continually upon us ; he critically observes every look, and every kind of glance that we cast upon ourselves ; Not the least motion of our hearts, not the least twinkling of our thoughts can escape his notice and censure. And of all sins, there is none that God doth more jealously observe than that of Idolatry ; for this is the violation of that Marriage-Faith which we have plighted to him. And therefore we find that the idolatrous *Israelites*, as though they were conscious of the great Abuse they offered to their Maker, their Husband, (as the Prophet stiles God, *Isai. 54. 5.*) sought out dark and obscure Groves to act their Wickedness in ; that although they were not chaste, yet they might seem to be cautious. But in vain is it to draw the

Curtains of a thin Shade about them; a few Leaves could not cover their Shame, nor their Nakedness from him, who is all Eye every-where, and whose Eye is every-where light to itself: *God is light, and in him there is no darkness at all*, 1 John 1. 5. It is not possible to conceal from him the prostitution of an unchast and impudent Idolatry. And therefore saith the Psalmist, *Psal. 44. 20, 21. If we have forgotten the name of our God, or stretched forth our hands to a false God: shall not God search out this? for he knoweth the secrets of the heart.*

3. Thirdly, Jealousy as it is searching and inquisitive; so it is an angry and revengeful passion: And therefore Solomon  
 \* Prov. 6. calls it, *The rage of a man\**; therefore he will not spare in  
 34- the day of vengeance. And Cant. 8. 6. *Jealousy is cruel as the grave; the coals thereof are as coals of fire, which have a most vehement flame.* For as Love is the most soft and tenderest affection of Humane Nature, so Jealousy, which is the sowing of Love, and turning it into Vinegar, is the most wild and furious.

Now God is pleased to stile himself a Jealous God, to express the heat of his Wrath and Indignation against Sinners. So Deut. 29. 20. *The Lord will not spare him, but the anger of the Lord, and his jealousy shall smoke against that man, and all the curses that are written in this book shall lie upon him, and the Lord shall blot out his name from under heaven.* See what dreadful effects this smoking Jealousy hath, when it breaks forth into a flame: Zeph 1. 18. *Neither their silver nor their gold shall be able to deliver them in the day of the Lord's wrath, but the whole land shall be devoured by the fire of his jealousy; for he shall make a speedy riddance even of all that dwell in the land.* And what signal revenge this devouring Jealousy of the Almighty God hath taken upon Sinners, the whole World is full of sad Instances: This Fire hath kindled the eternal and unquenchable Flames of Hell. When the proud and rebellious Angels aspired to be

be Gods, God turned them into Devils, and these Devils into Hell ; for his Jealousy could not indure to have Rivals in his Glory. All the Ruines and Calamities that have ever hapned to Persons or Nations, are but the effects of God's Jealousy against Sin. And of all other Sins, his Jealousy takes most remarkable Vengeance against Idolatry ; for this is spiritual Whoredom, a provocation which the jealous God can least indure, see *Deut. 32. 16, 17, 19. They provoked him to jealousy with strange gods ; they sacrificed to devils, not to God ; to gods whom they knew not, to new gods that came newly up : And when the Lord saw it, he abhorred them, because of the provoking of his sons, and of his daughters. And Verse 21. They have moved me to jealousy with that which is not god, they have provoked me to anger with their vanities : A fire is kindled in mine anger, and shall burn to the lowest hell, and shall consume the earth with her increase, and set on fire the foundations of the mountains.* And so in the following Verses God exaggerates those sore and heavy Judgments which he would bring upon them in the fury of his Jealousie, because of this heinous Sin of Idolatry.

And thus we have seen in what respects God is said to be a Jealous God.

What remains now, but that Expostulation of the Apostle, *1 Cor. 10. 22. Do we provoke the Lord to jealousy ? are we stronger than he ?* We who are but as dust before the Whirlwind, and as dry stubble before the consuming Fire, shall we dare by our sins to affront and challenge that God who hath said, *Vengeance is mine, and I will repay it ?* And yet such is the madness of every desperate Sinner, that he rusheth upon God's neck, and upon the thick bosses of his Buckler, and daily provokes him who is infinitely able to destroy both Body and Soul in Hell-fire : Indeed Jealousie of itself, without power to wreak Revenge, is but a weak and contemptable passion ; but when it is armed with Almighty

ty Strength, it is justly terrible: Now the Lord thy God is **אלהים** a strong and jealous God. Every sin thou committest is an horrid wrong done unto him, and a violation of that Faith which thou owest him: He hath wooed thy affections, sought thy consent; and this thou hast vowed unto him in thy Baptism; and yet thou perfidiously followest other Lovers, and givest thy heart unto the World and the Devil, which are God's greatest Corrivals. The highest indignity that can be done against Love, is to contemn and slight it, and to imbrace those who are far more base and fordid: And how notoriously then dost thou affront God, when thou despisest his Love, and thy own Faith, to cast thyself into the imbraces of every vile Lust, which now pollutes thy Soul, and will hereafter damn it? O foolish and unkind that thou art, to neglect the love of the Great King of Heaven and Earth, and to make choice of the Devil, who is but the Slave of God, and sollicites thee only to make thee his Slave! Yet were it somewhat if thou couldest defend thyself, and maintain thy choice against the jealousy and wrath of the great God whom thou thus despisest and provokest. But assure thyself, his wrath and his jealousy will smoke against thee; yea, kindle upon thee, till it hath burnt thee down to the lowest Hell: and that day is coming wherein he will expose thy nakedness and thy shame before Men and Angels, and upbraid thee with the folly, as well as wickedness of thy Choice; and then condemn thee to be an eternal Consort with those Devils whom thou hast preferred before himself: Believe it, it is a sad and fearful thing to fall into the hands of the Living God, for he is a Jealous God, and a Consuming Fire, as *Moses* speaks, *Deut. 4. 24.*

And thus much for the first Observable in this Commination, *viz.* Who it is that denounceth it, *I the Lord thy God am a jealous God; or, I the Lord thy God am strong and jealous.*

*Secondly,*

*Secondly*, The next thing considerable is, what Judgment this strong and jealous God threatens to inflict; and that is, *To visit the iniquity of the fathers upon the children.* 2.

Now visiting is a figurative expression: And in the general God is said to visit when after a long space of time, in which he seemed to have forgotten, or taken no notice of Men, he declares by his Providence that he hath still observed their ways and doings. And this word of visiting may be taken either in a good, or in an evil part; in a good part, when God bestows great Mercies and Salvation upon his People, he is said to visit them; and thus it is frequently used in the Scripture. In an evil part, God is said to visit when he rewards those sins at which he seemed to connive, with deserved punishments; So *Psal. 89. 32. I will visit their transgression with the rod, and their iniquity with stripes.* *Exod. 3. 16.* And *Jer. 5. 9. Shall I not visit for these things? saith the Lord; and shall not my soul be avenged on such a nation as this?* *Luke 1. 68. 28. Ec.* And in this sense is the word to be taken here, *Visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children*; that is, punishing the Fathers iniquity in their Children and Posterity: And thus we have it interpreted *Jer. 32. 18. Thou recompensest the iniquity of the fathers into the bosom of their children after them.*

Now here arise two important Queries to be resolved:

*First*, Whether it be just with God, and consistent with the Divine Veracity to punish the sins of the Fathers upon the Children? 1.

*Secondly*, Whether God doth always observe this method of revenging the Fathers crimes upon their Posterity and Offspring? 2.

*First*, For the former Query: There seems some difficulty in reconciling Scripture to itself in this particular, and in reconciling such a proceeding to Justice and Equity; for sometimes the Scriptures do expressly mention the punishment of Parents sins to be inflicted upon their Children, *Exod.* 1.



*Exod. 34. 7. Jer. 32. 18, &c.* And when God commands *Paul* utterly to destroy *Amalek*, he gives this reason of his Injunction, *1 Sam. 15. 2. Remember that which Amalek did unto Israel, how he laid wait for him in the way when he came up from Egypt.* And yet almost four hundred Years were past between the Journey of the *Israelites* from *Egypt*, and the issuing forth of this Command: and therefore it is not probable, that any of those *Amalekites* who opposed them in their way, were then alive to bear the punishment of that Offence. Yea, and our Saviour threatens the *Jews* of his time, *Matth. 23. 35. That upon them should come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel, unto the blood of Zachariah son of Barachias, whom they slew between the temple and the altar:* That is, the sins of their Progenitors from the beginning of the World, unto that very Age when they murdered *Zachary* the \* Father of *John the Baptist*, in the Court of the Temple, shall be punished in this Generation.

\* Vide  
Baron.  
Annal.  
An. 1.  
Sect. 52.  
&c.

And yet again we read as expressly, *Ezek. 18. 20. The soul that sinneth, it shall die: the son shall not bear the iniquity of the father, neither shall the father bear the iniquity of the son; the righteousness of the righteous shall be upon him, and the iniquity of the wicked shall be upon him.* And again, *Jer. 31. 29, 30. In those days they shall say no more, The fathers have eaten sowre grapes, and the childrens teeth are set on edge: But every one shall die for his own iniquity.*

And indeed this seems most agreeable to the Rules of Justice, that the Innocent should not be punished for the sins of the Nocent and Guilty.

Now to solve this Difficulty, and reconcile this seeming Contradiction, I shall premise some Distinctions, and then draw from them some Conclusions satisfactory to the Question propounded.

Punish-

Punishments are either Temporal, such as befall in this present life ; or else Eternal, such as are reserved to be inflicted upon all impenitent and disobedient Sinners in the World to come.

Again, Children may be considered either as imitating the Crimes and Transgressions of their Parents, or repenting of them, and reforming from them, and to not walking in their Fathers steps, but in the ways of God's Commandments.

Now, *first*, Certain it is that God never visits the iniquity of the Fathers upon repenting and reformed Children with eternal punishments. And in this sense it is everlastingly true, That *the son shall not bear the iniquity of his father ; but the soul that sinneth, it shall die ; and every man shall bear his own burden.*

But some may say, Are we not made liable even to eternal Death, only by the sin of another ? Hath not the sin of our first Father brought condemnation upon all his Posterity ? And therefore how is it true, that the Son shall not in this respect bear the iniquity of his Father ?

To this I answer, It is not his sin considered personally as his, that hath made us obnoxious unto eternal Death ; but it was our sin as well as his : for in him we all sinned and fell. *Adam* was our federal Head and common Representative, and his Sin was legally ours, even as his Obedience would have been, had he persevered in it. But now the Case of *Adam* is singular, and much different from that of intermediate Parents ; they indeed are our natural Heads, but not our federal Heads as *Adam* was ; their actions are onely their own, and not ours, and have no influence at all upon the determining of our eternal state and condition : and therefore we shall not be accountable to God at the last Day for what they have done, but only for what we our selves have done in the Body, whether it be good or evil. Yet,

*Secondly,*

# An Exposition upon

2. *Secondly*, If the Children imitate the wickedness and crimes of their Fathers, it is but just and righteous with God to punish them with eternal Death and Damnation for them: It is but fit that they should inherit their Fathers Damnation, who inherit their Fathers Transgressions. But in this case it must be observed, that God punisheth them not because they are their Fathers sins, but because they are their own.

3. *Thirdly*, God may, and often doth visit the Iniquity of the Fathers upon the Children with Temporal Punishments, whether the Children imitate the Offences of the Fathers, or else reform from them. And these Temporal Punishments are many times very sore and heavy; languishing Diseases, racking and tormenting Pains, loss of Estate, sometimes ravishd from them by violence, sometimes melting away insensibly: The Father possibly by his unjust Oppression and Extortion, intails a Curse upon his Estate, which like a Canker, eats it out and consumes it in his Son's days; so that nothing is left in his hands but Shame and Poverty, altho' perhaps he might never know the sins for which God blasts him: Yea, we find that God doth inflict Temporal Death on the Child for the Offence of the Parent; thus, 2 Sam. 12. 14. *in Nathan's Message to David, Because by this deed thou hast given great occasion to the enemies of the Lord to blaspheme, the child also that is born unto thee, shall surely die.*

Thus God doth very frequently inflict Temporal Punishments upon the Children for the Fathers Transgressions: Nor is it at all hard to reconcile this with the measures of Justice and Equity, because of that near relation which they bear unto their Parents; for certainly it is just with God to punish a Sinner in all that is related unto him: now Children are parts of their Parents, yea, their Parents live and survive in them; and therefore certainly God in punishing them, may justly strike what part of them he pleaseth.

pleaseth. And this even *Plutarch*, an Heathen, could observe, speaking how God did often inflict grievous Judgements on the Posterity of lewd and wicked Men, he tells us, οὐδὲν ἀτόκον ἐν ἐκείνων ὄντις ἔχων τὰ ἐκείνων, it is nothing strange and absurd for those who are theirs to suffer what belongs to them. *Plutar. de sero puni-  
en.*

And thus we have briefly vindicated the Justice of God, in visiting the Iniquity of the Fathers upon their Children.

But then, *secondly*, another Question is, Whether God doth always observe this Method of revenging the Offences of Fathers upon their Children in Temporal Punishments? 2.

To which I answer, No, he doth not: neither doth this Threatning in the Commandment oblige him to do it, but only shews what their sins do deserve, and what he might justly do if he pleased to use his Power and Prerogative. And therefore we read of the Children of wicked Parents, who yet were both pious and prosperous; such were *Hezekiah*, and *Josiah*, the one the Son of *Ahaz*, the other of *Amon*. But most commonly we may observe it in the course of Divine Providence, that the Posterity of wicked Parents pay off their Fathers' score to Divine Justice, in the Temporal Evils and Calamities that are brought upon them: But yet if they themselves be pious and holy, this may be for their comfort, that whatsoever Afflictions they lie under, shall be for their benefit and advantage; and they are not Punishments to them, but onely fatherly Corrections and Chastisements: for the very things which they suffer may be intended by God as a punishment to their Ancestors, but a fatherly correction to themselves; and what to the one is threatned as a Curse, to the other may prove a Blessing and an Advantage, as it gives them occasion of exercising more Grace, and so of receiving the greater Glory.

X

Suffer

Suffer me to close up this with one or two Practical Meditations.

- I. *First*, If it be the usual method of Divine Providence to visit the iniquity of the Father upon the Children, see then what great reason Parents have to beware they do not lay up a stock of Plagues and Curses for their Posterity, nor clog the Estate they leave them, with so many Debts to be paid to the Justice of God, as will certainly undo them: Thou who by Fraud and Cozenage heapest together ill gotten Wealth, thinkest perhaps of leaving so many hundreds, or thousands to thy Children, but considerest not withal, how many Curses thou puttest into the Bag, Curses that in time will rot and eat out the very bottom of it: Thou who by this, or by any other way of Wickedness, either Swearing, or Drunkenness, or Uncleaness, provokest the Holy and the Jealous God, doth it nothing grieve thee to think that thy sins shall be punish'd upon thy poor Childrens backs? Possibly thou art so fondly tender of them, that thou art loth to chastise them when they really deserve it for their own faults; yet art thou so cruel to them, as to abandon them over to the Justice of God, to be severely scourged for faults which are not their own, but thine. Whose heart would not yearn, and whose bowels would not be turned within him, to go into an Hospital, and there view over all those Scenes of Humane Misery and Wretchedness which are presented to us; the Blind, the Lame, the Deaf, the Dumb, the Maimed, the Distracted, the ulcerated and loathsome Leaper, and those several Maps of Man's Woes and Torments that are there exhibited? Think then with thyself, this is the Inheritance, this is the Portion bequeathed them by their accursed Parents. And as thou wouldest have thine own Children to be made the same sad Spectacles of Divine Wrath and Vengeance, so go and sin them into the same condition. Certainly Wolves and Tigers are more merciful to their Off-spring, than wretched

ed Man ! It is thou thyself, O cruel Man ! who hast crippled, and maimed, and tormented, and beggered, and undone thine own Children ; and perhaps every sin thou committest either murders, or tortures a poor helpless Infant, one whose greatest misery it is, that ever he was born of thee. I beseech you-Christians think seriously of this thing ; and as ever you would wish well to those dear Pledges which are as your own bowels, so beware how ever you provoke the holy and jealous God, by any known and wilful sin, who will be sure to repay it home, either in your own Persons by his immediate Judgments upon yourselves, or that which will go as near the heart of every tender and compassionate Parent, by his sore Judgments on the poor Children and Posterity.

*Secondly,* See here what great reason thou hast to render 2.  
Thanks and Praise unto God, that thou art born of holy and pious Parents ; such as treasure not up Wrath for thee, but Prayers : Possibly they were but poor and low in the World ; but yet they have bequeathed thee a rich Patrimony, and made God Executor, who will faithfully discharge his Trust, if thou discharge thy Duty, and give thee a Blessing possible in this life, but certainly in the life to come. Let others boast their Blood, and their Parentage, and reckon up a long row of Monuments and Ancestors, if they have been wicked, lewd, and ungodly, but thine vertuous, and the sincere Servants of God, they possibly may be the last of their Family, and thou the first of thine : Howsoever, know that it is far more Noble to be born of those that have been born of God, than to be the Grand-children of the Devil : Thou hast better Blood running in thy Veins, even the Blood of them whom Christ hath judged worthy to be redeemed, and washed with his own Blood, whose Names are written in Heaven in the Lamb's Book of Life ; a greater Honour and Dignity, than if they were written in the Worm-eaten Pages of idle Heraldry : And if thou followest  
X 2 their

their good Examples, thy Relations, and Portion too are greater and richer, for thou hast God for thy Father, Christ for thy Brother, and the whole Heaven of Stars for thine Inheritance.

And thus much for the second General, what is here threatned in the Commandment, *viz. The visiting the of iniquity of the fathers upon the children* I shall be more brief in the two remaining. Therefore,

3. *Thirdly*, Let us consider the Persons against whom this Threatning is denouriced, *Visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children of those that hate me*: And who those are, is explained in the Antithesis subjoyned, *Keeping mercy for thousands of those that love me, and keep my commandments*. If then those that keep God's Commandments are Lovers of God, (which our Saviour expressly affirms, *John 14. 21. He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me*;) by direct consequence it follows, that those who transgress the Commandments of God, are Haters of God. And what worse can be said of the very Devil himself, let them pretend never so fair, and speak words full of respect and reverence, yet bring them to this Tryal, do they observe and keep the Commandments of God or no? If not, they are Haters of God and Goodness. And indeed it is impossible, that those who are disobedient and rebellious should love God; for can they love him who hath required from them what they do so extremely loath? Can they love him whom they must needs apprehend armed with wrath and vengeance to punish and torment them everlastingly for their sins? Can they love him, who if they have any consciences in them, they must needs know hates them with a perfect hatred, and will be avenged on them in their eternal ruine and destruction? Certainly if we love God, because he first loved us, these cannot but hate him, to whom their own consciences must needs attest, that God hates both them and their ways.

*Fourthly,*

*Fourthly*, Consider the Duration and Continuance of that Vengeance which God will take upon those who thus hate him. On their own persons he will revenge himself eternally, and be ever satisfying his wronged Justice in their insufferable Torments: But on their Posterity he will be avenged unto the third and fourth Generation. And yet even in this very Threatning there is Mercy contained; Mercy it is that such a wicked and accursed Race, are not cut off, and cast out of his sight and grace for ever; and that where once the wrath of God hath seized on any Family, it doth not burn down and consume the whole before it: But he graciously stops its course, and gives not way to all his fury; and in this Mercy glorifies itself against Judgment, in that he sheweth Mercy unto Thousands, but visiteth Iniquity only unto the third and fourth Generation.

The



## The Third

## C O M M A N D M E N T.

**Thou shalt not take the name of the Lord thy God in vain : for the Lord will not hold him guiltless that taketh his name in vain.**

**I**T is a known Rule; that all the Precepts of the Law respect either those Duties which we owe immediately unto God, or those which we owe immediately unto Man, the former constitute the first, the latter the second Table. The Commands of the first Table are prescribed us, for the regulating our Divine Worship; which is either internal and more spiritual, or external and more visible. The internal Worship of God, with the humblest veneration of our Souls, and most sincere affections of our hearts, is required of us in the first Commandment, as I have already declared. The external Worship of God consists of three parts, Prostration of the Body; Profession of the Mouth; and the Observation of prefixed Time. And each of these hath a particular Command to injoyn them.

The first of these, *viz.* Prostration of the Body, is required in the second Commandment; of which I have spoken.

The second, *viz.* Profession of the Mouth, comes next to be considered. And to guide and regulate this, we have our Rule prescribed in the third Precept of this Table:

*Thou shalt not take the name of the Lord thy God in vain, &c.* In which words we have:

*First,*

# An Exposition upon

- I. *First*, A Prohibition, *Thou shalt not take, &c.*
- II. *Secondly*, A Commination or Threatning, *For the Lord will not hold him guiltless that, &c.*

In the Prohibition three things are to be inquired into:

- I. *First*, What is meant by the Name of God?
2. *Secondly*, What it is to take the Name of God?
3. *Thirdly*, What it is to take God's Name in vain?

- I. *First*, What is meant by the Name of God?

I answer, The Name of God hath sundry Acceptations in the Scripture:

- I. *First*, Sometimes it is taken for the Nature and Being of the Deity itself. Nor is it an unusual Figure to put Name for that Thing or Person that is expressed by it; as *Revel. 3. 4. Thou hast a few names in Sardis, that have not defiled their garments; and they shall walk with me in white:* that is, thou hast a few Persons in Sardis. So likewise we may observe it to be frequently used when the Scripture speaks of God, and Christ, *Psal. 20. 1. The name of the God of Jacob defend thee;* that is, let the God of Jacob himself, who is the only True and Almighty Potentate, be thy Shield and thy Defence. *Psal. 135. 3. Sing praises unto his name;* that is, offer your returns of Thanks and Praises unto that God from whom you have received your Mercies and Salvation. So *Psal. 115. 1. Not unto us, O Lord, not unto us, but to thy name give glory;* that is, let the glory which is due unto thee be intirely ascribed unto thyself. And so concerning Christ, *Luke 24. 47. Repentance and remission of sins are to be preached to all nations in his name;* that is, through him. And *John 1. 12. He gave power to become the sons of God, to as many as believed in his name;* that is, to as many as believed in him. And thus it is used in innumerable places.

*Secondly,*

*Secondly*, Sometimes the Name of God is taken for the whole System of Divine and Heavenly Doctrine revealed to us in the Scriptures : Thus the Psalmist, *I will declare thy name unto my brethren* : Which the Apostle cites as spoken in the person of Christ, *Heb. 2. 12.* and the meaning is, That Christ should declare and make known to the World, a true spiritual Doctrine, and way of Worship ; and teach them a Religion which should both perfect their Reason, and save their Souls. And as a Testimony of the accomplishment of this Prophecie, our Saviour himself tells us, *John 17. 6. I have manifested thy name unto the men whom thou gavest me.* And *v. 26. I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare it ;* that is, I have instructed them in the true Religion, and right Worship of the great God. And so it is taken likewise *Micah 4. 5. All people will walk every one in the name of his God, and we will walk in the name of the Lord our God for ever and ever :* That is, we will walk in that way of Worship and Religion which is appointed and approved by the Lord our God.

*Thirdly*, The Name of God is taken for that whereby God is called, and by which his Nature and Perfections are made known unto the Children of Men : For Names are imposed to this very intent, that they might declare what the thing is to which the Name doth belong. Thus when God had created *Adam*, and made him the Lord of this visible World, he caused the Beasts of the Field, and the Fowls of the Air to pass before him, both to do Homage to their new Sovereign, and likewise to receive Names from him, which according to the perfection of his knowledge, did then aptly serve to express their several natures, and were not only Names, but Diffinitions too : And so when we read of the Names of God in Scripture, they all signifie some expressions of his Infinite Essence, in which he is pleased to spell out himself unto us, sometimes by one Perfection, and sometimes by another.

Y

Now

Now these Names of God, are either his Titles or his Attributes. Concerning which I have formerly treated at large in expounding to you the first Petition of the Lord's Prayer, *Hallowed be thy name*; and therefore shall here only mention them, and so proceed.

1. *First*, His Titles are his Name: And they are some of them Absolute; and such are these glorious Titles of *Jah, Jehovah, God, I Am, I Am hath sent thee*, saith God to *Moses*. And these are Names altogether incomprehensible and stupendous; others are Relative, respecting us. So his Name of Creator, denotes his infinite Power in giving Being to all things: Lord, and King, signifie his Dominion and Authority in disposing and governing all that he hath made: Father signifies his Care and Goodness in providing for us his Offspring: Redeemer, his Mercy in delivering us from Temporal Evils and Calamities, but especially from Eternal Death and Destruction. These, and other such-like Titles God doth assume unto himself, to express in some measure, as we are able to bear, what he is in himself.

2. *Secondly*, His Attributes also are his Name: Some of which are incommunicable, as his Eternity, Immenstity, Immutability, Simplicity, &c. which are so proper to the Divine Nature, that they belong to no created Being; others are communicable, and so Mercy, and Goodness, and Holiness, and Truth, &c. are the Attributes of God: Communicable they are, because some Rays of them may be found in the Creatures; but yet in that infinite degree and excellency which they have in God, so they are incommunicable, and proper only to the Deity. And therefore tho' Angels or Men may be said to be holy, or just, or good, yet none of them are so originally; none are so infinitely and unchangeably, none are so simply, and in the abstract, but only God himself.

These then are the Names of God.

And

And here in the Text, *Thou shalt not take the name of the Lord thy God in vain*; we must understand it concerning the Name of God in this last exception, that is, for any Name of his whereby he is pleased to reveal himself unto us; whether it appertain to his Titles, or to his Attributes; neither of these must be taken in vain.

*Secondly*, Let us consider what it is to take the Name of God. I answer briefly: To take the Name of God is no other than to make use of it, either as the Object of our Thoughts, or the Subject of our Discourses: And so we find this Phrase used, *Psal. 16. 4. I will not take up their names into my lips.* And *Psal. 50. 16. What hast thou to do, that thou shouldst take my covenant in thy mouth?* That is, that thou shouldst speak, or make mention of it. So that to take God's Name is to speak, or mention it.

*Thirdly*, Let us consider what it is to take God's Name in vain. To this I answer: God's Name is then taken in vain,

*First*, When it is used without propounding to ourselves a due end. 1.

*Secondly*, When it is used without due consideration and reverence. 2.

*Thirdly*, When it is used in an undue and unlawful action. 3.

*First*, When it is used without propounding to ourselves a due end: The end specifies the action: if the end be vain the action must be so too. Now there are but two ends that can justify and warrant the use of any of God's Names, either his Titles or his Attributes; and they are,

*First*, The Glory of God. And, 1.

*Secondly*, The Edification of ourselves and others. Whatsoever is besides these, is light and frivolous, and can be no good ground to us to make any mention of his great and terrible Name, which is so full of Glory and Majesty, that it should never be uttered, but where the subject of our

Discourse is serious and weighty. I will not now speak of those who vend the holy and reverend Name of God with Oaths and Blasphemies; a sin by so much the more heinous and abominable, by how much less temptation there is to it, either of pleasure or profit; this is an Iniquity to be punished by the Judge: And would to God Laws were put in severe execution, to cramp the black Tongues of all such prophane Wretches, whose number so abounds and swarms, that we can no where walk the Streets, without being assaulted with whole vollies of Oaths and Curses. But for others who are of more blameless Conversation, may it not be observed how their Discourses and familiar Tattle are filled up with the Name of God and Lord: I beseech you consider, what end do you propound to yourselves in thus using the great and terrible Name: Are all your Discourses so serious as to bear the burden of that great Name? Are they all immediately directed to the advancement of his Glory? Or do they all promote the benefit and welfare of those who hear them? If so, than indeed the Name of God can never be more seasonably used: But if you make the highest Lord, serve only to express some small Wonderment, or the great God only an expletive to fill up a gap in your Speeches; certainly these are such low and mean ends, that God will not hold thee guiltless. He accounts himself contemned when you mention his Name to such idle purposes, and will revenge the dishonour that you do him by it.

2. *Secondly*, The Name of God is taken in vain, when it is used without due consideration and reverence: Whensoever we make mention of him, we ought seriously to ponder his infinite Greatness and Glory, and to bow our hearts in the deepest prostration before that Name, to which all the Powers in Heaven and Earth bow down with most humble Veneration. But is it possible for those who speak of God promiscuously and at random, is it possible that they should utter his Name with Reverence, when all the rest of the

Dis-

Discourse is nothing but Froth and Levity? Nay, if they be reproved for it, will they not alledge that for their Excuse that which is their very Sin, That they did not consider it? And what! will you dare to bolt out the great Name of the great God without considering it? Is that a Name to be sported with, and to be tost too and fro upon every light and vain Tongue? The tongue of Man is called his glory, *Psal. 57. 8. Awake up my glory.* And shall the glory of Man, be the dishonour of God? shall that which was created to be a principal Instrument of magnifying and exalting God's Name, run it over without affection or reverence? Those things which we most of all condemn and despise, we use as by-words and lay no great stress nor sence upon them. And truly when we speak of God, without considering how great, how glorious and excellent a Being he is, how holy, just, and powerful, we do but make him a by-word, which is the highest contempt and indignity that can be cast upon him. And therefore the best means that can be used to secure us from that Habit and wicked Custom; that many of us have inured ourselves unto, of taking God's Name in vain, is seriously to consider whose Name it is, even the Name of the great God who is present with thee, and hears thee pronounce it: That God to whom the greatest and most glorious Things compared, are base and vile Nothings: That God who is jealous of his Honour, and will dreadfully revenge himself upon the Contemners of it. And if thou hast but wrought these Considerations into thine heart, and habituated them to thy thoughts, thou wilt for ever be afraid to speak of his Majesty vainly and irreverently.

*Thirdly,* The Name of God is taken in vain when it is used to an undue and unlawful action, especially when it is brought to confirm a Falshood either in Perjury or Herefie, which is a most horrid Impiety: And therefore it is observed, that the same word which is here rendered Vain, signifies

3.

אִשָּׁר

nifies also False or Deceitful: So that this Precept, *Thou shalt not take the name of the Lord thy God in vain*, may be rendered also, *Thou shalt not take the name of the Lord thy God in falshood*. Not that this is the only unlawful using of it, but that this is the chief and most notorious abusing of it: And indeed what greater sin can there be, than to bring God to be a Witness to our Lye? to make him, who is Truth itself attest that which is Falshood and Deceit. And therefore *Proverbs* 30. 9. *Agur* prays against pinching Poverty, as well as superfluous Riches, *Lest*, saith he, *I be poor, and steal, and take the name of my God in vain*. That is, lest Poverty compel me to steal, and fear of Shame or Punishment tempt me to Swear by the Name of the great God, that I have not done it. This indeed is to take God's Name in vain in the worst and highest sence.

Suffer me now to close up this with some Practical Application of it to your Consciences:

- I. *First*, Let this convince you of the greatness and heinousness of this Sin, and deeply humble you that have been guilty of it. I well know, that the commonness, whether of God's Mercies towards us, or of our Sins against him, takes off much from our Observation, and abates them both in our Estimate: And because this is so common a Sin almost in the mouths of all Persons, our ears are so beaten to it, that we now little regard it. Possibly should we hear a Devil incarnate belch out some direful Oath, we should start and tremble at it: but when we hear the Name of the great God, and our only Lord, slip along in some trifling and impertinent Discourse, this we take no notice of; and the commonness of the Sin hath almost stifled all Reproofs: I beseech you Christians consider,

- I. *First*, That we are not to weigh Sins by the Opinion of Men, but by the Censure and Sentence of God: He hath no more allowed you to take his Name in vain, than he hath to blaspheme it: The irreverent using of it is as expressly



- 1. preſſy forbidden, as the abjuring and curſing of it: And when the Law of God hath not diſpenſed with us, it is moſt intolerable preſumption that we ſhould dare to diſpenſe with ourſelves.

Again conſider, thou that ſportest away the Name of God in thy ordinary Prattle, what wilt thou have to relie upon in thy greateſt diſtreſſes: The wiſe Man tells us, *Prov.*

*18. 10. The name of the Lord is a ſtrong tower; the righteous runneth unto it and is ſaved.* But alas, what comfort

canſt thou find in the Name of God in thy greateſt neceſſities, ſince it is the ſame Name thou haſt uſed and worn out before in the meanest and moſt trivial concerns: Thou haſt already talkt away the ſtrength and vertue of it, and wilt hardly find more ſupport from it in thy Tribulation, than thou gaveſt reverence unto it in thy Converſation.

Let us then be more cautious than to ſpend ſo excellent a Remedy againſt all Fears, and Sorrows, and Afflictions, vainly and unprofitably. *Thy name*, ſaith the Spouſe, *is an ointment poured forth.* *Cant. 1. 3.* But certainly if upon every ſlight occaſion we break the Box, and expoſe the Name of God to common Air, it will in time loſe its ſcent and vertue, and when we have moſt need of it, ſhall find no reſreſhment, no comfort in it. Beſides,

2. *Thirdly*, This common and irreverent uſing of the Name of God, will inſenſibly over-ſpread as with a Spirit of Prophaneneſs; we ſhall by degrees arrive to a plain contempt of God, whom we thus hourly and unneceſſarily take into our mouths: For what elſe is this but to make ourſelves rude and familiar with that infinite Majeſty, towards whom the profoundeſt testimonies of reſpect and reverence muſt fall infinitely ſhort of expreſſing our due diſtance? But by uſing his Name vulgarly and promiſcuouſly, what do we elſe, but make it our ſport, and blow it up and down with every idle breath, as Children do bubbles in the Air?

Again,

4. Again, canst thou in Duty easily compose thyself to reverence the holy and dreadful Name of God, when thou hast thus accustomed thyself to name him without any veneration or respect in thy common Discourses? Certainly it is the hardest thing imaginable to make the heart fall down prostrate before that God whom thou invokest in Prayer, when once thou art used to invoke him slightly in thy ordinary Converse.

Let me therefore beseech you, O Christians, as you tender his Glory, of which he is jealous, whensoever you speak of God, or but mention his Name, you would do it with an holy Awe and Dread of his Divine Majesty; that you would seriously consider, that that Name to which every Knee bows, both of things in Heaven, and things on Earth, and things under the Earth, whether they be Angels or Devils, requires from you more respect and honour than to be idly blurted out with every rash and foolish expression.

And you who are Masters of Families, and have Children and Servants committed to your Care, beware that you stop this growing Sin in them betimes. It is the sin and shame of Parents, that they suffer little Ones to lisp the Name of God, and to learn the first syllables and rudiments of Oaths and Curses before they can well speak, whereby they lay a deep foundation for their future Impiety, and thereby bring the guilt of the next Generation upon us, who by indulging them in these young sins, do but introduce those habits of Wickedness into them, which perhaps can never afterwards be rooted out.

2. There is also another kind of taking the Name of God in vain; and that is in our Duties and holy Performances. And this is done two ways:

1. *First*, When in our Prayers we ask those things of God which are unlawful, or unwarrantable; as when we pray on the behalf of our Lusts, to obtain provision to fulfil them, *Jam. 4. 3. Ye ask amiss, that ye may consume it upon your lusts.*

When

When we pray out of Envy, Malice, and Revenge, that God would make himself a Party in our unreasonable and angry Quarrels. Such Prayers as these are vain; for what we thus desire either shall not be granted unto us, or if it be shall be granted unto us in wrath.

*Secondly,* When we perform holy Duties slightly, and without affection, we then likewise take the Name of God in vain: and therefore all Hypocritical Services, all Battologies, and heartless Ingeminations, are vain, and God's Name is not sanctified, but abused in them. For whatsoever we do in such a manner as we may be certain God will not accept, is done in vain: Now God will accept of no Performance which is not accompanied with the Heart, and filled with most devout Affections; and therefore they are performed in vain, and to no other effect, but to increase our guilt and our condemnation. Such Invocations are but Scoffings of God; and all the motions of our Lips, without the correspondent motion of our Hearts, is no better than making Mouths at God. 2.

*Thirdly,* There is also another kind of prophaning the Name of God, and taking it in vain, which is of a far higher and more heinous nature, and that is by unlawful Oaths and Execrations. 3.

Now an Oath in the general is a Confirmation of our Speeches, by calling in God to witness and attest the truth of them. Called therefore by *Tully* a Religious Affirmation. De Offic. l. 3.  
And it is of two kinds,

Assertory, and  
Promissory.

The former, when we assert that such a thing either hath been, or is; or the latter, when we engage that for the future it shall be, and be performed by us: which Oath we do sufficiently, and with a good conscience keep, if we use our utmost endeavours to accomplish what we have thus sworn, although the effect may be impeded by many invincible

Z

cible Obstacles intervening.

Now because a Spirit of Errour and Giddiness hath seized on some Persons, who think that every Oath is unlawful, and the taking of the holy and reverend Name of God in vain, and so a violation of this Commandment; I shall therefore briefly state that much-controverted Question, Whether at any time, or in any circumstances it be lawful for a Christian to assume the Name of God in an Oath? and then I shall proceed to shew you what Oaths are unlawful, and execrable Sins.

For the first, I assert, That an Oath is so far from being always sinful; that it is sometimes a Duty, yea, an Act of Religion, and part of the Service and Worship of God; and therefore not onely lawful but necessary. This we find *Deut. 6. 13. Thou shalt fear the Lord thy God, and serve him, and shalt swear by his name.* Yea, the Psalmist mentions it as a matter of Exultation, as if some notable Service were done by it unto God, *Every one that sweareth by him shall glory.* And if we consult the approved Examples of holy Men in Scripture, we shall frequently find them either exacting Oaths from others, or else themselves invoking the Testimony of the most high God, to confirm the Truth of what they speak; the places are too numerous to be cited, and too well known to need it: But because the great Cavil against these, is that they are only Authorities produced out of the Old Testament, and we are now obliged by the Precepts of a Superiour Law-giver, the Lord Jesus Christ; therefore, I say, in answer, That the Objection argues too great a vilifying and contempt of those Sacred Oracles, which were given to the Church, by the hand of *Moses*; and that things of a Moral nature, as an Oath is, cannot in one Age of the World be a Duty, and in another a Sin, when it is attended with the same Circumstances. And yet further, for their satisfaction, let us see what is spoken concerning Oaths in the New Testament, or in

*Psal. 63.*  
11.

in the Old relating to it : In the Old we have a Prophecy of what should be hereafter in the times of the Gospel ; *Isai. 45. 23. I have sworn by myself, the word is gone out of my mouth in righteousness, and shall not return, that unto me every knee shall bow, and every tongue shall swear.* And again, *Jer. 12. 16. And it shall come to pass, if they will diligently learn the ways of my people, to swear by my name, then shall they be built in the midst of my people.* But yet if neither of these will suffice, let us see some more immediate confirmation of this out of the New Testament itself: We find *St. Paul* himself more than once attesting the truth of those grave and weighty Matters which he delivers in his Epistles, by calling God to witness, which is the very form and nature of an Oath: So *2 Cor. 1. 23. I call God for a record upon my soul, that to spare you I came not as yet to Corinth.* And so again *Phil. 1. 8. God is my record, how greatly I long after you all.* And what other than a kind of Oath is that vehement Asseveration of the same Apostle, *1 Cor. 15. 31. I protest by your rejoicing which I have in Christ-Jesus, I die daily.* And again *Rom. 9. 1. I say the truth in Christ, I lie not.* And if you would yet have an Example somewhat more perfect, we may see it in the practice of an holy Angel, *Revel. 10. 6. The angel stood upon the sea, and upon the earth, and lifted up his hand to heaven, and swore by him that liveth for ever and ever, who created heaven, and earth, and the things in them, that there should be time no longer.* So that you do abundantly see by all these Instances, that it is not simply and universally unlawful to assume the holy Name of God in an Oath, and to call him in to be a Witness to the Truth of what we affirm.

The grand Objection that lies against this, is taken from two places of Scripture ; the one is that of our Saviour, *Matth. 5. 34, 35. But I say unto you, Swear not at all ; neither by heaven, for it is God's throne : nor by the earth, for it is his footstool : neither by Jerusalem, for it is the city of*

## An Exposition upon

*the great King. Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black. But let your communication be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay: for whatsoever is more then this, cometh of evil.* Can any thing be more express against all manner of Oaths than this, where we have a cautious Enumeration of many of them which were most vulgar and common? The other place is that of St. James, Chap 5. 12. *But above all things, my brethren, swear not, neither by heaven, neither by the earth, neither by any other oath; but let your yea, be yea, and your nay, nay; lest you fall into condemnation.* Can any thing be more express, or more commanding than this, *Above all things, my brethren; and, Lest you fall into condemnation?*

But for Answer to this, we must know, That our Saviour, and his Apostle, do not here simply and absolutely condemn all Oaths; but onely that common and profuse swearing which the Scribes and Pharisees taught corruptly to be no sin: For in this point of Oaths they had divulged among the People three false Traditions; the one was, That it was lawful for them to swear commonly, and without restraint, by any Creature. The other was, That that was no binding Oath, wherein the Name of God was not expressly used; and therefore though they should swear by Creatures, yet were they not perjured, although they should not perform what they thus uttered; except some few Cases wherein Interest made them consciencious. This we have Matth. 23. 16, 17, 18. *Wo unto you, ye blind guides, which say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing: and whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing.* That is, they taught that such an Oath was not obligatory, because it was only by Creatures. And yet even here they excepted such Oaths as were conceived and uttered by the Gold of the Temple, or the Gifts on the Altar, out of a politick Covetousness; that by so great a reverence shewn to the Gifts that were offer'd, the People might be induced to offer

offer more freely, and by that means their share of them might be the larger.

A third false Doctrine that they taught, was, That common swearing was no sin, although it were by the great God, if what they swear were true. And by this they give scope and liberty to confirm all that they said with an Oath, if they only took care to utter nothing that was false.

Now only against these three corrupt Traditions, are our Saviour's, and the Apostle's words directed :

1. For it is Perjury to violate an Oath conceived by Creatures, and that because of the near relation that all Creatures have unto God the great Creator. This reason our Saviour mentions in the fore-named place, *Swear not by heaven, for it is God's throne; nor by the earth, for it is his footstool; nor by Jerusalem, for it is the city of the great King.* And more expressly *Matth. 23. 22. He that shall swear by heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and him that sitteth thereon: even as he who shall swear by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein.* And so by the same proportion of reason, whosoever shall swear by any Creature, doth also virtually swear by the Almighty Creator of it: And therefore it is as much Perjury to falsify an Oath made by any of the Creatures, as though it were made by the great God himself; because the Creatures are all of, and from God. And,

2. Although it be Perjury to falsify an Oath taken by any Creature, yet it is a sin likewise, and utterly unlawful to make any such Oath, inasmuch as it is an idolatrous ascribing a Religious Worship unto the Creature which is due to God only. And in this sense especially, I understand these words of our Saviour, *Swear not at all; i. e. by any Creature.* And this the following Enumeration of Heaven, and Earth, and Jerusalem, and their Head, which were the usual forms of their Oaths, and by which our Saviour forbids them to swear, doth clearly prove to be his true meaning.

3. These

3. These places teach that it is a sin to swear at any time, or by any thing, although the great God himself, unnecessarily and arbitrarily : And therefore swear not at all, unless some just reason, and cogent necessity constrain you to call in so great a Testimony to confirm the truth of what you speak : For common and quotidian swearing is an high contempt and irreverence shewn to the Majesty of that God whom we bring in to attest to every trifle and frivolous thing we utter. And this I take to be the true sense and meaning of these places of Scripture ; and that they do not simply and absolutely condemn all manner of Oaths, but the corrupt Doctrine of the Scribes and Pharisees, and the corrupt Practice of their Disciples, who thought it no sin to swear familiarly, if so be that they did not swear falsely. So that the meaning of, *Swear not at all*, is, Swear not unnecessarily and voluntarily.

Now to make an Oath lawful, it must have these three Qualifications mentioned by the Prophet, *Jer. 4. 2. Thou shalt swear, the Lord liveth, in truth, in judgment, and in righteousness.*

1. *First*, A warrantable Oath must be accompanied with Truth, for it is taken in the Name of the God of Truth : *Isai. 69. 15. He that sweareth in the earth, shall swear by the God of truth.* And therefore it behoves him to consider, whether what he deposeth be Truth, or not ; yea, moreover, we must be fully certain, that the thing is as we attest it : For a Man may be guilty of Perjury in swearing that which is true, if he either believe it otherwise, or be doubtful of it. And therefore he that is called to give his Oath, must look to these two things :

1. That his Words agree with his Mind.
2. That the Thing agree with his Words.

He who fails in the second, is *ψευδῆς*, a false Swearer : He who fails in the first, is *ἐπίσπρος*, a Forswearer ; and in both is a perjured Person.

*Secondly,*



*Secondly*, A lawful Oath must be taken in judgment, discreetly and deliberately, advising and pondering with our selves before we swear : And here we must consider both the Matter, whether that be right and good ; and the Ends, whether they are duly propounded by us. And there are but two Ends that can warrant an Oath ; one is the Benefit of ourselves or others : the other is the Glory of God. And whosoever shall swear without a due consideration of these Ends, and an holy and sincere desire to accomplish them by his Oath, he swears rashly and unwarrantably.

*Thirdly*, A lawful Oath must be taken in Righteousness and Justice : And therefore it is very wicked to bind our selves by an Oath, or Vow, to do things that are either impossible or sinful.

*First*, The Matter of a just Oath ought to be possible ; and therefore we see how cautious *Abraham's* Servant was, when his Master made him swear, to take a Wife for his Son *Isaac*, of his Kindred, *Gen. 24. 5.* *Peradventure the woman will not be willing to follow me into this land.* And so should we in all our promissory Oaths, caution and limit them with those reasonable Exceptions, of as far as we know, and can lawfully endeavour.

*Secondly*, The Matter of a just Oath must be not only possible, but lawful and honest too ; for if it be unlawful, we are necessarily insnared in sin ; for either we must violate God's Command, or our own Oath. And therefore it was a most wicked Oath in the *Jews*, who combined together against *Paul*, and bound themselves under a Curse, that they would neither eat nor drink, till they had killed him. And so every Oath which ingageth Men to Sedition, disturbance of Government, and Rebellion, is in itself an unlawful Oath, and obligeth them to nothing but to repent of it, and renounce it.

According to these three Quallifications must every Oath be regulated, else it is not a lawful Oath, but an horred

Con-

Contempt of God, and taking of his Name in vain.

But to speak no more concerning lawful Oaths, let us now consider those which are too common among us; such I mean which are apparently unlawful and sinful.

Two things make an Oath unlawful;  
Falshood, and  
Rashness.

1. *First*, When it is False: And this indeed is a most desperate sin, to vouch a Lye upon God's credit, and to father a Falshood upon him who is the God of Truth, yea, Truth itself. This manifests the highest Contempt of God, when we call him to witness that which the Devil prompted us to speak. Should not we ourselves take it for an high Affront and Indignity, to be made Vouchers of other Mens Lyes, and Tales and Properties to put off their Falshoods? How much more then, is it a most hellish Wickedness, committed against the great God, to assert a known Lye, and then call in God to attest it for a truth? Which is no other but to father a Brat of the Devil, who is a Lyer, and the Father of Lyes, upon God, who hates Lyers, and hath appointed severe Torments for them: See how dreadfully God is incensed by this Sin, *Jer. 7. 9, 15, 16.* where he speaks of it as almost an unpardonable Offence, *Will ye steal, and murder, and swear falsely? Therefore will I cast you out of my sight, as I cast out your brethren. Pray not thou for this people, neither left up a cry nor prayer for them, neither make intercession to me: for I will not hear thee.* And so *Zech. 5. 4.* speaking of the Curse that should go forth over the face of the whole Earth, *I will bring it forth, saith the Lord of hosts, and it shall enter into the house of the thief, and into the house of him that sweareth falsely by my name: and it shall remain in the midst of his house, and it shall consume it, with the timber thereof, and with the stones thereof.*
2. *Secondly*, As false Swearing is a notorious prophaning of the Name of God, so likewise rash Swearing in our common

and

and ordinary Discourses : A sin that generally abounds and prevails amongst us ; almost every mouth is black with Oaths ; and we may see the very Soot of Hell hang about Mens lips : Nay, I have observed it, especially in these parts, to be not only the sin of more lewd and profligate Wretches, who mouth their Oaths with sound and cadence, but of those too who would be thought very severe and strict Christians, who scarce speak a word without a Drawle, or a sentence without an Oath, and who will pule and whine even in Swearing itself. If these Men separate to be better instructed, I wish with all my heart their Teachers would be pleased so far to condescend from their higher Speculations, as to instruct them, that to attest any thing by their Faith, or by their Truth, is a wicked Oath. For all Oaths which are conceived by any other thing besides the great God, how modest soever they may be in their sound, yet are more impious in effect, than those louder ones, which immediately call God himself to witness : and therefore the Prophet speaks of it as a most heinous, and almost unpardonable sin, *Jer. 5. 7. How shall I pardon thee for this ? thy children have forsaken me, and sworn by them that are no gods.* For since an Oath is a sacred thing, and part of Divine Worship, those that swear by any created Being (as certainly their Faith, and Truth, and Conscience is, if they have any) are guilty not only of vain Swearing, but of Idolatry too.

But some will say, What so great Evil can there be in an Oath, as long as it is Truth which they assert by it ? This I know is the common Reply and Excuse of those who are guilty of this Sin, and reprov'd for it.

To this I answer, *First*, Although it may be true that they speak, yet it is a most provoking sin, so far to debase the holy and reverend Name of God, as to bring it to attest every trivial and impertinent thing they utter ; and if it be by any Creature, it is by so much the worse. No Oath

is in itself simply good, and voluntarily to be used; but  
 \* *Juro*; only as Medicines are, \* in case of necessity. But to use,  
*sed (quantum mihi videtur)* it ordinarily and indifferently, without being constrained  
*magna necessitate compulsi;* by any cogent Necessity, or called to it by any lawful Au-  
*ro non mihi credi nisi faciam, & ei qui mihi non credit non expedit quod non credit.* Aug. Serm.  
 28. de verb. Apoll.

Μελέτη δὲ αἰετὴ τῇ τηρεῖν περὶ ὅρκου σέβας, τὸ μὴ παντὸς, μὴδὲ ὡς ἔτυχεν, χρῆσθαι τῷ ὅρκῳ, μὴδὲ ἐπὶ τοῖς παρεκτροπαῖς, μὴδὲ εἰς ἀπαλήψαν λόγου, μὴδὲ εἰς πᾶσαν διαγῆματ', ἀλλ' ὡς οἴοιτε τηρεῖν αὐτῇ τιμὴν χρῆσθαι ἐν τοῖς ἀναγκάσις αἵμα, καὶ πίκρῃς, καὶ τοῖς ὅτε ἐδεῖ μία ἄλλη τῶν τοιούτων σοφία περισφαινεῖται εἰ μὴ διὰ μόνου ἐν τῷ ὅρκῳ ἀληθείας. Hierocles in Carm. Pyth. 2.

2. Secondly, Though thou swearest that which is true, yet customary Swearing to, \* Truths will insensibly bring thee

\* Ἐν τῇ σωματείᾳ τὸ ὁμνῆ-  
 ειν, ῥάδιος ἀν μεταπίποι τις εἰς  
 ἐπιορκίαν. For which reason  
 he forbids Men to swear com-  
 monly, that they may not  
 swear falsely. Οὕτω γὰρ ἀν-  
 τίσταται τὸ αἰεὶ εὐορκεῖν, εἰ μὴ  
 κατὰ χρῆσιν τοῖς ὅρκοις. Hi-  
 erocles in Carm. Pyth. 2.

Περὶ τῆς ὁρκῆς, ἀσχετοῦ  
 ἐπιορκία. Phofy. Epilt. 1.

to swear Falshoods; for when once thou  
 art habituated to it, an Oath will be more  
 ready to thee than a Truth; and so when  
 thou rashly boltest out somewhat that is  
 either doubtful or false, thou wilt seal it  
 up, and confirm it with an Oath, before  
 thou hast had time to consider what thou  
 hast said, or what thou art swearing: For  
 those who accustom themselves to this  
 Vice, lose the observation of it in the fre-  
 quency; and if you reprove them for

Swearing, they will be ready to swear again, that they did

not swear. And therefore it is well observed of St. Au-  
 Aug. ad Hilaram. *stine: Melius nec verum juratur quam jurandi consuetudine,*  
 Ep. 89. *& in perjuriam sæpe caditur, & semper perjurio propinqua-*  
 Ep. 89. *tur: We ought to forbear Swearing that which is Truth,*  
 Ep. 89. *for by the custom of Swearing, Men often times fall into*  
 Ep. 89. *Perjury, and are always in danger of it.*

Now

Now to dehort you from this Sin of common Swearing, consider,

*First*, That it is a Sin which hath very little or no temptation to commit it. The two great Baits by which the Devil allures Men to Wickedness, are Profit and Pleasure : But now this common rash Swearing is the most unprofitable barren Sin in the World : What Fruits brings it forth, but only the Abhorrence and Detestation of all serious Persons, and the tremendous Judgment of God ? The Swearer gains nothing by it at present, but only the reputation of being a Devil incarnate ; and for the future, his gains shall be only the torments of those Devils and damned Spirits, whose Language he hath learnt and speaks. He that sows the Wind of an Oath, shall reap the Whirlwind of God's Fury. I.

Again, what Pleasure is there in it ? which of his senses doth it please and gratifie ? *Were I an Epicure* (\*saith one) *I would* \* Herbert's Church-Porch. *abate Swearing.* Were Men resolved to give themselves up to all manner of sensual Delights, yet there is so little that can be strained from this common Sin, that certainly unless they intended to do the Devil a pleasure, rather than themselves, they would never set their black mouths against Heaven, nor blaspheme the great God who sits imthroned there. Ask them why they indulge themselves in such a provoking Sin ; Why, some cannot forbear out of meer custom ; and others are pleas'd with the lofty sound, and gentile phrase of an Oath, and count it a special grace and ornament of Speaking : And what ? are these temptations ? are these such strong and mighty provocations, that you cannot forbear ? Shall the holy Name of the great God be torn in peices by you only to patch and fill up the rents of your idle Talk ? If this be the motive and inducement that makes you commit so great a Sin, (as commonly there is no other) know, that you perish as Fools perish, and sell your Souls to Dam-

nation and Eternal Perdition, for very Nothing.

Others perhaps will plead for their Excuse, That they never use to swear, but when they are vexed, and put into a passion. But what a madness is this, when Men anger thee, to strike at God, and to provoke him far more than others can provoke thee? If thou art never so highly incensed, why shouldst thou throw thy poisonous foam in God's face? Hast thou no other way of venting thy passion, but to flie in God's face, and to revenge thyself on him, when Men have injured thee? Certainly thy passion can be no more a temptation to do this, than it would be to stab thy Father, because thine Enemy hath struck thee.

2. *Secondly*, It is a most foolish Sin, because it contradicts the very end for which they commit it: The common Swearer perhaps thinks that he shall be much the sooner believed for his Oaths; whereas with all serious and judicious Persons there is nothing that doth more lighten the credit of his Speeches, than his rash binding and confirming the truth of them by swearing. For what reason have I to think that Man speaks truth, who doth so far suspect himself, as to think what he relates is not credible, unless he swear to it: And certainly he that owes God no more respect, than to violate the sanctity and reverence of his Name upon every trifling occasion, cannot easily be thought to owe the Truth so much respect as not to violate it, especially considering that there are far stronger temptations unto Lying than unto Swearing.

3. *Thirdly*, Consider that the Devil is the Author and Father, not of Lying only, but of Swearing also: *Let your yea, be yea; and your nay, nay*; saith our Saviour, *for whatsoever is more than these, cometh of evil*, Mat. 5. 37. *ἐκ τοῦ πονηροῦ ἐστίν*; i. e. it cometh of the Evil One, who is still prompting the Swearer, and putting Oaths upon the tip of his Tongue.

I shall now give you some Rules and Directions, by the Observance of which you may avoid this too common Sin, and so conclude this Subject.

*First*, Beware of the first rudiments and beginnings of Oaths, if thou wouldst not learn them. And such are a company of idle words frequently used in the mouths of many, which formerly were bloody Oaths, but are now worn to raggs, and disguised into imperfect sounds and nonsense: few that speak them know what they mean; but if they did, certainly they would tremble at such execrable words that hide and dissemble the most horrid Oaths that can be uttered: Some of them being blasphemous, as those that are conceived by the Limbs of God; and others being idolatrous, as those which are conceiv'd by Creatures; as in that ordinary By-word of *Marry*, which is no less than swearing by the Virgin *Mary*. And it is a notable Artifice of the Devil to bring such foolish and masqued words into common use, that both they may swear that use them, although they know it not; and that by using themselves to unknown Oaths, they may be brought in time to take up those that are known.

Again, all vehement Asseverations have in them somewhat of the nature, and are dangerous beginnings of Oaths: And those who do accustom themselves to them, will in time think them not forcible enough to confirm their Speeches, and so be brought to attest them by Oaths: Make nothing therefore the pawn and pledge of a Truth, but speak it out simply and nakedly as it is in itself; and this will sooner conclude belief, than the most strong and binding Asseverations that thou canst invent. This Sin of Swearing is strangely growing and thriving; for by a customary using of Asseverations, we shall insensibly upon every occasion be tripping upon an Oath; and a custom of Swearing will at length bring in Perjury; and a custom of Per-

Perjury, Blasphemy, and make them deny that God by whom they have so often forsworn themselves, and yet go unpunisht. Beware therefore that you allow not your selves any form of Asseveration; but *let your yea, be yea, and your nay, nay*; proceed no further, for Christ hath allowed you no more.

II. *Secondly*, Subdue as much as you can, all inordinate passion and anger: For anger is usually the cause and provocation of Oaths and Blasphemies. Anger is a fire in the heart, and swearing is the smoke of this fire that breaks forth at the mouth: And those who are violently hurried with this passion, do usually find nothing so ready at hand as an Oath; which, if they cannot be revenged on him whom they conceit to have done them the injury, they sling against Heaven itself, and thereby seem to take an impious revenge upon the Almighty God.

III. *Thirdly*, Labour to possess thy heart, and over-awe it with the most serious considerations and apprehensions of the Greatness and Majesty of God. This will be a good Preservative to keep thee from abusing and prophaning his Name in common and rash Swearing: Is he the great and terrible God of Heaven and Earth, and shall I put that Indignity upon him, to call him from his Throne to witness every Vanity and Trifle that I utter? Would I serve any mortal Man so, whom I respect? or would not he account it an Affront and Injury done him? How much more then will the great God be provoked, who is so great and glorious, that it tires the conceptions of Angels to apprehend his Majesty, how much more will he be provoked to have his Name, which he hath commanded to be sacred and reverend, daily rub'd and worn out between those lips that talk so many light, foolish, and impertinent Vanities.

There



There are several other Violations of this third Commandment; as Blasphemy, rash Vows, unnecessary Lots, &c. which being chiefly to be condemned upon the same account as Swearing, and a vain irreverent Invoking the Name of God, I shall not treat of them particularly, but leave the sins and guilt of them to be estimated, together with a due consideration of the several circumstances that attend them.

The great positive Duty required in this Command, is the reverencing and sanctifying the Name of God, whensoever we make mention of him, or of any thing that relates unto him. But because I have in a former Treatise spoken concerning that Subject, I shall therefore wave it at present, and here put an end to the Exposition of this Third Commandment.

*On the second  
Petition of the  
LORD'S  
Prayer.*

The

---

---

## THE FOURTH COMMANDMENT.

**R**emember the Sabbath Day, to keep it holy. Six Days shalt thou labour, and do all thy Work. But the Seventh Day is the Sabbath of the Lord thy God: in it thou shalt not do any Work, Thou, nor thy Son, nor thy Daughter, nor thy Man-Servant, nor thy Maid-Servant, nor thy Stranger that is within thy Gates. For in Six Days the Lord made Heaven and Earth, the Sea, and all that in them is, and rested the Seventh Day: Wherefore the Lord blessed the Sabbath Day, and hallowed it.

**W**E are now arrived, in pursuance of our designed Method; to the Fourth, and Last Commandment of the First Table; and with the Exposition of this, I shall shut up the Consideration of those Duties which do immediately concern the Worship and Service of God.

## An Exposition upon

We have already observed, as a great deal of Wisdom and Excellency in the Matter of each Command, so a great deal of Heavenly Art in the Method and Digestion of them. And upon serious Reflections on both, we may very well conclude, that they are as well the contrivance of the Divine Understanding, as the engraving of his Finger.

The First requires that which is first and principally to be regarded, *viz.* The inward Veneration of the true God, in the dearest Love, and highest Esteem, and choicest Affections of a pious Soul.

The Second enjoins the external Expressions of this Reverence, in the prostration of the Body, and other Acts of visible Worship. For altho God chiefly regards the Heart, and the Frame and Disposition of the Inward Man; yet he neglects not to observe the due Composure of the Body, as a Testimony of the Soul's Sincerity.

And as this requires us to honour the Majesty of God in our Gestures; so the Third requires us to glorify the Holy and Reverend Name of God in all our Speeches and Discourses, never to make mention of it but with that Prepossession of Holy Awe and Dread that might compose us into all possible Gravity and Seriousness.

And because every thing is beautiful in its Season, therefore we have subjoined to all these a particular Command, concerning the time wherein God prescribes all these to be more especially tendred unto him. And this is that Precept which we have now under Consideration; *Remember the Sabbath Day, to keep it Holy, &c.*

In the Words we have a Command, and the Inforcement of it.

The Command is to sanctify the Sabbath.

And this is justly observable, in that whereas all the rest are simply either Positive, or Negative, this is both.

*Remember-*

*Remember to keep it Holy: and, in it thou shalt not do any Work.* As if God took an especial care to fence us in on all Sides to the Observation of this Precept.

The Inforcement also is more particular, and with greater Care and Instance, than we find in any other Command. For God hath here condescended to use three cogent Arguments to press the Observation of this Law upon us.

The First is taken from his own Example, whom, certainly, it is our Glory, as well as our Duty, to imitate in all Things, in which he hath propounded himself to be our Pattern. *The Lord rested the Seventh Day*, and therefore rest ye also.

The Second, From that bountiful and liberal Portion of Time that he hath allowed us for the Affairs and Business of this present Life, *Six Days shalt thou labour, and do all thy Work*; and therefore it is but fit and equitable, that the Seventh should be given to God, who hath so freely given the rest to thee.

The Third, From the Dedication of this Day to his own immediate Worship and Service; *The Lord blessed the Sabbath Day, and hallowed it.* So that it is no less a Sin than Sacriledg, and stealing of that which is Holy, to purloin any part of that time which God hath thus consecrated to himself, and to imploy it about either sinful or secular Actions.

I shall begin with the Command, *Remember the Sabbath Day, to keep it Holy.*

The Word *Sabbath*, signifies Rest, and Cessation from Labour; and it is applied unto several Things.

*First*; It signifies the Temporal Sabbath, or the recurring seventh Day or Year, which we are now treating of. And

## An Exposition upon

because this was the most principal Day of the Week, therefore we find that the whole Week is denominated from it, a Sabbath, *Luke 10. 12. Mat. 28. 1.*

*Secondly*; It signifies a Spiritual Rest, a Rest from the Slavery and Drudgery of Sin, and those fordid Labours which the Devil, our grievous Task-master, exacts of us. And of this Spiritual Sabbath, the Temporal one is a Sign and Type. So *Exod. 31. 13. My Sabbaths ye shall keep: for it is a Sign between me and you, — that ye may know that I am the Lord, that doth sanctify you.*

*Thirdly*; It is used likewise, to signify the eternal Rest of the Blessed in Heaven, where they rest from all their Labours, and from all their Sorrows, in the full Fruition of the ever-blessed God, and of all Blessedness in him. So the Apostle, *Heb. 4. 9. There remaineth a Rest unto the People of God*; the word is *σαββατισμός*, there remaineth a Sabbath, or the Celebration of a Sabbath unto the People of God.

It is only of the first of these, the Temporal Sabbath, that I am now speaking. And here, neither shall I speak of the Sabbath of Years, when the Land was every seventh Year to rest from the Labour of Tillage and Husbandry, as we find it *Levit. 25. 4. The seventh Year shall be a Sabbath of Rest unto the Land*: Nor yet of the greater Sabbath of the Jubilee, observed every fiftieth Year, at the Period of seven Sabbatical Years, wherein all Possessions and Inheritances which had been sold, or mortgaged, were again to return to the first Owners; which Sabbath you have described *Levit. 25. 8, &c.* But I shall only treat of the Sabbath of Days, which this Commandment doth principally respect. And the General Heads upon which I shall proceed, are these four.

I. Its Primitive Institution.

II. Its Morality and perpetual Obligation.

III. Its Change from the last to the first Day of the Week.

IV. The

## IV. The manner how God hath required it to be sanctified by us.

Concerning the first. When the Sabbath was instituted, there is some difference between Learned Men: Some put a like Date upon it, and refer its beginning to the Promulgation of the Law, or at farthest, to the sending of Manna to the *Israelites*. And they ground their Assertion upon this, That before that time we read not in all the History of the Patriarchs, and first Ages of the World, of any Sabbath that was observed and sanctified by the holy Fathers who then lived; which doubtless they would not have neglected, had any such Command been given them.

Others, who I believe concur with the Truth, fetch its Original as high as the Creation of the World, grounding their Opinion upon that unanswerable Testimony, *Gen. 2. 2, 3. On the seventh day God ended his Work which he had made; and God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it.* Now that there cannot in these words be understood any *Prolepsis*, or Anticipation, declaring that as done then, which was done many Ages after, appears plainly, because God is said to sanctify the Sabbath then when he rested: but he rested precisely on the seventh Day after the Creation; that very seventh Day did God sanctify, and made the beginning of all ensuing Sabbaths. So that you see it is but one day younger than Man, ordained in the State of his Uprightness and Innocence, that day being then holy and excellent, he might improve, especially on that Day, in the singular and most worship of God his Creator.

And so we find no more mention of the Sabbath, till he had conducted the Children of *Israel* into the Wilderness, which was about two thousand four hundred Years after the Creation; yet it is not to be thought that among the People of God, who were very careful

## An Exposition upon

careful as in observing the Law of God themselves, so in delivering it likewise to their Posterity, that the Observation of this Law, or of this Day utterly failed, but was continued among those that feared God, till it was again invigorated with new Authority by the Promulgation of it from Mount *Sinai*. And thus much for the Institution.

*Secondly*; Concerning the Morality of the Sabbath, is a greater Controversy, and of far greater moment. Some loose Spirits contend that it is wholly Ceremonial, and so utterly abolish'd at the coming of Christ, and will not be under the Restriction of their Liberty in observing any Days or Times. Others again make it wholly Moral, and affirm, that the Observation of the very seventh Day from the Creation, is a Law of Nature, and of perpetual Obligation; and therefore think themselves bound to keep the Jewish Sabbath.

That I may clearly state this obscure and difficult Question, I shall only premise, \* That those things are said to be Moral and of the Law of Nature, which are in themselves rational and fit to be done, altho there were no express Command to injoin them. So that where there is a great Equity in the thing it self, enough to sway a rational and honest Man to the doing of it, that is, to be accounted Moral, and authorized by the Law of Nature. That is of positive Right which is observed only because it is commanded, and hath no intrinsical Goodness, or Reason in it self to commend it to our Practice, but obligeth us only upon the Injunction and Authority of another. As for Instance; It is naturally good to obey our Parents, to abstain from Murder, Theft, Adultery, &c. to do to others as we would be content to be dealt with. These things we are obliged unto by the very Light of Reason, and the Principles of Nature, altho there had been no written Law of God to impose them. But then there were other things to which God ob-

\* Ratio profecta à rerum naturâ, & ad rectè faciendum impellens, & à delicto avocans, non hinc denique incipit Lex esse cum scripta est, sed tum cum orta. Orta autem simul est cum mente divinâ. Cic. de Legib. lib. 2.

liged

liged some of his People, that had nothing to commend them besides the Authority of his Command: And such were the various Ceremonies under the Law, yea, and in Innocence it self, that Prohibition given to *Adam* not to eat of the Tree of the Knowledg of Good and Evil. The former sort are moral and natural Commands, the latter positive and instituted. The former are commanded, because good; the latter are good, because commanded.

Now here first; Certain it is, that a convenient portion of our time is due unto the Service and Worship of God by natural and moral Right. For certainly 'tis but fit and just that he should have a large share of our Life and Time, who hath given us Life and Time here upon Earth, and hath created us to this very end, that we might serve and glorify him. Yea, had it been propounded to our selves how much we would have allowed for God? could we, without shame and blushing, have set apart less Time for his Service from whom we have all, than himself hath done? This I think is by all agreed to.

*Secondly*; The Law of Nature doth not dictate to us any particular stated Days to be set apart for the Worship of God, one more than another. For indeed there can be no natural reason why this Day more than that; why every seventh Day, rather than every sixth, or fifth, or fourth. For all Days being in their own nature alike, Reason can find no advantage to prefer one of them before another. But that which is obligatory by the Law of Nature, ought to be plain and evident to all Men, or else evidently deducible from some natural Principles. Now if we lay aside the positive Command of God, there is no one day in it self better than other: And therefore there is a *Memento* prefixt to the Command, (*Remember that thou keep holy the Sabbath Day*) which is not added to any other Precept; intimating to us, that the Observation of a special Day is not a Dictate of Nature, but only an Imposition of God,



## An Exposition upon

God, which he requires us to remember and bear in Mind.

*Thirdly*; That the Seventh Day should be especially consecrated to the Service and Worship of God, is from his Positive Will and Command; and therefore is as binding and forcible, as if it were a Law of Nature ingraven on our Hearts; unless the same Authority alter it, that did first injoin it. For this being a Positive Law, is therefore good and necessary, because commanded. And if it had not been revealed to us, we should never have been obliged to this Observation, nor made obnoxious to Punishment for failing in it. Yet again,

*Fourthly*; This Declaration of the Will of God concerning the Sanctification of the Sabbath, is attended with a Moral Reason; and therefore is not meerly and barely Positive, as Ceremonial Laws are. Which Reason is, that God rested on the Seventh Day, and therefore we ought so to do. Now although this Reason carries not such a natural Evidence in it as to have obliged us, unless it had been revealed, yet being revealed, we may discern a certain Aptitude and Fitness in it to oblige us to the Observation of the Seventh Day rather than any other, since Piety and Religion require that we should imitate God in those things wherein he would have us to imitate him. So that I account this Command to be Moral-Positive. Moral, in that it requires a due portion of our Time to be dedicated to the Service and Worship of God; Positive, in that it prescribes the Seventh Day for that especial Service, which the Light and Law of Nature did not prefix: and mixt of both, in that it gives a reason of this Prescription, which hath somewhat of natural Equity in it, but yet such as could not have been discovered without Special and Divine Revelation.

Now because the Observation of a Sabbath hath thus much of Morality, and of the Law of Nature in it, it is most certain that we are bound to keep a Sabbath, as much

as

as the Jews were; altho not to the Circumstance of the Duty. For,

*First*, This Command was obligatory even in Paradise it self in the state of Innocency, and therefore contains nothing in it unworthy the state of a Christian. It is no Ceremonial Command, nor to be reckoned amongst those things which were typical, and prefigured Christ to come in the Flesh; and therefore neither was it abolish'd at his coming, but still there lies a strict and indispenfible Obligation upon us to observe a Sabbath Holy unto the Lord.

*Secondly*, The Reasons of this Command are all of them Moral and Perpetual, and therefore such is the Obligation of it to us Christians. The Equity is the same to us, that it was to them, *viz.* That we should allow one Day in seven to the Worship of that God, who so liberally allows us six for our ordinary Affairs. The Ease and Refreshment of our Bodies from the Labours of our Callings, is as necessary as then it was. And we are still as much obliged with Thankfulness to remember and meditate upon the great Mercy of our Creation, as they were: and therefore if these were sufficient Reasons, why the Jews should observe a particular Sabbath, they are still as forcible and cogent with us. Again,

*Thirdly*, Our Saviour foretelling the Destruction of *Jerusalem*, bids his Disciples *pray that their Flight might not be in the Winter, nor on the Sabbath Day.* And yet the Destruction of that City happened about forty Years after the Death of Christ: And therefore certainly those who were his Disciples, lay under an Obligation of observing a Sabbath-Day; because our Saviour intimates, that it would prove an heavy Addition to their Affliction, if they should be forced to take their Flight on the Sabbath, when they ought and desired to be employed in the Spiritual Exercise of Devotion and Holy Duties proper to that Day.

Matth. 24.  
20.

But although the sanctifying of a Sabbath be thus Obligatory to Christians, yet it is not the same Sabbath Day, to

C c

the

## An Exposition upon

the Observation of which the Jews and the People of God, before Christ's coming into the World, were bound. But it is with good Ground, and upon good Authority, changed from the last to the first Day of the Week, from Saturday to Sunday; called now the Lord's Day, because it was that Day of the Week on which our Lord and Saviour rose from the Dead; in Memory of which, and in a Thankful Acknowledgment of the great Mercy of our Redemption, fully compleated by his Resurrection, the Sabbath hath been translated to this Day, and is now rightly celebrated on this Day by all the Churches of Christ throughout the World.

And this Change of the Sabbath is the third Head which I promised to speak of.

Now as the first Institution of the Sabbath was by Divine Authority; so likewise is the Change of it. For as God rested from his Labour on the last Day of the Week; so Christ rested from all his Labour, Sorrows, and Afflictions on this Day, in which he fully compleated the Work of our Redemption, and manifested it to be perfected by his Resurrection from the Dead. Therefore, as the Jewish Sabbath was sanctified, because of the finishing of the Work of Creation; so was the Christian Sabbath, because of the finishing of the Work of Redemption; which is of far greater Importance, and therefore deserves more to be celebrated than the other. Christ sanctified this Day by his Resurrection; and the Apostles confirmed the Observation of it, both by their Writings, and uniform Practice; and it hath such an inviolable Stamp of Divinity upon it, that now it is no more alterable to the end of the World.

Nor is it needful that an express Command of Christ should be brought for this Change out of the New Testament; it is sufficient if by necessary Consequence it may be deduced from Scripture. And yet,

*First*, We have express Places of the Scripture thus far, that the First Day of the Week is mentioned as the stated Time

## the Fourth Commandment.

215

Time for Christians to meet together, to preach, to hear, and to break Bread in the Holy Sacrament of the Lord's-Supper, and to perform other Duties of Religion. So *Acts 20.7. Upon the first Day of the Week, when the Disciples came together to break Bread, Paul preached unto them.* Which plainly declares that the solemn Meetings and Assemblies of Christians were then on this Day; the Jewish Sabbath beginning to wear out, and the Christian Sabbath, or the Lord's-Day, coming into its place and stead.

Again; The publick Collections for the poorer Saints, were ordain'd by the Apostle to be made on this day: *Now concerning the Collection for the Saints: upon the first Day of the Week, let every one of you lay by him in store, as God hath prospered him.* And this very Rule and Custom the Apostle saith he had before establish'd in the Church of the *Galatians*. And why should this Day be chosen for their Collections, but only because the Assemblies of Christians were held on this Day, and so gave a better Conveniency to gather their Charity than at any other time? 1 Cor. 16. 1, 2.

Again; *St. John* saith of himself, *that he was in the Spirit on the Lord's-Day*; which is no other but this our Christian Sabbath, that hath received this Title and Denomination from our Lord Christ. For what some say, that the Lord's-Day means no more than the Day of the Lord's appearing to him, and revealing those many mysterious Visions, is vain and dilate, and scarce agreeable to the Sense and Gravity of Scripture-Expression. It signifies therefore this Day, wherein the Apostle being in all likelihood taken up with Spiritual Meditations, God was pleased to gratify him with the Revelation of these great Things, which were afterwards to take their Effect and Accomplishment. Rev. 1. 10.

Now put the force of these Scriptures together, and they will certainly amount to the full proof of the Institution of this First-Day Sabbath. It is called the Lord's-Day; it was appointed and used for the Assemblies of the Saints, for the

## An Exposition upon

preaching and hearing of the Word, and Administration of the Sacrament, for the Collection of Alms for the Relief of the Poor ; and this not in one Church only, but in other Churches of the Saints ; and that likewise not at some more solemn times only, but weekly. Put these together, and what more plain and evident Proof can a thing of this nature admit of ?

*Secondly* ; A second Argument to prove this Change, shall be that which with all sober Men may be sufficiently valid, which is the constant and uninterrupted Practice of the Church in all Ages, from the time of Man's Redemption by the Death and Resurrection of Christ, to this very present Day. Christ himself began the Sanctification of it by his Resurrection, on the same Day he appeared to his Disciples, and he himself informs them of his Resurrection, *John* 20. 19. I have already declared unto you the Practice of the Apostles ; and for the Practice of the Primitive Church immediately after the Apostles, all Ecclesiastical Histories do with one consent, testify that the solemn Assemblies of Christians were held on this Day. Which unvaried Custom and Observation of the Church of Christ ought to be of great weight with all solid and serious Christians ; and if we add to this likewise the unanimous Consent of the most holy and spiritual Men, who are generally found to be the most strict Observers of the Lord's-Day ; and lastly, the great Blessing, that God hath poured out upon his People in the plentiful Effusion of his Grace and Spirit on them in his holy Ordinances celebrated on this Day, it will be past all question and debate, that this is the Day that the Lord hath made for himself, and therefore let us be glad and rejoice therein.

We have thus considered the Institution, Morality, and Change of the Sabbath. All which are the more abstruse and intricate, partly from the Silence of the Scriptures, which leave us to collect the Truth, by Inferences and Deductions ; and

## the Fourth Commandment.

217

and partly from the different Opinions of Learned Men, whose Queries and Disputes about these Points are so various and endless; that, as *Maldonate* said of *Luke 2.34.* *The place had been much easier understood, if no Man had attempted to expound it;* so I may say of the Questions in hand, It had been much easier to determine them, if no Man had debated them. I have endeavoured to make them as plain and perspicuous as the nature of the Subject would permit, laying aside all contentious Arguments and needless Cavils, both of one side and the other.

The fourth General propounded, remains now to be considered; which as it is of greater Concernment than the rest, so it is of equal Difficulty; and that is concerning the Sanctification of the Sabbath. In treating of which I shall observe the same Method, and satisfy my self in laying down positively what Scripture and Reason dictate, without ingaging in those tedious Disputes about it, which might make this Discourse both unpleasing and unprofitable.

This Commandment therefore speaks of a twofold Sanctification of this Day. The one which it hath already received from God; the other which it ought to receive from Man. And the former is given as a Reason of, and Motive unto the latter.

*First*, God hath sanctified the Sabbath-day, so we have it, *ver. 11.* *The Lord blessed the seventh Day, and hallowed it.* Where these two words *blessed* and *hallowed*, are only exegetical one of the other, and carry in them the same sense common to both.

Now God blessed and hallowed the Sabbath-day, not by infusing any inherent Quality of Holiness into it (for neither Days, nor Places, nor any inanimate things are Subjects capable of real Holiness.)

But

## An Exposition upon

But first, God blessed and and hallowed it by separating that Day from others, bestowing an higher Dignity and Priviledg upon it, as the Day whereon both himself chose to rest from the Works of Creation, and the Day whereon he requires that we also should rest from the Works of our ordinary Vocations. For to hallow and sanctify, is to set any thing apart from profane and common, unto sacred and spiritual Uses. God therefore sanctified the Sabbath, when he selected it out of the course of other Days, and set it apart from the common Employments and Services of Life, ordaining that the Spiritual Concernments of his Glory, and our Salvation should be therein especially transacted. And this is that Blessing which God hath conferred upon this Day; for what other Benefit is a Day capable of, but only that when the other six Days, like the unregarded Vulgar of the Year, were to be employed in the low and fordid Drudgery of Earthly Affairs; this seventh Day God hath raised from the Dunghil, and set upon the Throne, appointing it according to *Ignatius* his Phrase, *πρω βασιλεα*, *πρω υπατον* *της ημερας*, the Prince and Sovereign of Days, exempting it from all servile Works, and designing it for such Spiritual and Celestial Employments, that were it observed according to God's Command, Eternity it self would not have much advantage above it, but only that it is longer: So that in the Ring and Circle of the Week, the Sabbath is the Jewel, the most excellent and precious of Days.

Epist. ad  
Magnesios.

*Secondly*; God hath blessed and sanctified it, not only in this relative, but also in an effective sense, *viz.* as he hath appointed it to be the Day whereon he doth especially bless and sanctify us; yea and possibly he makes the Means of our Sanctification to be more effectual on this Day, than when they are dispensed on any other common Days. God doth then especially give out plentiful Effusions of his Spirit, fills his Ordinances with his Grace and Presence; and we

we may with a more confident Faith expect a greater portion of Spiritual Blessings from him, when both the Ordinances and the Day too are his, than when tho the Ordinances be his, yet the Day is ours. In this sense God may be said to bless and sanctify the Sabbath-day, because he bleseth and sanctifies us on that Day. As the Psalmist most elegantly, and in an high strain of Poetry, saith, That God crowneth the Year with his Goodness, *Psal. 65. 11.* Not that the Plenty and Fruitfulness of the Year is any Blessing unto it, but it is a Blessing unto Men, whose Hearts God then filleth with Food and Gladness. In both these senses may God be said to bless and sanctify the Sabbath.

*Secondly*; As God sanctified the Sabbath, so Man is commanded to sanctify it also; ver. 8. *Remember the Sabbath-day to keep it holy.* Now we sanctify and hallow a Day, when we observe it holy to the Lord, sequestering our selves from common Affairs to those spiritual Exercises which he hath required us to be conversant about on that Day. God sanctifies it by Consecration, we sanctify it by Devotion. He hath set it apart for his Worship, and on it we ought to set our selves apart for his Worship, and to be taken up only with those things which he hath either allowed or prescribed us; And therefore God doth lay an especial Claim to this Day. For altho he be the supream Lord of all, and doth dispense, and as it were draw out the Thred of Time, and Days, and Years for us, out of the infinite Bottom of his Eternity; yet he doth not so particularly challenge any part of it to himself, as he doth this seventh Day: Whence it is said, *ver. 10. The seventh Day is the Sabbath of the Lord thy God.* The six foregoing Days of the Week are thine, and thou mayst dispose of them in the honest Works of thy Calling, as Prudence and Convenience shall direct; but this Day God challengeth to himself, as his peculiar portion of our time, because he hath ordained it for his Worship and Service, and therefore it is called his. And when we devote  
our



## An Exposition upon

our selves to his Service and Worship, meditating on his Excellency, magnifying and praising his Mercy, and invoking his holy Name, we then hallow this Day, and give unto God that which is God's.

And thus you see what it is to sanctify the Sabbath, both as God hath done it by Dedication, and as Man ought to do it by Observation. But the great Difficulties in what manner the Sabbath ought to be sanctified and kept holy, whether or no we are bound to the same strict and vigorous Observation of our Christian Sabbath, as the Jews were of theirs under the Oeconomy of *Moses*?

To this I answer in the general; That as our Sabbath is not the very same with theirs, but only the same analogically, bearing a fit proportion to it; so likewise our Sanctification of the Lord's-day (for thus I had rather call it than the Sabbath) is not in all particulars the same that was required from the Jews, but bears a proportion to it in those things which are not Ceremonial nor burdensome to our Christian Liberty.

But more particularly, The sanctifying of this Day consists partly in abstaining from those things whereby it would be profaned; and partly in the performance of those things which are required of us, and tend to promote the Sanctity and Holiness of it.

Here, first, I shall lay down this; That in order to our due sanctifying of the Sabbath, we ought to abstain from the common and servile Works of our ordinary Callings and Vocations. So we have it expressly, *ver. 10. In it thou shalt not do any Work*. And this God prohibits, not that Rest and Cessation is in it self acceptable unto him, or any part of his Worship and Service; but only because Earthly Employments are an Impediment and Distraction to that heavenly frame of Spirit which we ought to maintain in all the Parts, and Duties of this Day. The Works of our Callings are not evil in themselves, but lawful and good; and

and such wherein on other Days we serve God, and whereon we may expect a Blessing from him. But yet our Mind is so narrow and stinted, that we cannot at once attend them, and the Service of God with that Zeal and Fervour that he requires; and therefore that we may be wholly employed in his Work, he hath taken us off from our own.

Now this Prohibition of working on the Sabbath, is strongly enforced by the Concession of six Days for our ordinary Labour. A Concession I call it, considering the Indulgence granted unto us; but yet it is not merely a Concession, but a Command too; *Six Days shalt thou labour, and do all thy Work; but the seventh Day is the Sabbath of the Lord.* That exceptive Particle *But*, intimates unto us, that none of that Work which is lawful to be done on ordinary Days, ought to be performed by us on the Sabbath.

I know it is a Question, Whether these words, *Six Days shalt thou labour*, be a Precept, or a Permission only? To me they seem preceptive, requiring us diligently to attend that Vocation and State of Life in which the Divine Providence hath set us; and to perform the Offices of it with Care and Conscience: For it is said, *thou shalt labour*, not only *thou mayst labour*. And those who contend that they merely signify a Permission of the daily Works of our Callings, open too wide a Gap for Sloth and Idleness to creep in, without violating any Commandment, or being censured and condemned for Sin.

But I shall not trouble you with the Disputes about this: Only let me take notice of the weakness and inconsequence of one Inference that is commonly drawn from it; and that is, If it be a Divine Precept, that we ought six Days to labour, then can we not by any Constitution whatsoever be taken off from the lawful Works of our Callings, nor obliged to keep any other Days holy and solemn besides the Sabbath; for God's Laws do not contradict themselves; and

D d

where-

## An Exposition upon

whereinsoever Humane Laws contradict the Divine, they are of no force nor validity.

But this Argument fails in its Deduction: For the Command, *Six Days shalt thou labour*, is not to be understood absolutely and unlimitedly, but with a just Restraint and Exception; that is, Thou shalt labour six Days ordinarily, unless any of them be set apart either by thine own private Devotion, or by publick Authority, for the immediate Worship and Service of God. And that this is of necessity to be so understood, appears, if we consider how many Days in the Week God himself did dedicate in those Feasts which he commanded the Jews strictly to observe, notwithstanding that they were enjoined six Days Labour. Besides every New Moon; the Passover, in remembrance of their Deliverance from the Bondage of *Egypt*, and as a clear Type of Christ, who, as a Lamb without spot, was offered up to God for us. Then Pentecost, or the Feast of Weeks, fifty days after the Passover, a Memorial that the Law was given to them from Mount *Sinai* fifty days after their departure out of *Egypt*; typifying likewise the sending of the Holy Ghost to inspire the Apostles with Heavenly Truth, and to enable them to preach the Gospel, which is the Law of Jesus Christ, which was accordingly fulfilled fifty days after Christ, our great Passover, was sacrificed for us. Then, thirdly, The Feast of Atonement or Expiation, which was celebrated on the tenth Day of the seventh Month, whereon the High-Priest was solemnly to confess unto God both his own Sins, and the Sins of the People, and to make Atonement for them; typifying thereby the full Expiation and Atonement of our Sins made by our High-Priest Jesus Christ. And lastly, There was ordained likewise the Feast of Tabernacles, on the fifteenth day of the same Month, and this was to last not only one Day, but a whole Week together, and was instituted to be a Memorial to them of their Journey through the Wilderness, wherein  
for

## the Fourth Commandment.

223

for forty Years they lived in Tents and Tabernacles. All these Feasts we find appointed by God himself, and imposed upon the *Israelites*, Levit. 23.

And not only did they account themselves obliged to keep these Days holy, which were enjoined by the Divine Command, but those also which were appointed by Humane Authority; and such were the Feast of *Parim*, to be kept two days following, in remembrance of their Deliverance from the malicious and bloody Designs of *Hamon*, *Esth.* 9. 21. And the Feast of the Dedication of the Temple, first observed at the rebuilding of their Temple after their return from the Babylonish Captivity; as you may read *Exra* 6. 16. and from that time perpetuated unto the Days of our Saviour Christ, who, tho' it were but of Humane and Ecclesiastical Institution, yet was pleased to honour that Solemnity with his Presence, *John* 10. 22. Besides, we frequently read of Fasts, both personal and national, appointed upon some emergent Occasions, to appease and divert the Wrath of God, as the Fast of the fifth and the seventh Month, for seventy Years together, *Zech.* 7. 5. And the like to these without doubt, either our own private Devotion, or the publick Authority of the Nation, may in the like Circumstances impose on us without violating this Command of six Days Labour.

But now, altho' this six Days Labour was not so strictly required, as not sometimes to admit the intervention of an holy Rest; yet the seventh Day's Rest was so exactly to be observed, as not to admit any bodily Labour, or secular Imployment. God would not have this holy Rest disturbed by the tumultuous Affairs and Businessses of Life; and we find this Command strictly enforced by the double Sanction both of a Promise and Threatning, *Jer.* 17. from ver. 24 to the end. *If ye diligently hearken unto me, saith the Lord, to bring in no burthen through the Gates of the City on the Sabbath-Day, but hallow the Sabbath-Day, to do no Work there-*

## An Exposition upon

*in : Then shall there enter into this City, Kings and Princes sitting upon the Throne of David, — and the City shall remain for ever. But if ye will not hearken unto me to hallow the Sabbath-Day; then will I kindle a Fire in the Gates thereof, and it shall devour the Palaces of Jerusalem, and it shall not be quenched.* Yea God was so accurate about this, that he descends to a particular Prohibition of several sorts of Works which he would not have to be done on the Sabbath-Day; on that Day the *Israelites* were not to gather Manna, *Exod.* 16. 27. nor to gather in their Harvest, *Exod.* 24. 21. nor to buy or sell, *Nehem.* 10. 31. nor to tread the Wine-Press, *Neh.* 13. 15. nor so much as to gather Sticks, *Numb.* 15. 32. nor to go from their places of Abode to provide themselves Food, *Exod.* 16. 29. yea so strictly were they tied to the Observation of this Sabbath, that they might not so much as kindle a Fire, *Exod.* 35. 3. *Ye shall kindle no Fire throughout your Habitations on the Sabbath-Day.* Unto all which Prohibitions from God, the Jews added many superstitious and ridiculous ones of their own, not grave enough to be here mentioned; whereby they made that Burthen which was before heavy, to be altogether insupportable by their foolish and vain Traditions.

Now the great Question is, How far these Prohibitions do concern us, and whether we are obliged to the punctual observance of them as the Jews were?

To this I answer in the Negative, that we are not: For we are bound to nothing by the Law of *Moses*, but only what was of Moral and Natural Right in that Law; and as for other Ordinances which were positive, we are set free from them, by that Liberty which Jesus Christ hath purchased for, and conferred upon his Church. We do not celebrate the Lord's-Day it self upon any Obligation laid upon us by the Letter of this fourth Commandment, (for that expressly enjoyns the seventh Day from the Creation, whereas ours is the eighth) but only from the Analogy and  
Propor-

Proportion of Moral Reason; which requires that a due and convenient Portion of our Time should be separated to the Service and Worship of God. But for the fixing of the very Day, why it should be this rather than any other, we acknowledg it to proceed from the Consecration of it by our Saviour's Resurrection, the Institution of the Apostles, and the consequent Practice of the Universal Church of Christ in all Ages, as I have already declared. And therefore should we as scrupulously and nicely observe it in all Circumstances, as the Jews did their Sabbath; possibly it would not be a Sanctification of the Sabbath, but a fond and groundless Superstition.

The Lord's Day is therefore to be observed, as only in things that are in themselves Moral and Rational: Nor will this give any Scope to the Libertinism of those who would willingly indulge themselves, either in Worldly Affairs, or loose Recreations on this Day. For it is Moral and Rational that the whole of that Day, which is set apart for the Worship of God, should be employed in his Worship. This likewise is Moral, and of Spiritual Obligation, that we do not our own Pleasure, nor speak our own Words on his Holy Day, as the Prophet expresseth it, *Isa. 58. 13*. This obligeth us Christians, as well as the Jews. For if a Day be dedicated unto God, certainly every part and parcel of it belongs unto him; and we ought to rest from all our Worldly Employments, that might steal away our Thoughts and Affections from God, or indispose us to his Spiritual Worship and Service.

But yet this extends not to these small Punctualities of gathering Sticks, kindling a Fire, and preparing Food for our selves; for these things doubtless may be done, without being any Moral Impediments to our Piety and Devotion on this Day: Yea they may be Moral Helps and Furtherances unto it.

For

## An Exposition upon

For notwithstanding this Rest and Cessation from Labour, that is required from us on the Lord's Day, yet there are three sorts of Works that may, and ought to be performed on it, how great soever our Bodily Labour may be in doing them. And they are,

Works of Piety.

Works of Necessity. And,

Works of Charity.

*First*; Works of Piety are to be performed on the Lord's Day; yea on this Day especially, as being the proper Works of the Day: And such are not only those which consist in the internal Operations of the Soul, as Heavenly Meditations, and Spiritual Affections; but such also as consist in the external Actions of the Body, as Oral Prayer, reading of the Scriptures, and preaching of the Word; yea on this Day are Ministers chiefly employed in their Bodily Labour, and spending of their Spirits, yet it is far from being a Profanation of the Lord's Day; for Holy Works are most proper for Holy Days. And not only are such Works to be performed on the Lord's Day, but they were enjoined also on the Jewish Sabbath. And therefore saith our Saviour, *Matth. 12. 5. Have ye not read in the Law, how that on the Sabbath Days the Priests in the Temple profane the Sabbath, and yet be blameless?* This Word therefore of profaning the Sabbath, is not to be understood of a formal Profanation, as if they did that which was unlawful to be done on that Day, but only of a Material Profanation; that is, they laboured hard in killing and slaying, and dividing and boiling, and burning the Sacrifices in the Temple: which, had they not been instituted parts of God's Worship, had been Profanations of the Sabbath; but being commanded by God, were so far from being Profanations, that they were Sanctifications of that Day. And upon this account likewise were Sabbath

bath Days Journeys permitted to the Jews, which tho they were not Actions of Piety in themselves, yet were they Actions tending towards Piety, that those who were remote from the Places of Worship, might assemble themselves together to hear the Scriptures read and expounded to them. This appears 2 *Kings* 4. 23. where the Husband of the *Shunammite* Woman expostulates with her, *Wherefore wilt thou go to the Prophet to Day? it is neither new Moon nor Sabbath.* Whence it may be clearly collected, that they were permitted to travel a certain Space, to attend upon the Worship and Service of God. And this Sabbath-Day's Journey some limit to a Mile, others two, the distance of the utmost part of the Camp of *Israel* from the Tabernacle of the Congregation. But with very good reason, it may be thought that the Sabbath-Day's Journey, was any distance from the place of their abode to the next Synagogue, which commonly not being above a Mile, or two, that distance was vulgarly called a Sabbath-Day's Journey. So that it appears, that Works of Piety, or Works immediately tending to Piety, may lawfully be performed with the strictest Observation of the Lord's Day.

*Secondly*; Not only Works of Piety, but Works of Necessity, and of great Convenience, may also be done on the Lord's Day. And they are such without which we cannot subsist, or not well subsist: and therefore we may quench a raging Fire, prevent any great and notable Damage that would happen either to our Persons or Estates; fight for our own Defence, or the Defence of our Countrey, without being guilty of the Violation of this Day. Concerning the last of which, Histories inform us, that the Jews were so scrupulous, as to suffer themselves to be assaulted and slain by their Enemies, rather than they would on this Day lift up a Weapon to repel them, till *Matthias* persuaded them out of this Foppish Superstition, 1 *Maccab.* 2. 40.

And



## An Exposition upon

And not only these Works which are of absolute Necessity, but these likewise which are of great Conveniency, may lawfully be done on the Lord's Day. Such as are kindling of Fire, preparing of Meat, and many other Particulars too numerous to be mentioned: We find our Saviour defending his Disciples against the Exceptions of the *Pharisees*, for plucking the Ears of Corn, rubbing them in their Hands, and eating them on the Sabbath-Day, *Matth. 12: 1, &c.* Only let us take this Caution, that we neglect not the doing of these things till the Lord's Day, which might be well done before, and then plead Necessity or Convenience for it. For if the Necessity or Convenience were such as might have been foreseen, our Christian Prudence and Piety ought to have provided for it before this Holy Day; so that we might wholly intend the immediate Service of God in it, with as few Avocations and Impediments as are possible.

*Thirdly*; Another sort of Works that may and ought to be done on the Lord's Day, are the Works of Charity and Mercy. For indeed this Day is instituted for a Memorial of God's great Mercy towards us; and therefore in it we are obliged to shew Charity and Mercy: Charity towards Men, and Mercy to the very Beasts themselves. And therefore, altho the Observation of the Sabbath was so strictly enjoined the Jews, yet was it to give place to the Works of Mercy, whensoever a poor Beast did but stand in need of it. So *Matth. 12. 11. What Man shall there be among you, that shall have one Sheep, and if it fall into a Pit on the Sabbath Day, will not lay hold on it, and lift it out?* And so again, *Luke 13. 15. Doth not every one of you on the Sabbath loose his Ox or his Ass from the Stall, and lead him away to watering?* Yea, and this the very Heathens observed on their Festivals; when other Works were forbidden, yet Works of Mercy were expressly allowed, and by Name the helping of an Ox out of a Pit. Works of Mercy therefore are to be done even

*Macrobi.*  
*Saturn.*  
*lib. 1. cap.*  
*16.*

even to Beasts themselves, whatsoever Labour may be required to the doing of them? And how much more then, Works of Charity to Men like our selves? Which Charity is to be shewn either to their Souls, or their Bodies; for both many times are extremely miserable. To their Souls, in instructing, advising, exhorting, reproving, comforting and counselling of them, praying for them; and if in any thing they have offended us, freely forgiving them. This indeed is a Work of Charity proper for the Lord's Day, a Work highly acceptable unto God, and the best way that can be to sanctify it.

Neither are we to forbear any Work of Charity to their Bodies, and outward Man. And therefore we find how severely our Saviour rebukes the Superstitious Hypocrisy of the *Pharisees*, who murmured against him as a Sabbath-breaker, because he had healed some of their Infirmities on the Sabbath-Day, Luke 13. 14, 15, 16. *The Ruler of the Synagogue said to all the People with Indignation, because Jesus had healed on the Sabbath Day, There are Six Days in which Men ought to work; in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the Sabbath-Day.* See how our Lord takes him up, *Thou Hypocrite, dost not cure any one of you on the Sabbath least his Ox? &c.* And ought not this Woman, who is a Daughter of Abraham, to be loosed from this Bond on the Sabbath Day? And so again, *Matth. 12. 10.* Christ healeth a Man that had a withered Hand, and justifieth this Work of Charity to this Man, by their Works of Mercy to their Beasts; and asserts, ver. 12. *It is lawful to do well on the Sabbath-Days.* Yea, he appeals to their very Consciences in this, whether a Benefit done to a poor helpless Creature, could be counted a Breach and Violation of the Sabbath, Mark 3. 4. *Is it lawful to do good on the Sabbath-Days, or to do evil? to save Life, or to kill?* Certainly it is a right Sabbath-Day's Work to do good, and to put our selves to any Work and Labour that may tend to the saving of Life, or easing of Pain, or healing the

## An Exposition upon

Diseases and Sicknes of our Brother. And our Saviour hath told us, Mark 2. 27. *That the Sabbath was made for Man, not Man for the Sabbath.* The strict and punctual Observation of the Sabbath, is, to give place whensoever the Exigence or Good of our Neighbour doth require it; for God prefers Mercy before Sacrifice.

Thus you see what Rest is required from us on the Lord's Day, and what Works may be done on it without any Violation of the Law, or Profanation of the Day: And this is the first Thing in order to our sanctifying the Sabbath, *viz.* That we ought to rest from the common and servile Works of our ordinary Callings and Vocations.

*Secondly*; The Sanctification of the Sabbath doth especially consist in a diligent and conscientious Attendance upon all the Ordinances of God, and the Duties of his Worship, appointed to be performed on this Day: And that whether in Publick, or in Private, or in Secret.

*First*; Consider what Duties you are to be engaged in, in the Publick and Solemn Worship of God on this Day; for in them a great and principal part of the Sanctification of it doth consist. This I mention in the first place as most preferable. For certainly, as long as through the Mercy of God, we have the Publick and Free Dispensation of the Gospel, we ought not to slight, nor turn our Backs upon this visible Communion of the Church, but to honour and own the Freedom of the Gospel, by our constant Attendance on the Dispensations of it; lest, despising the Mercy of God in giving them to us so publickly, we provoke him, at length, most justly to necessitate us to these Retirements, which now so very many, out of Sloth or Faction, do so much affect. I pray God, that this prove not the sad and direful Consequence of that Contempt, that is cast upon the Publick,

lick, by some Persons, whose only Study and Business it is to divide Christ, and make Rents and Schisms in his Body the Church.

Now the Publick Duties, which are necessary to the right Sanctifying of the Lord's Day, are these.

*First*; Affectionate Prayer, in joining with the Minister, who is our Mouth unto God, as well as God's Mouth unto us: For as he is intrusted to deliver his Sovereign Will and Commands, so likewise to present our Requests unto the Throne of his Grace. We ought heedfully to attend to every Petition, to dart it up to Heaven with our most earnest Desires; and to close and seal it up with our affectionate *Amen*, So be it. For tho it be the Minister alone that speaks, yet it is not the Minister alone that prays, but the whole Congregation by him, and with him; and whatsoever Petition is not accompanied with thy most Sincere and Cordial Affections, it is as much mocking of God, as if thine own Mouth had uttered it without the Concurrence of thy Heart, which is most gross Hypocrisy. Consider what Promises are made to particular Christians when they pray singly, and by themselves, *Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my Name, he will grant it you*, John 15. 16. and 16.23. What great prevalency then must the united Prayers of the Saints have, when they join Interests, and put all the Favour that each of them hath at the Throne of Grace, into one Common Stock? When we come to the Publick Prayers, we are not to come as Auditors, but as Actors; we have our part in them; and every Petition that is spread before God, ought to be breathed from our very Hearts and Souls: Which if we affectionately perform, we may have good Assurance, that what is ratified by so many Votes and Suffrages here on Earth, shall likewise be confirmed in Heaven. For our Saviour hath told us, Matth. 18. 19. *That if two shall agree together on Earth, as touching any thing*

## An Exposition upon

*that they shall ask, it shall be done for them by his Father that is in Heaven.*

*Secondly*; Our Reverent and Attentive Hearing of the Word of God, either read, or preached, is another Publick Duty necessary to the Sanctification of the Sabbath. This was observed also in the Times of the Law, before Christ's coming into the World, Acts 15. 21. *Moses of old time hath in every City them who preach him, being read in the Synagogues every Sabbath-Day.* Their Synagogues were built for this very purpose: And as their Temple was the great Place of their Legal and Ceremonial Worship; so these were for their Moral and Natural Worship. In the Temple they chiefly sacrificed; and in their Synagogues they prayed, read, and heard. And every Town, and almost every Village, had one erected in it, as now our Churches are; where the People on the Sabbath-Day assembled together, and had some Portion of the Law read and expounded to them; much more ought we to give our attendance on this Holy Ordinance, now in the Times of the Gospel, since a greater measure of Spiritual Knowledge is required from us; and the Mysteries of Salvation are more clearly declared unto us. And may that Tongue wither, and that Mouth be for ever silenced, which shall dare to utter any thing in contempt and vilifying of this Holy Ordinance. For such excellent Things are spoken of the preaching of the Gospel, *That it is the Power of God*, 1 Corinth. 1. 18. *that is, the Salvation of those who believe*, vers. 21. *That it is the sweet Savour of the Knowledge of God*, 2 Corin. 2. 14. That certainly whosoever disparageth it, rejecteth against himself the Counsel of God, and neglects the only appointed means for the begetting of Faith, and so for the obtaining of Eternal Salvation: *For Faith comes by Hearing, and Hearing by the Word of God*, Rom. 10. 27.

*Thirdly*; Another Publick Duty pertaining to the Sanctifying of the Lord's Day, is Singing of Psalms. For this

this Day being a Festival unto God, a Day of Spiritual Joy and Gladness, How can we better testify our Joy, than by our Melody? *Is any Man merry?* saith St. James, chap. 5. 13 *let him sing Psalms.* And therefore let prophane Spirits deride this how they please, yet certainly it is a most Heavenly and Spiritual Duty. The Holy Angels, and the Spirits of Just Men in Heaven, are said to sing Eternal *Hallelujahs* unto the Great King, And if our Sabbath be Typical of Heaven, and the Work of the Sabbath represents to us the Everlasting Work of these Blessed Spirits, How can it be better done than when we are singing forth the Praises of him that sits upon the Throne, and of the Lamb our Redeemer? This is to join with the Heavenly Quire in their Heavenly Work; and to observe a Sabbath here, as like that Eternal Sabbath there, as the Imperfection of Earth can resemble the Glory and Perfection of Heaven.

*Fourthly*; Another Publick Duty belonging unto the Sanctifying of the Lord's Day, is the Administration of the Sacraments, especially that of the Lord's Supper. And therefore it is mentioned, *Acts 20. 7. Upon the First Day of the Week, when the Disciples came together to break Bread,* that is, to partake of the Holy Communion of the Body and Blood of Christ, *Paul preached unto them;* which intimates that the primary intent of their Assemblies, was to receive the Lord's Supper; and that upon occasion of this, the Apostle instructed them by Preaching. It is most evident by all the Records of the Church, that it was the Apostolick and Primitive Custom to partake of this most Holy Ordinance every \* Lord's Day, and that their Meetings were chiefly designed for this; to which were annexed Prayer and Preaching. I am afraid, Sirs, that one of the great Sins of our Age, is not only the Neglect and Contempt of this Ordinance by some, but the seldom celebrating it

\* Yea *Hieron. ad Lucinimum. & Aug. Serm. in monte 12. say e-*very Day.

by

by all. The Apostle, where he speaks of this Holy Institution, intimates that it should be frequently dispens'd and participated, *1 Corinths. 11. 26. As often as ye eat this Bread, and drink this Cup.* Let us consider then, what dishonour they reflect upon Christ, who although this Ordinance be too seldom administred, yet either totally withdraw themselves from it, or very rarely partake of it. I shall no longer insist upon this, but leave it to God and your own Consciences: For certainly if either Persuasion, or Demonstration it self, could prevail against Resolution, enough hath been many times said heretofore, to spare me the Labour of making this Complaint any more.

And thus, much concerning the Sanctification of the Lord's Day, in the publick Duties of his Worship and Service.

But what hast thou no Sabbath-Work to do, after thou returnest from the Congregation and Publick Assemblies? Yes, certainly, the Day is not done when the Church dissolves, and the whole of it is Holy to the Lord. And therefore,

*Secondly;* When you return every one to your Families, there are Private and Family-Duties to be performed. Walks and Visits are not to be Evening-Work of the Sabbath, but Holy and Spiritual Conferences are then proper, either to bring to your remembrance the Truths you before have heard, or to engage your own Hearts, or the Hearts of others, to admire and magnify God, for all his great Wonders of Providence and Redemption. Indeed, if a Walk be thus improved, it may be a Walk to Heaven. So we find the two Disciples, who on this Day were walking to *Emmaus*, how they

## the Fourth Commandment.

239

they entertained themselves, and shortened their Way with Spiritual and Holy Discourses. *Luke 24. 13.* But those who have Families to look after, will be best employed, in seeing that those, who are under their Charge, spend the vacant time of the Sabbath in Holy Exercises, either reading the Scripture, or giving an account of what Truths they have been taught, or joining with them in Praises and Prayer unto God; or indeed in all of these in their several Courses and Order, till Night calls for Repose, and delivers them over with a sweet Seasoning and Blessing, to the Labours and Employments of the ensuing Day and Week. And,

*Thirdly*; If there be any spare time from these Publick and Private Duties, then sanctify it by entering into thy Closet; and there un-bosom thy Soul before God in Secret Prayer, spread thy Requests before him, lay open thy Wants and Desires. And though perhaps thou art not gifted to word a Prayer, yet sigh and groan out a Prayer; for thy God hears thee, and he understands the Language of Sighs, and knows the meanings of his Spirit in the inarticulate Groans of his Children. Here, likewise in Secret, meditate on what thou hast heard; admire the Glory of God in his Works, the Goodness of God in his Providences, the infinite Mercy of God in his Promises. Certainly Meditation is one great Duty of a Sabbath; without which, to hear the Word of God only, is but to swallow our Meat without chewing it. It is Meditation that makes it fit for Nourishment. This sucks the Juice and Sweetness out of it, concorporates it into us, and turns it into Life and Substance. Thus, if we endeavour to sanctify the Lord's Day, the Lord will sanctify his Day, and his Ordinances unto us, and by them convey so much Joy and Comfort into our Souls, that they shall be a temporary





---



---

## T H E F I F T H C O M M A N D M E N T.

**Honour thy Father and thy Mother, that  
thy Days may be long upon the Land  
which the Lord thy God giveth thee.**

**T**HE whole Sum of Practical Religion, consists either in those Duties which immediately concern the Worship and Service of God, or those which immediately concern our converse with, and demeanour towards Men. Both are compendiously prescribed in the Decalogue: The former Sort in the first; The latter in the second Table of the Law. I have already according to my designed Method, finish'd the Exposition of the four Precepts of the first Table, and have discoursed to you, both concerning the internal, and also the external Worship of God. It remains now in pursuance of this Work, to pass unto the Consideration of the Duties and Precepts of the second Table, all which do concern Man, as their primary and immediate Object.

But here by the way, let us observe the distance that God puts between Himself and Us. We are, as it were, set at an other Table from him, as being infinitely inferiour to his great and glorious Majesty. First he prescribes what

Ff

con-

## An Exposition upon

concerns Himself, and then what concerns Us, which teacheth us,

*First*; That in all our Actions, whether Civil or Sacred, God ought principally to be regarded, his Glory ought to be our highest aim and end. This we are to seek in the first place; and for the sake and interest of this, to promote the Good and Benefit of Men. This therefore condemns those who disturb and pervert the Order of the Law, and instead of serving Men out of respect to God, serve God merely out of respect to Men.

*Secondly*; This teacheth us to observe our due distance from God: He challengeth all possible Reverence from us, insomuch that he will not permit so great a Disparagement to his Honour, as to have his Concerns intermingled and blended with ours, no not in the same Table. And this checks the Insolence of those who dare to rush in upon God with that malapert Sauciness which is too common among some brain-sick People in our days, who think that Communion with God consists in a familiar Rudeness; and that they never draw near enough unto him, unless they run upon his very Neck.

But this only by the way.

Now in this second Table are contain'd six Precepts, all of them injoyning our Duty towards Man; and he may be considered either as our Superiour, our Equal, or our Inferiour. Our Duty towards our Superiours and Inferiours (which are Correlates) is prescribed in the first of these six which I have now read unto you; and our Duty towards our Equals in the other five; all which do respect our Neighbour, either,

In his Person: or,

In the exterior Gifts of Wealth and Credit.

His Person is to be considered, either

Naturally, or

Mytically.

Natu-

Naturally, as he is in himself and his own Person : And so the Sixth Commandment provides for his Security, *Thou shalt not kill.*

Myſtically, as he is in the State of Marriage, which of two makes one Flesh; and so Care is taken for him in the Seventh Commandment : *Thou shalt not commit Adultery.*

If we consider him in respect of his external Gifts of Wealth and good Name, so we shall find that the first is fenced about and secured by the Eighth Commandment ; *Thou shalt not steal.*

His Credit and good Name is secured by the Ninth ; *Thou shalt not bear false Witness against thy Neighbour.*

And because the Violation of these Laws by outward and flagitious Acts proceeds from the latent Wickedness and Concupiscence of the Heart, therefore God, who is a Spirit, and whose Law and Authority can reach even to the Soul and Spirit, hath not only prohibited the gross Perpetration of these Crimes, but hath strictly forbidden the inward and secret intention of them, charging us not to harbour so much as a Thought or Desire towards them, in the Tenth Commandment, *Thou shalt not covet.*

In the due performance of all these consists the observance of that second great Command, *Mat. 22. 39. Thou shalt love thy Neighbour as thy self.*

I shall begin with the first of these, *Honour thy Father, and thy Mother*, which respects the mutual Duties of Superiours and Inferiours.

And here we have a Precept and a Promise.

The Precept is to honour them.

The Promise, *that thy Days may be long upon the Land which the Lord thy God hath given thee.*

Now here we may (as formerly we have done) observe a Ray of the Infinite Wisdom of God in the Orders

## An Exposition upon

and Method of this Commandment. For after he had prescribed Laws for his own Honour, his next Care is for the Honour of our Parents, because they are next under God, the Authors and Original of our Lives and Beings. God indeed is properly and primarily our Father, and of him is the whole Family in Heaven and Earth named, that is, of him they are and subsist; *in him we all live, and move, and have our Beings.* Earthly Parents do but convey to us that Being which God had beforehand laid up in store for us. And therefore when our Saviour bids us to *call no Man*

Mat. 23.9. *Father upon Earth; for one is our Father which is in Heaven:* This must not be understood, as tho we ought not to give that Name and Title of Father to those who are our earthly Parents, *the Fathers of our Flesh*, as the Apostle styles them, *Heb. 12. 2.* But only that their Paternity is not so original, nor so absolute as God's, who is the Father of our Spirits; who not only forms the Mass of our Bodies by his secret and wonderful Artifice, but creates our Souls, and by his Breath kindles in us such Sparks of Ethereal Fire as shall never be quench'd nor extinct to all Eternity. And therefore tho we owe to the Fathers of our Flesh Honour and Reverence, as they are the Instruments of our Beings, yet we owe much more unto God, even unlimited and boundless Respects and Obedience, who is the prime Cause and Author of them. But indeed this word [Father] hath also another sense in our Saviour's Speech. For the Jews were wont to call their Doctors and Instructors, by the Name of Fathers, and gave up themselves, without Hesitation or Contradiction, to believe and follow their Dictates.

Now when our Saviour bids us to call no Man Father on Earth; his meaning is, that we must not so mancipate our selves either to the Commands or Doctrine of any Man, as to prejudice the Authority which God, the great and universal Parent of all things challengeth over us; but still our Obedience to their Injunctions, and our Belief of their In-

structi-

Instructions, ought to be cautioned with a Subordination to the Commands and Notices of the Divine Will: Yet we may call and honour others as Fathers, by yielding them a secondary Respect, subservient to the Honour and Glory of God.

Now this Command of honouring our Parents, is very large and comprehensive; and not to be limited only to the Grammatical Signification of the Word, but extends it self to all that are our Superiours. And that appears, because Honour belongs principally only to God; but secondarily, and by way of Derivation, it belongs also unto those whom God the great King hath dignified, and made as it were Nobles in his Kingdom. For as the King is the Fountain of Honour within his Dominions; so God, who is the universal Monarch of all the World, is the true Fountain of Honour among Mankind, ennobling some above others by Titles and Pre-eminencies which he bestows upon them; and all such Superiors, whom he hath been pleased thus to raise, are to be honoured by us as our Fathers. And therefore,

*First*; Our Governours and Magistrates are our Fathers, and so to be accounted and revered by us. Indeed they are *Patres Patria*, the Fathers of their Country: For all Government being at the first Domestick and Paternal, the Father, or chief of the Family, having Power of Life and Death over his Children, necessity at last taught them to devolve both the Care and the Authority of this Charge upon some selected Persons, to whom they committed the Government both of themselves, and theirs. So that Magistrates succeeding in the Place and Office of Parents, are now the publick Fathers, having the same Power devolved upon them which formerly resided in the Fathers of Families. Hence we read that common and successive Name of the Kings of the *Philistines*, *Abimelech*, which signifies the King my Father.

*Secondly*;

## An Exposition upon

*Secondly* ; The Master of a private Family is likewise a Father, and that not only with respect unto his Children, but to his very Servants : And therefore, *2 Kings* 5. 13. we find that *Naaman* is called Father by his Servants, *My Father, if the Prophet had bid thee do some great thing, &c.*

*Thirdly* ; A Teacher in any Art, Science, or Invention, is likewise called a Father. Thus *Gen.* 4. 20, 21. *Jabal* is said to be *the Father of such as dwell in Tents*, and *Jubal* to be *the Father of such as handle the Harp and Organ.*

*Fourthly* ; A Superiour in Wisdom and Counsel is likewise called a Father. So in *Joseph's* Speech, *Gen.* 45. 8. *God hath made me a Father to Pharaoh.*

*Fifthly* ; The Ministers of the Gospel have likewise the honourable Titles of Fathers conferred upon them. And that both because indeed they are superiour to the People in things appertaining unto God, having the Dispensation of the Grace of the Gospel committed unto them ; and because likewise through the Concurrence of the Spirit's Operation with their Ministry, they beget Souls unto Jesus Christ. Thus *St. Paul* tells the Church, *1 Cor.* 4. 15. that he was their Father, having *begotten them through the Gospel.* And therefore we have great reason to magnify our Office, in the Execution and Performance of which we ought to demean our selves as Fathers, with all Gravity and Authority ; and to let these know whose petulant Affronts and Scorns tend to the vilifying both of our Persons and Functions, that they despise not us only, but Jesus Christ who hath sent us, and the eternal Father who hath sent him. So he himself hath told us, *Luke* 10. 16. *He that despiseth you, despiseth me ; and he that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent me.*

*Sixthly* ; Superiours in any Gift of Divine Providence, whether of Riches, or of Age, or of Knowledge, and the like, are to be revered and honoured by us as Fathers ; so *1 Tim.* 5. 1, 2. *The Elders intreat as Fathers, and the elder Women as Mothers.*

So

.. So that you see how large and copious this word *Father* is, taking in many other Relations and States of Men besides these to whom it is now commonly applied.

Here then, in opening to you the sum of this Commandment, I shall endeavour to shew you what are the mutual and reciprocal Duties of these following Relations ;

*First*, Of natural Parents, and their Children.

*Secondly*, Of Magistrates supream and subordinate, and their Subjects.

*Thirdly*, Of Husband and Wife ; for there likewise is a Superiority resident in the one, and Obedience due from the other.

*Fourthly*, Of Masters and Servants.

*Fifthly*, Of Ministers, and the People committed to their Charge.

*Sixthly*, The Duties of those who have a Superiority either in the Gifts of God's Grace, or of his Bounty towards those that are inferiour to them ; and of theirs reciprocally towards those that excel.

For all these are Fathers, and Honour is required to be given them by virtue of this Command.

I know I am now entering upon a Work, which to many will be very harsh and unpleasing. For, as there is nothing wherein the Truth and Power of Godliness, and the very Life of Religion is more concern'd, than a conscientious Performance of relative Duties ; so there is nothing that grates and jars more upon the Spirits of Men, than to be put in mind of, and reproved about these Duties which are of such common and daily occurrence in the whole Course of our Lives. Yet I beseech you lay your Prejudices and Affections under the Authority of God's Word, and be perswaded to believe these Things to be exceeding.



## An Exposition upon

ceeding weighty and momentous, (how plain soever they may be) which not only the Light and Law of Nature dictates unto us, but the Spirit of God hath been pleased frequently to recommend in the Holy Scriptures, yea more frequently, and more expressly, than any other Duties whatsoever.

I shall therefore begin first, with the mutual Duties of Parents, and Children. And here I shall speak,

1<sup>st</sup>. Of the Honour that is due to Parents from their Children.

2<sup>ly</sup>. And then what Parents are obliged to do for their Children.

1. For the former of these, the Command saith, *Honour thy Father and thy Mother*. Now this Honour which they are to defer unto them, consists in these four things, Reverence, Obedience, Retribution and Imitation.

1. Children are to reverence their Parents. Now Reverence is nothing but an awful Love, a Fearfulness to offend, out of the Respect we bear them. It is not such a Fear as terrifies, and drives us from the Presence and Company of those whom we dread, for that is slavish and tormenting; but a genuine, sweet, and obliging Fear; a fearful Esteem and Veneration; a Fear that will ingage us to attend on them, to observe and imitate them, and to abstain from doing any thing that might grieve or trouble them.

Now this Reverence which we owe our Parents, is wont to express it self outwardly by two Things, Speeches, and Gestures.

*First*, Our Speeches must be full of Respect and Honour, giving unto them the highest Titles that their Quality and Condition will admit. They must likewise be very few, and very humble and submissive. Talkativeness is an Argument

gument of Disrespect, and by the Answers of the Lips, the Heart is tryed and sounded; therefore we find how mildly and reverently *Jonathan* speaks to his Father *Saul*, although he were then pleading for his *David*, and managing the Concernment of his Friend's Life, which was far dearer to him than his own; yet see with what modesty he urgeth it, 1 *Sam.* 19. 4, 5. *Let not the King sin against his Servant, against David; for he did put his Life in his Hand, and slew the Philistine, &c.* And God blessed a Speech so well temper'd, and so full of soft and melting Oratory, with Success. Yea we find an instance of a disobedient Son in the Parable of our Saviour, *Matth.* 21. who though he obeyed not the Commands of his Father, yet thought it too shameful a Crime not to give him good Words, and reverend Titles, *verse* 30. *I go, Sir.* And certainly it is but fit and meet that we should give them the best and the most obliging Language, who have taught us to speak; and to please them with our Words, who have instructed us how to form them. Yea, that rude and boistrous Language which many of the Sons of *Belial* use towards their Parents, is so odious and detestable unto God, that he hath in his Law threatned to punish it with the same Punishment, as Blasphemy against himself, *Exod.* 21. 17. *He that curseth his Father or his Mother, shall surely be put to Death.* And *Prov.* 20. 20. *He that curseth his Father or his Mother, his Lamp shall be put out in obscure Darknes.*

*Secondly*; We must likewise shew them Reverence in our Gestures, and comport our selves with all Lowliness and Modesty before them, in bowing the Body, and shewing all other external Signs of respect: So we find, *Gen.* 48. 12. that *Joseph*, as highly exalted as he was in the Court of *Pharaoh*, when he brought out his Sons to receive the Blessing of *Jacob* his Father, he bowed himself with his Face to the Earth. And on the contrary, That an ill-conditioned Look towards a Parent, is severely threatned, *Prov.* 30. 17. *The Eye that mocketh at his Father, and despi-*

## An Exposition upon

*seth to obey his Mother, the Ravens of the Valley shall pick it out; and the young Eagles shall eat it.*

But, secondly; As we must honour them with Reverence, so especially with Obedience, without which all external Reverence is but meer Formality, if not meer Mockery. See that large Charter which God hath given unto Parents, *Colos. 3:20. Children, obey your Parents in all things; for this is well pleasing unto the Lord.*

Our Obedience to them may be considered either as Active, or Passive; and we are obliged by God's Command to yield them both: Active Obedience, in whatsoever is not contrary to the Will and Law of God; Passive, in whatsoever they impose upon us that is so: And therefore we are to obey our Parents in whatsoever honest Calling and Employment they will set us. *David*, though destin'd to a Kingdom, is yet by his Father *Jesse* appointed to keep the Sheep, *1 Sam. 16. 11.* We ought not, till at last we are emancipated and set free by their Consent, to enter into Wedlock without their Knowledge, or against their Consent. For we find the holy Fathers have still taken the care of the disposal of their Children in this Affair. And the Apostle, *1 Corinth. 7. 36, 37.* declares, that it is in the Parents Power either to marry their Children, or to keep them in a single estate. But yet no question so, as that Children have still a negative Vote, and ought not to be forced against their own Will and Consent. Yea, so far doth the Authority of a Parent extend, that it reacheth also to the very Garb and Apparel of their Children, who ought to conform themselves therein, according to their Allowance and Direction, *Gen. 37. 3.* But if Parents shall abuse their Authority, by commanding what is sinful, and what God hath contraven'd by his Law and Command; yet Children are not hereby disobligh'd from Obedience, but only directed to chuse the passive Part of it, and to bear their Wrath and Choler, yea and their Punishments too, with all Patience and Submission.

For

For, as the Apostle speaks, *Heb. 12. 10. They often-times chasten us after their own Pleasure*; and yet we are to give them Reverence; we ought to bear with their Infirmities, whether they be natural, or vicious, and endeavour to hide and cover them from others. And therefore we read what a Curse was laid upon *Cham*, for disclosing the Nakedness of his Father, *Gen. 9. 25.* And indeed it is a cursed thing to expose the Nakedness and Weakness of our Parents to the Scorn and Derision of others. But this is not all: for,

*Thirdly*; As we must honour them by Reverence and Obedience, so likewise by Remuneration and Retribution, requiting the Benefits we have received from them, so far as we are able, and they need. This the Apostle expressly enjoins, *1 Tim. 5. 4. If any Widows have Children, or Nephews, let them learn first to shew Piety at home, and to requite their Parents*; that is, when they are fallen to poverty or decay, or otherwise require Assistance from us, we are obliged liberally according to our Proportion to afford it. And he affirms that this is good and acceptable before God. And therefore we find our Saviour sharply reprehending that unnatural Doctrine among the Scribes and Pharisees, which dispensed with Children from the Relief of their Parents, *Matth. 15. 5, 6. Ye say, Whosoever shall say to his Father or Mother, It is a Gift by whatsoever thou mayest be profited by me, and honour not his Father or his Mother, he shall be free.* Which Place, because it is obscure and intricate, admits of divers Expositions. Some say it was the Doctrine of the Scribes and Pharisees, that although a Man did not honour nor support his Parents, yet he should be guiltless, if he should tell them that he had offered in the Temple a Gift for his and their good, and that therefore they could require no more Relief from him. Others, that it was a solemn Oath among the Jews to swear by the Gift or Offering, which was brought into the Temple, and presented there as a Sacrifice before God; which Oath

## An Exposition upon

was obligatory in the highest Degree, whatsoever the Matter of it might be, *Matth. 23. 18.* And the Scribes did teach, that if a Man had sworn thus to his Parents, By the Gift thou shalt have no profit by me, then he was for ever disoblged from relieving them, were their Necessities never so great and urgent. And according to this Exposition, the Words should be thus translated; But ye say, Whosoever saith to his Father or Mother, by the Gift if thou have any Profit by me, (where must be understood some Curse or Imprecation upon themselves, which they did usually expresse, as, Let me die, or the like) then he shall be free from the Obligation of honouring, that is, of relieving and maintaining his Father or Mother. Which-so-ever Interpretation be most consonant to the corrupt Doctrine of the Scribes, and the corrupt Practice of the Jews, (as I suppose the latter is) our Saviour condemns it for a most vile Hypocrisy, making the Commandments of God of none effect through their Traditions. Certainly it is one of the most unnatural Sins in the World, for Children who have Ability and Opportunity to relieve their necessitous Parents, to suffer them to want a Livelihood, and comfortable Subsistence, who are the Cause and Authors of Life and Being unto their Children.

But, *Fourthly*; We must honour our Parents, by hearkning unto their good Instructions, and imitating their Godly Practices. So *Prov. 6. 20. My Son, keep thy Father's Commandment, and forsake not the Law of thy Mother.* For although good Instruction be for the matter of it, always to be imbraced from whomsoever it shall proceed, yet when it shall come from a Parent, it obligeth us not only because it is good, but because it is Authoritative; neither are we only to hearken to their Counsel, but also to imitate the holy Examples of our Parents: And therefore it is commended in *Solomon*, that he walked in the Steps of his Father *David*.

Suffer

Suffer me only in a word, to set home this upon the Consciences of stubborn and disobedient Children. Consider what your Demeanour hath been towards your Parents, to whom you owe your Selves, your Lives, your Education. Benefits that can never be repaid them, altho you should undergo all the Hardships imaginable to make an acknowledgment of them. Can you imagine the Cares, the parching Thoughts, the perplexing Fears which your tender Parents are continually distracted with, for your good? And will you so requite their Love, as to despise their Persons, of whom you your selves are a part, and make their very Bowels rebel against them? Certainly were there any Ingenuity of Nature, or the Principles of Reason and Equity not quite spent and extinguished in you, the Love and Solicitude they have expressed for you, would again return unto them, if not in equal Measures, yet in the most ample and acceptable that is possible for you to render. And if there be any of you, who by your Stubbornness and Disobedience, have brought down the gray Hairs of your Parents with Sorrow to the Grave; consider seriously what an unnatural Sin you have been guilty of: and because you cannot now beg Pardon of them, beg Pardon of God, the great and universal Father of all; beg that he would not revenge your Disobedience to your Parents, by the Disobedience of your Children towards you.

Thus you have seen what Duties Children owe unto their Parents. Let us now see what are the reciprocal Duties of Parents towards their Children. For in all unequal Relations, the Superiority rests only in one part, yet the Duty is divided between both.

The Duty therefore of Parents respects either the Temporal or Spiritual Good of their Children, for both are given them in charge.

As for their Temporal Good, two Duties are incumbent upon them, Protection and Provision; and both of these the

Law

## An Exposition upon

Law of Nature teacheth them. Do we not see even in brute Creatures themselves, that a strong Parental Affection makes them dare unequal Dangers, and expose their own Lives to the greatest hazard, only to defend their young? We see with what indefatigable Industry they either lead them unto, or bring them in their Food and Nourishment, till they have taught them the Art and Method of providing for themselves, and living at their own finding. And if the instinct and impulse of Nature be so powerful in Irrational Creatures, how much more should it prevail in us, in whom Reason should perfect Nature? and we be the more careful, in as much as the Charge committed to us is more noble? and that it is not a Sparrow nor a Chicken that we are to look after, but a Man, a King of the Universe, designed for great Employments, and to great Ends, an Heir of the World; and if we fail not in educating him, may be an Heir of Eternal Glory?

*First*; We owe them Protection, and this their Weakness and Helplessness often calls for at our Hands. How many Diseases and Dangers is their feeble Infancy exposed unto? And in their growing Childhood, want of Care and Experience runs them daily into more. Now Parents are to be their Guards, and by their Skill and Strength fence off those Wrongs and Injuries that threaten them. And in so doing, they perform not only a Parental, but an Angelical Work. *Mat. 18. 10.* *Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, that in Heaven their Angels do always behold the Face of my Father which is in Heaven.* And if God, the great Father of the whole Family both in Heaven and Earth, hath out of his infinite Tenderness and Compassion, appointed his holy Angels to be their Guardians, that they who attend the Throne of his Glorious Majesty, should likewise attend the Cradles and Beds, and wandering Steps of little Ones; it is not only inhumane for Parents to neglect the Care of their Children, but devilish to do them hurt,

hurt, or destroy them themselves; the too common Practice of many Wretches, who, to hide and cover their Shame, either abandon or murder the Fruit of their Bowels.

*Secondly*; As Parents owe their Children Protection from incident Evils, so likewise Provision of Necessaries and Conveniencies according to the Rank and Degree in which the Divine Providence hath set them. And this the Scripture often inculcates, *Mat. 7. 9, 10. What Man is there among you, whom if his Son ask Bread, will give him a Stone? Or if he ask a Fish, will give him a Scorpion?* Intimating unto us, that we are bound to give our Children what is fit for the Sustentation of that Life which they have received from us. And indeed they are our Flesh and our Bone; they are our selves multiplied. Now Nature teacheth us to cherish and nourish our own Flesh, as the Apostle speaketh, *Ephes. 5. 29. Nay the Apostle hath laid this Charge exceeding high; If any Man provide not for his own, and especially for those of his House, he hath denied the Faith, and is worse than an Infidel*; and that because even the Infidels and Heathens are taught by the Light and Law of Nature, to make Provision for their own; and this Provision is not only for the present, but our Care is to extend farther; and according to our Ability (bating the Expences of Decency and Charity) we are to take care for their future Subsistence; and if we cannot leave them a Patrimony, we are to leave them an Art and Calling, whereby, through the Blessing of God, they may procure their own Livelihood. So the Apostle, *2 Cor. 12. 14. The Children ought not to lay up for the Parents, but the Parents for the Children.* And if we must place them out to a Vocation, we must endeavour with all our Prudence to fit it to their Genius and Inclination: for otherwise it will not be a Vocation, but a Vexation unto them all their Days: Still remembering, that if we piously design any unto the Work of the Lord, it should be those who are most pregnant, and whom

1 Tim. 5. 8.



## An Exposition upon

whom God hath indowed with the greatest Gifts for so high a Ministration. For it is a Sin very like to that of *Jeroboam*, who made *Israel* to sin, to consecrate Priests unto the Lord of the refuse and vilest of the People, and to think those fit enough for the Temple, who through the Deformity of their Body, or the Defects of their Minds, are not fit for a Shop, or for any other Employment.

And so much for those Duties of Parents which concern the Temporal Good of their Children.

But then they are obliged to others of an higher and nobler Nature, which concern their Spiritual Good, and have an Influence into their Eternal Happiness.

And here, their first Duty is to incorporate them into the Church of Christ, by the presenting them to holy Baptism, which is the Laver of Regeneration, and which Jesus Christ hath instituted for the Admission and Initiation of new Members into his Body the Church, and new Subjects into his Kingdom. Nay it is not an empty bare Ceremony, but it is a Seal of the Promise of the Covenant, a Sign of the Grace of the Spirit, and a means appointed to convey it to the Soul. And therefore those Parents are highly injurious to their Children, who either through Carelessness or Contempt, debar them from so excellent and spiritual an Ordinance and Priviledg, yea indeed the only spiritual Priviledg which their Age makes them capable of. What do they else hereby, but put their Children into a worse Condition than the Children of the Jews, who in their Infancy were admitted to the Sacrament of Circumcision, which the Apostle calls *a Seal of the Righteousness of Faith*? Rom. 4. 11. And certainly, if this Seal of Circumcision were broken by the Coming of Christ, and no other were instituted, whereof the Children of Believers under the Gospel might be made Partakers; our Infants then must needs be in a worse Condition than theirs; and Christ's coming into the World hath in this respect rather

rather diminished the Priviledges of the Church, than enlarged them. It ought therefore to be the first and chiefeſt Care of every Godly Parent, to offer his Children to this holy Ordinance; eſpecially conſidering that they are Partakers of his ſinful and corrupt Nature, that he hath been an Inſtrument of conveying down along to them the Guilt of the firſt Tranſgreſſion, and that Deſilement which hath infected the whole Soul; and therefore it is the leaſt that his Charity can do for them, to offer them unto that Remedy which our Saviour hath provided both to remove the Guilt, and cleanſe away the Filth of their Natures. For be the Parents themſelves never ſo holy and ſanctified, yet their Children are born in their Filth, and in their Blood. And this *Auſtin* expreſſeth by a very apt Similitude; “ The Chaff (ſaith he) is carefully ſeparated from the Wheat that we ſow; and yet the Wheat which it produceth groweth up with Huſks and Chaff about it. So thoſe whom the Holy Ghoſt hath ſanctified and cleanſed, yet they produce Children naturally unclean, thoſe federally holy. And therefore being born within the Promiſes of the Covenant, their Parents ought to ſee that the Seal of the Covenant be applied unto them; that is, they derive Corruption from them, they may by them be brought to the means of cleanſing and waſhing.

Sicut præputium quod per Circumcisionem auferitur, manet in iis quos gignunt circumciſi: ſicut palca quæ opere humano tantâ diligentia ſeparatur, manet in fructu qui de purgato tritico naſcitur. *Aug.* Ep. 222.

*Secondly*; When they are thus initiated and entered into the Church of Chriſt, another Duty that Parents owe them is, to inſtruct and admoniſh them, to educate them in the Fear and Knowledge of God, and this the Apoſtle expreſſy enjoyns, *Ephes. 6. 4. Ye Fathers, bring up your Children in the Nurture and Admonition of the Lord.* And ſo *Deut. 4. 9. Forget not the things which thine Eyes have ſeen, but teach them thy Sons, and thy Sons Sons.* We find that God gives an honourable Teſtimony concerning *Abraham*, and conſides in him upon this account, *Gen. 18. 19. I know Abraham, that he will command his Children, and his Houſhold*

H h

after

## An Exposition upon

after him, and they shall keep the way of the Lord, to do Justice and Judgment. And Solomon extols his Father David for his Care in instructing him, Prov. 4. 3, 4. *I was my Father's Son, and he taught me also, and said unto me, Let thy Heart retain my words; keep my Commandments, and live.* Now this Instruction must not be nice and critical, but familiar and obvious, teaching them such Fundamental Truths and Principles of Christian Doctrine as are of absolute necessity to be known, and in such a manner as may be most suitable to their Capacity and Discretion. And if Parents would be but careful and conscientious in the performance of this Duty, infusing into their Minds, before they are filled with Vanity, the Knowledge of God, and of Christ, and of Religion; and forming their Wills, whilst they are flexible, to the love of Piety and Vertue; the next Generation would not generally see so much Debauchery in Youth, nor so much Obduracy in old Age, as is now every-where too visible and apparent. By this means the Minister's Work would be half done to his Hands. It would be needful only to feed his Flock with strong Meat, and to press them only to a vigorous and chearful performance of those Duties of Holiness, to which their pious Education made them before inclinable.

Now this way of Instruction is either,

*First*; By reading to them, or causing them to read the Holy Scriptures, and pointing out to them those Observables which are most agreeable to their Age and Apprehensions. Thus it is said of *Timothy*, that *from a Child he had known the Holy Scriptures*. And doubtless he was trained up in that Knowledge by the Care of his Mother, and Grand-Mother, whom the Apostle honourably commends, Chap. 1. 5. And,

*Secondly*; By catechising and instructing them in the Grounds and principal Doctrines of Religion. Indeed a continued Discourse is not so informing, nor doth it fasten and

and rivet Instruction into young Minds, so well as where it is diversified by Questions and Answers. This makes them Masters of their own Notions, and able to weild and manage them afterwards to their better advantage. And truly this I take to be the very Reason why so many sit grossly ignorant under many Years preaching of the Word unto them, scarce able to give any tolerable account of the very first Principles of the Oracles of God, because they were never educated in this way of Catechising, they were never tried, nor searched, nor the strength of their Memories and Capacities exercised by Questions.

For running and continued Discourses, are like the falling of Rain upon a smooth Rock, where it trickles off as it descends: But Questions and Examinations are like digging of it, and making it fit to retain what is poured upon it. But whatsoever Method you may judg most profitable, yet certainly Instruction in their tender Years, is absolutely necessary to season them betimes with the Knowledge of the Grounds of Religion, and a Love and Veneration of Piety, which will afterwards have a mighty Influence to keep them from being led away either with the Errors, or ungodly Practices of lewd and ungodly Men. *Train up the Child in the way he should go: and when he is old, he will not depart from it.* For when the Reluctance of corrupted Nature is thus early master'd, and Vertue habituated in them, (as there must be strong Convictions, and Almighty Grace, to break off the long accustomed Habits of Sin: so) there must be very powerful and prevalent Temptations that shall induce such an one, whose Knowledge of God, and Love of Vertue have grown up with him from his Childhood, to turn a Recreant to his former Profession and Practice, and to forget that, before which he can hardly remember any thing; or if through the Violence of Temptation he should be hurried into any Extravagancy and Excess, his Conscience hath a greater advantage to reduce him again, than it

Prov. 22.6.

## An Exposition upon

hath upon others who are trained up ignorantly and barbarously. It will still pursue him, disturb him in his Sins, and his early Notions of Piety and Religion will imbitter the Sweets which he fancied, and others perhaps find in them; and his Conscience will never leave crying, and clamouring, and threatning, till it bring him back with Tears in his Eyes, and Sorrow in his Heart, and Shame in his Face, to his former regular and unblameable Conversation.

*Thirdly*; Another Duty which Parents are obliged unto, is not only the giving their Children good Instructions, but good Examples, to set before them the Copies and Pattern of those Vertues which they teach. And this indeed is the most lively and the most effectual way to profit them. Thou who before thy Child blasphemest the Name of God by swearing or cursing, thou who abusest thy self and others by Riot and Intemperance, dost thou expect that ever he should reverence that holy and dreadful Name which thou profanest; or love that Sobriety and Temperance, which thou possibly mayest commend to him in Words, but dost much more forbid it him by thy Deeds? for it is the Glory and Boast of Children to be, and to do, like their Parents. And although there be few so forlornly wicked and utterly abandoned over unto Vice, but that they would have their Children love and practise Vertue, and may perhaps sometimes exhort them thereunto; yet alas, what Effect can empty Words have, when they are contradicted and overborn by Deeds? When the corrupt Nature thou hast given them, shall be improved by the ill Examples thou daily givest them; what avail all thy Exhortations and Admonitions, unless it be to upbraid and reproach thy self, and increase both thine own Condemnation, and theirs too?

*Jurnal.*

Even the Heathen Satyrist could say, *Maxima debetur puero reverentia*; We ought to reverence and stand in aw of Children, that they see nothing vicious or dishonest by us, not so much for the Shame of it as the Example: for there is

no

no Pest so contagious as Vice ; the least Converse will serve to rub it upon others, especially your Parents Vice upon their Children, who if they think it not Obedience, and a part of Duty to imitate them, yet cannot but conclude themselves secure both from Reproofs and Corrections. The Practice of Superiours hath certainly a mighty Influence in forming the manners of those who are subject to them ; for let them prescribe what Rules, and enact what Laws they please, let their Authority be as great as can be, yet their Example will be far greater than their Authority, and Inferiours will be encouraged by it boldly to transgress, when Shame and Consciousness shall tie up the Hands of those who should punish them. But now when a Godly Parent shall not only with the most tender and affectionate Words that Love can dictate, instruct his Children in the Ways of Holiness, but walk before them in those Ways, not only by Admonitions shew it to be most rational, but by constant Practice shew it to be most pleasant and delightful ; certainly that Nature must needs be most deploredly vicious, which can in this case be refractory, and will not go whither both Wind and Tide lead him ; whereas others possibly who have only the Breath of good Instructions, are carried away headlong, and drowned in Perdition by the stronger Current of evil Examples.

*Fourthly* ; If neither Instructions nor good Examples will prevail, then Correction and Discipline is necessary, and becomes a Duty, though perhaps it may be as grievous to the Parent to inflict it, as it is to the Child to suffer it. I know there may be, and often is Excess in this kind, when Choler and Passion prescribe the measures of Punishment. This is fierce and inhumane Tyranny, and argues such Parents to be devoid of natural Affection. And this immoderate ungoverned Correction, is so far from profiting Children, that it often-times exasperates them, and makes them the more stubborn and untractable ; or else it only dis-

## An Exposition upon

dispirits and stupifies them. And therefore the Apostle hath twice cautioned Parents against this provoking way of Discipline; *Ephes. 6. 4. Ye Fathers, provoke not your Children to Wrath*: And again, *Col. 3. 21. Fathers, provoke not your Children to anger, lest they be discouraged*. Yet notwithstanding, where Age and Decency will allow it, and Prudence doth require it, it is sometimes necessary to use the Severity of Discipline; and let not a foolish Fondness here interpose: For certainly God loves his Children with a much more parental Affection, than you can love yours; and yet he tells us, *Rev. 3. 19. As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten*. And the Apostle tells us, *Heb. 12. 6. Whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every Son whom he receiveth*. If there be not a due Exercise of Discipline and Correction, nothing else can be expected but that our Children will wax wanton with us; and next, rebellious against us. Now this Severity must be used betimes, before Age and Spirit have hardened them against the Fear or Smart of Correction. The wise Man hath told us, *Prov. 13. 24. He that spareth his Rod, hateth his Son: but he that loveth him, chasteneth him betimes*.

This is the way;

*First*, To deliver him from greater Sufferings and Mischiefs that else will follow: Better the Rod than the Tree. Thou mayst, for ought thou knowest, redeem his Life by it, and deliver him from the hand of Justice, and eternal Wrath of God, and save his Soul from everlasting Smart and Torment. So *Prov. 23. 13, 14. With-hold not Correction from the Child; for if thou beatest him with the Rod, he shall not die: Thou shalt beat him with the Rod, and deliver his Soul from Hell*. And,

*Secondly*, By this course thou shalt bring thy self much Comfort, most likely in his Reformation; or if not in that, yet at least in the Conscience of having performed thy Duty, and done all that lay in thy Power for his good. But

what

what Support and Comfort can that Parent have, who when his Children grow lewd and debauch'd, shall sadly reflect upon it, that it was only his Fondness and foolish Piety which ruined them? Take this for certain, that as many deserved Stripes as you spare from the Child, you do but lay upon your own Backs; and those whom you have refused to chastise, God will make them severe Scourges to afflict and chastise you.

And these are the Duties which you owe to your Children, immediately respecting their spiritual Good: Initiating them by Baptism, giving them good Instructions, good Examples, and necessary Correction.

There is one Duty more, and it is a very principal one, which respects both their temporal and spiritual Good; and that is, fervent and earnest Prayer to God for them, without which all the rest will be ineffectual. Whenever therefore thou comest unto the Throne of Grace, bring these thy dear Pledges upon thy Heart with thee; earnestly implore of God, that he would own them, and provide for them, as his own Children, that he would adopt them into the Family of Heaven, make them Heirs of Glory, and Co-heirs with Jesus Christ; that he would give them a convenient Portion of good things for this Life, that they may serve him with the more Cheerfulness and Alacrity, and a large Portion of spiritual Blessings in Heavenly things in Christ Jesus, and at length bring them to the Heavenly Inheritance. And know assuredly, that the Prayers of Parents are very effectual, and have a kind of Authority in them to impetrate and obtain what they sue for. This is the Benediction or Blessing which Holy Fathers in Scripture have bestowed upon their Children; and we find that their Blessing was their Destiny. Thus *Jacob* blessed his Sons the Patriarchs, and, as it were, divided among them the Treasures of God's Blessings; and God the great Father would not have the Blessing of a Father pronounced in vain, but ratified and fulfilled them in the Success. And



## An Exposition upon

And as Parents Blessings have great Influence upon their Children, so likewise have their Curses : and therefore they should beware what they wish or pray against them. A rash and passionate Curse is oftentimes direfully fulfilled, not only to the Ruin of the Children, but the too late Sorrow and Repentance of the Parents. We know how deep the Curse of *Noah* stuck in *Cham*, and all his Posterity. For the Words of a Father are weighty and authoritative even with God himself, and he will not lightly suffer them to fall to the ground, when they are spoken either for, or against those over whom he himself hath given them Power and Authority.

I shall close up this with one Word to those who are Parents. Consider what a great Charge God hath intrusted you with. In your hands is deposited the Hope and Blessing, or else the Curse and Plague of the next Age ; your Families are the Nurseries both of Church and State ; and according to the manuring of them now, such will their Fruits be hereafter. Consider I beseech you, how you have managed this great Trust : Are your Children like Olive-branches round about your Table, each promising to bring forth good Fruit in their due Season ? Have you taken care, by your good Instructions, and good Examples, to form the Lord Jesus in them ? Have you taken care, by Correction and Discipline, to cut off all Excrescencies and Superfluities of Naughtiness from them ? Or, do they remain still Sons of *Belial*, wild, rude, unnurtur'd, and disobedient ? Certainly God will require an account of them at your hands ; for they are his, and only left in your keeping, and to your Education. But alas, the lewd Practices, and the too ripe Sins of young ones, do clearly convince Parents rather to have infused Wickedness into them, than curbed it. And the Wit and Forwardness of their Wickedness beyond their Years, make it evident that they have but borrowed it from your Examples. Beware lest God punish you in them ;  
and

and punish them for what they have learnt of you, and you in Hell for not better instructing and admonishing of them.

And if any of you have reason sadly to complain of the Stubbornness and Disobedience of your Children, I beseech you seriously to reflect upon the cause of it, and consider whether it may not be justly imputed to thy want of Care in their Education, or to thy bad Examples thou hast given them; or possibly by their Rebellion and Undutifulness towards thee, God justly punisheth thy Rebellion and Undutifulness towards thy Father. I remember a story of a graceless and desperate young Wretch, who being thwarted by his aged Father in some of his lewd Pranks, invaded his gray Hairs, and dragg'd him by them along the ground to the very Threshold of his Door: his poor old Father suffered it silently till then, but then looking pittifully upon him, he said; Son, forbear now and let me go, for I remember I dragg'd my Father to this very place, and there left him; and acknowledged the righteous Judgment of God in so just a Requital. But whatsoever thy Conscience shall suggest to thee to have been a Provocation unto God thus to punish thee, (and certainly it is one of the greatest Punishments that can befall a Man in this World) humbly crave Pardon of him who is thy Father, and beg him that he would be pleased to turn the Hearts of the Children unto their Fathers, and the Hearts of all unto himself.

Thus we have considered the Duties of natural Parents towards their Children, and the Duties of Children reciprocally towards their Parents.

But there is also another Rank of Fathers, and they are Political; *Patres Patria*, the Fathers of their Country, unto whom we owe Honour and Reverence by the Obligation of this Command. And these are the Magistrates and Governours that God hath set over us: They are his Deputies and Vice-gerents upon Earth, and the Authority

## An Exposition upon

with which they stand invested, is originally in and derivatively from the supream King of Kings, and Lord of all Lords; their Kingdoms are but the several Provinces of his Universal Empire; He hath given them their Patent to be his Lieutenants and Vice-Roys, for *by him Kings reign, and Princes decree Justice*, Prov. 8. 15. Not by his Permission only, but by his Ordinance and Appointment. And whereas a great and conspicuous part of the Image of God consists in his Sovereignty and Dominion, he hath so expressly stamp't this Image of his upon them, that for their likeness to him in it, he gives them the same glorious Name by which himself is known; *Psal. 82. 6. I have said, ye are Gods*; and *Exod. 22. 28. Thou shalt not revile the Gods, nor curse the Ruler of thy People*. And our Saviour tells us, *John 10. 35. That they are called Gods*, because the Word of God came unto them: The Word of God, that is, the Appointment and Commission which they have received from God.

Josephus  
l. 2. contr.  
Appion,  
applies that  
of Exod.  
22. to the  
Heathen  
Gods.

It is observable, that as other inferiour Creatures revere the very Countenance of a Man, and those few Strictures of the defaced Image of God which are still remaining there, and that although they far exceed in Strength, yet dare not (unless enraged) make use of it against their natural, though weaker Lords: So also, that God hath spread such an awe upon the Face of Authority, that a Look or a Word from a lawful Magistrate, shall more daunt and terrify, than the armed Force of an Enemy. There is some secret Character that God hath imprinted on them, which makes them venerable; and although their Subjects do as far exceed them in Strength, as they do in Number, yet Strength alone was never made to command, but rather to obey and execute, and Power ought to be the Servant of Authority.

Nor hath God ordained Magistracy only out of respect to some few whom he hath ennobled, that they might enjoy

joy a Priviledge and Prebogative above the common and vulgar Sort of Men, but he hath ordained it for the general Good of Mankind; yea, and I have often and seriously thought, that next to the invaluable Gift of Jesus Christ, the best and the greatest Good that God ever gave the World, was this Appointment of Magistracy. For were it not for this, the whole World would be turned into a Wilderuess, and Men into salvage Beasts, preying one upon another: Did not the Fear of Man restrain them, when they have cast off the Fear of God; did they not dread the Infliction of temporal Punishments, when they slight the Threatnings of eternal, we might be as safe among Lions and Tygers, as among Men; and find better Refuge, and better Society in Solitudes, than in Cities: Within would be Fears, without Violence, and every where Tumults, Uprores, and Distractions; our Dwellings, our Persons, our Possessions, all exposed to the Fury of bloody and merciless Invaders; and, as the Prophet speaks, *Hosea 4. 2. By Swearing and Lying, and Killing, and Stealing, and committing Adultery, they would break out, until Blood touched Blood;* and there would be no more Peace nor Agreement on Earth than there is in Hell: But the all-wise God who hath subdued the Beasts of the Earth to Man, hath likewise subdued Man (who else would become more wild and brutish than they) unto Man. So that these who stand not in any awe of the God of Heaven, yet are awed by the Gods of the Earth; and whom the Thoughts of Hell and eternal Wrath, cannot scare from Wickedness, yet many times the Thoughts of a Prison, or of a Gibbet, doth.

Magistracy then being an Institution of such great Eminency, and absolute Necessity, let us see what are the Duties.

*First,* Of those who are invested with it towards their Subjects: And then,

## An Exposition upon

*Secondly*, The Duties of their Subjects reciprocally towards them.

Of the First, I shall speak but briefly, since we are chiefly concern'd in the Knowledge and Practice of the Second.

Magistrates therefore may be considered either as Supream or Subordinate, according to the Distinction the Apostle makes of them, 1 *Pet.* 2. 13, 14. The King as Supream, and Governours sent by him as subordinate: each of these have their respective Duties belonging unto them.

As for supream Magistrates, their Duty is,

1<sup>st</sup>. To establish and maintain the true Worship and Service of God, and to purge out all Corruptions and Abuses that have any way adulterated it with Superstitions or idolatrous Mixtures. God hath appointed a Sovereign Prince to be *Custos utriusq; Tabule*, a Guardian of both Tables of his Law; and hath put the Sword into his Hands, not only to be an Avenger in Cases of Injury done by Man to Man, but to be an Avenger in case of the Violation of those Laws which immediately respect his own Worship, and to be a Reformer of the Corruptions of the Church, as well as the Disorders of the State. Indeed this Power and Supremacy which we thus ascribe unto him, is not formally and intrinsically Spiritual or Ecclesiastical, but only objectively such: For they neither have the power of Order, which gives Authority to preach the Gospel, and administer the Sacraments, which properly belongs unto the Ministerial Office; and whosoever he be that shall intrude himself therein without a lawful Call and Ordination, be his Gifts or Place never so eminent, he is guilty of the same Presumption that *Uzziah* was, and may dreadfully expect the same, or a greater Punishment, 2 *Chron.* 26. 16, 19. *His Heart was lifted up to his Destruction; for he transgressed, and went into the Temple of the Lord to burn*

*burn Incense upon the Altar of Incense: and whilst the Censor was in his Hand, the Leprosy rose up in his Forehead.* Neither have they the power of the Keys committed unto them, to bind and loose, to retain and remit Sins by a due pronouncing of Ecclesiastical Censures: For those two Powers of Order and the Keys, appertain only unto the Ministers of the Gospel, for to them only were they committed.

Yet Princes have a Power of Jurisdiction over Church-Affairs, and ought by their Laws and Authority to provide that God be worshipped in his own prescribed Way, that Heresies be rooted out, Schisms and Rents healed, stubborn Contemners of God's Laws, as well as theirs, severely punish'd, the Mouth of Blasphemy stopp'd, Ministers commanded to, and encouraged in the conscientious Performance of their Duty; that nothing be tolerated in practice contrary to the Rules of a good Life; that nothing be broached in Doctrine contrary to the Form of sound Words which hath been delivered unto us. Thus far reacheth the Magistrates Duty and Authority in things pertaining unto the Church. And therefore we find in the Scripture, that when the Worship of the true God was so much corrupted and forgotten among the *Israelites*, that *Micah*, out of a blind and idolatrous Devotion, made him a whole Chappel of Gods to worship: The Holy Ghost gives this as a Cause of so great an Abomination, that *in those Days there was no King in Israel*, *Judg.* 17. 6. In *Judges* the 9th we read that tragical History of Adultery, and Uncleaness unto Death; and the very same reason is given for the Licentiousness of those Times, ver. 1. *In those Days there was no King in Israel.* And this plainly intimates unto us, that not only Adultery and Murder, Sins against the second Table of the Law, but also Idolatry and false Worship, against the first, ought, and might have been either prevented or punished, had there been a King and

Ruler.

## An Exposition upon

Ruler in *Israel*; and that it had been his Duty to have drawn his Sword, and exercised his Authority against the one, as well as against the other. We read likewise of some Kings reprov'd, because they took not away the high Places, but suffered the People still to burn Incense on them, notwithstanding they proceeded far in other Parts of Reformation. Others are commended, that they did remove them. And among the most renowned Acts of *Hezekiah's* Piety, it is mentioned to his immortal Honour, that he commanded the Priests and Levites to sanctify themselves, and cleanse the Temple, and restore the true Worship of God, after many years Interruption, when it was not only disused, but almost forgotten, 2 *Chron.* 29. The like also did King *Josias* with the like Zeal, and received the like Approbation and Testimony from God.

This therefore is the first and chief Duty of Supream Magistrates, *viz.* To maintain the true Worship and Service of God, and to reform whatsoever Corruptions and Abuses they find to have crept into it.

*Secondly*; Another Duty is, to appoint Men of approved Ability and Integrity to be in Authority under them. For, because Kings cannot be omnipresent, nor omniscient, it is therefore necessary that they should hear with other Mens Ears, and see with other Mens Eyes, and act with other Mens Hands; and therefore they ought to make choice of such as are Men of known Fidelity and Wisdom, to commit so great a Charge unto. For be the Fountain never so clear, yet the Streams must needs be polluted, if they run through filthy Channels: Kings therefore should do according to the Counsel of *Jethro*, *Exod.* 18. 21. *Provide out of all the People able Men, such as fear God, Men of Truth, hating Covetousness; and place such as these over them.*

But where this course is not taken, but such are intrusted with Command and Authority, who either neglect the Government of the People, or oppress them in it, what doth

doth the Prince but give away the half or more of his Kingdom? for what is not ruled, is lost. Neither should these substitute Magistrates be too numerous; for the very Multitude of them may possibly be more burdensome to the People, than helpful to the Prince.

*Thirdly*; Magistrates ought to distribute Justice impartially, to maintain the Cause of the poor Oppressed, and to restrain the Insolence of their proud Oppressors; to crush them by his just Authority, who would crush others by their unjust Tyranny. This is a truly Royal and Princely Vertue, which will prove not only an Ornament to the Crown, but a Safety to the Throne: *For the Throne is established by Righteousness*, saith the Wise Man, *Proverbs* 16. 12.

*Fourthly*; Princes and Magistrates ought to be most exemplary for Vertue and Piety. The Eyes of all the People are upon them, and their Actions have as great an influence upon their Subjects as their Laws. *Facere recte civis suos Princeps optimus faciendo docet; cumq; sit imperior maximus, exemplo major est*, saith *Paterculus*; A good Prince teacheth his Subjects to live well, by living well himself; and although he be greatest in Command, is yet still greater in Example. And therefore he is doubly bound to vertuous Actions, both by his Conscience, and by his Condition: The one as he respects his own Personal good; the other as he tenders the good of his People, who commonly take their Measures from their Superiours, and think Imitation of their Practices, to be a more acceptable Service, than Obedience to their Laws.

Vell. Paterculus, l. 2.

But I cannot insist on every particular Duty of Princes and Magistrates, neither perhaps would it be here very proper.

In a word therefore, They ought to fear God, above all, to seek his Honour and Glory, who hath raised them to the highest pitch of humane Honour and Glory; to be prudent



## An Exposition upon

prudent in their Designs, courageous in their Performances, faithful in their Promises, wise in their Counsels, observant of their own Laws, careful of their Subjects Welfare, merciful to the Oppressed, favourable to the Good, terrible to the Evil, and just towards all. Let them remember these two things, That they are Gods, and therefore should rule and govern as they judg God himself would do; were he visible here upon Earth; and that they are Men, and therefore must give an account unto the great God of all that Trust he hath reposed in them. And certainly if they be careful to perform every part of their Duty, though we may look only at the Splendour and Glory of their State, yet the Cares and Troubles that attend it, will be found so great and weighty, that we shall find it all reason in the World to make the Burden of their Crowns lighter by our ready and chearful Obedience. It was well observed by the Lord *Verulam*, That Princes are like the Heavenly Bodies, which cause good or evil Times, and which have much Veneration, but no Rest.

*Essay of  
Empire.*

But then for subordinate Magistrates, who receive their Authority from the Supream, and are between the People and the Prince, as the Prince is between the People and God; we have already heard how they ought to be qualified; *Exod. 18. 21. They must be Men fearing God, Men of Truth, and hating Covetousness.* Their chief Duty is to see that the Laws be executed according to their full intent, without respect of Persons, neither fearing to punish the Rich, nor sparing to punish the Poor, making no difference between one Person and another, where the Cause makes none. For whosoever are thus partial, want that Courage and Firmness that ought to be in a Magistrate, and should make him as inflexible as the Rule of Justice it self is; neither being frightened by the Power or Threats of those who are Great, nor melted or softened with the Cries of the Mean, but moved only by the Cause. And therefore  
the

the Scripture hath exprefly forbidden them, *Exod. 23. 3. to countenance a poor Man in his Cause* : For Pity may fometimes as much bribe and corrupt Judgment, as Rewards. They ought to divest themfelves of all Paflions, private Interests and Affections, to be impartial in the Execution of Juftice upon the mightieft Offender as well as the meanest ; upon their deareft Friends and Relations, as well as upon Strangers or Enemies. This will give Strength and Authority to the Laws, which elfe are but Cobwebs made to catch the fmaller Flies, while the great and ftrong ones break eafily through. This is the way to conciliate Reverence and Veneration to the Laws and Government, which in our days are moft contumeliously defpifed and vilified ; and by this courfe *Judgment fhall run down our Streets as Water, and Righteoufnefs as a mighty Stream*. In brief, becaufe I would not too long inlift upon this Subject (tho it be large and various) let Magiftrates of what Rank foever they be, ferioufly confider that weighty Charge given them by God himfelf, *2 Sam. 23. 3. The God of Israel faith, the Rock of Israel fpake to me, He that ruleth over Men muft be juft, ruling in the Fear of God.*

Let us, in the next place, confider the Duties of Subjects towards their Magiftrates and Rulers. And thefe are in the general three ; Honour, Obedience, and Prayer to God for them.

*First* ; We muft honour and reverence them, it is the Apoftle's Command, *1 Pet. 2. 17. Fear God. Honour the King*. We muft give unto them a threefold Honour ; in our Thoughts, in our Speeches, and with our Substance.

1. We muft honour and reverence them in our Thoughts, looking upon them as the lively and vifible Images of God upon Earth. Indeed the Divine Perfections are the higheft Object of our Reverence ; and therefore as you would efteem and honour any for their Wifdom, or for their Ho-

K k

linefs,

liness, because these are some Lineaments and Draughts of the Image of God; so you ought to reverence those to whom the Almighty God hath communicated his adorable Power and Authority; for this also is the Image of God in them, yea, and tho it should so happen that they bear no other Resemblance unto God, neither in his Wisdom, nor Justice, nor Holiness, but are wicked, cruel, tyrannical and unwise; yet that Power and Authority alone with which they stand invested, challengeth our Respect and Reverence; for in this at least they are like unto God; and whosoever slights and despiseth them, slights and despiseth one of God's glorious Attributes shining forth in them. We ought not to harbour any under-valuing or ill Thoughts of them. But where a People are so happy to be governed by those Magistrates who have a whole Constellation of Divine Attributes shining in them, Magistrates that are just and merciful, wise and holy, they ought to give unto them the greatest Reverence that can belong to Creatures, and to esteem and respect them next unto God himself. But altho all these should be wanting, yet that Power and Authority which God hath delegated unto them, is truly reverend and awful: And the wise Man hath commanded

Eccles. 10. us, *Not to curse the King, not in our Thoughts.*

20.

2. We ought to honour and reverence them in our Speeches; speaking what Good of them we know, and prudently concealing their Vices, or their Infirmities. For to what else can it tend when we blaze abroad the Faults of our Governours, but only to loosen the Affections of their Subjects from them? And how much more horrid a Wickedness is it then, falsely to calumniate them, and by reviling Whispers to fly-blow the Ears of their Subjects, and by little Arts and suspicious Intimations, and half-Sentences, to insinuate politick Jealousies into the Minds of the People, and to possess them with nothing but Fears and sad Apprehensions of what Miseries and Sufferings are coming

coming upon them, through the Male-administration of Affairs, and either the design or neglect of their Governours? All which tends to nothing but to make the People either disdain or hate them. I beseech you beware that you do not by Misinterpretations traduce the Actions of your lawful Rulers, nor hearken to those who do, whose Words and whose Breath serves only to blow up the Coals of Civil Dissention, which, if Mercy prevent not, will break forth again into a raging and devouring War. Beware that you suffer none of those Leeches to fasten upon you, whose very Mouths will draw Blood. We have seen the sad Experience of it already, and may justly fear, when we see them use the same Methods, that they intend the same Effects. The Apostle gives such a black brand, 2 Pet. 2. 10. *Presumptuous are they, self-willed; they are not afraid to speak evil of Dignities.*

3. We ought to honour them with our Substance, when the necessity of their Affairs and publick Concernments call for Supply: And indeed this is but a Debt we owe them, for we have somewhat of theirs in our Hands, and it is no unjust Demand for them to require their own. Tributes and publick Payments are theirs, when made so by Law; for the rest is ours no otherwise than by the same Law; and therefore to withhold what is thus legally bestowed on them, is no other than Theft, and an unjust detaining of what is none of your own. Hence our Saviour commands us to *render unto Cesar, the things that are Cesar's*, Mat. 22. 21. And the Apostle, Rom. 13. 7. *Render unto all their due; Tribute to whom Tribute, Custom to whom Custom, Fear to whom Fear, Honour to whom Honour is due.* And altho possibly sometimes the Burden may fall heavy, yet we ought freely and chearfully to contribute; partly considering that such is the Priviledg of our Kingdoms, that nothing is imposed upon us by Violence, but given by ourselves, and is our own Act; and partly, that whatsoever

## An Exposition upon

we possess, we owe the Enjoyment of it to the Blessing of Government.

This therefore is the first Duty we owe unto Magistrates, *viz.* Honour and Reverence.

*Secondly*; Another general Duty we owe them, is Obedience; and for this we have express and frequent Commands, as for any Duty that belongs to Christian Conversation. *Let every Soul be subject to the higher Powers; for there is no Power but of God; the Powers that be, are ordained of God. Submit your selves to every Ordinance of Man for the Lord's sake; whether it be to the King, as supreme; or unto Governours, as sent by him; for so is the Will of God.* Neither is there any Cause whatsoever can supercede our Obedience: for if their Commands be lawful, we are to obey them by performing what they require: if they be never so wicked and unlawful, we are to obey them, by suffering what they threaten. \* But because I have had other occasions largely to treat on this Subject, I shall not now further prosecute it.

\* Sermon on  
1 Thess. 5.  
22.  
Sermon on  
Jan 30. at  
Christ's  
Church in  
Dublin.

*Thirdly*; Another great Duty of Subjects, is fervent and earnest Prayer for them; so the Apostle, 1 Tim. 2. 1. *I exhort therefore, that first of all, Supplications, Prayers, Intercessions, and giving of Thanks be made for all Men, for Kings, and all that are in Authority; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable Life in all Godliness and Honesty.*

But why for Kings? It might seem more necessary, that Prayers should be poured out for those that are afflicted and distressed, who have nothing else to relieve them besides God and Prayer: But Kings are in an high and prosperous Condition; many seek their Favour, and all fear their Displeasure.

Yet it is very needful to pray for them; for indeed they stand in much more need of our Prayers than private Persons do. For,

*First*, The Charge laid upon them is greater, and the Burdens

Burdens pressing them, are heavier than what lie upon other Men ; and therefore they should be eased and helped by our Prayers. What St. Paul saith, 2 Cor. 11. 28. *That he had the care of all the Churches upon him* ; we may of a King, that he hath the care of the whole Church, and of the whole State too incumbent upon him. A Crown is an heavy, though a glittering Ornament ; and how can it be otherwise, when the Wel-fare of so many thousands depends upon them and their Counsels ? It is their Work to provide for the Execution of Laws, the Exercise of Religion, the restraining and punishing of all Impiety and Ungodliness : They must see that Right and Equity be administred, that no Injustice nor Violence be committed, but all Affairs guided according to Law and Righteousness ; these are the constant Cares that attend Government : and that which adds to all these Burdens, and makes them out of measure sinking and intolerable, is, that all these Burdens must sometimes be born under the Discontents and Murmurs of an unsatisfied People. We had need therefore to pray earnestly unto God, that so great a Trust and so great a Burden being committed unto Magistrates, they may be indowed by him, through whom Kings reign, with Abilities to discharge their Trust to his Glory, and the Comfort of their Subjects.

*Secondly,* The Account they must render at the last Day is greater, and therefore they more need our Prayers than other Men. What they do is usually of general Concernment, or else of general Influence ; and therefore they must answer not only for themselves, but for almost the whole Nation, who either obey the Commands, or follow the Examples of their Governours : We should therefore especially pray for them, that having a greater account to make than other Men, they may at that day appear before the King of Kings with Boldness, and pass from a corruptible Crown, to a Crown of Glory and Immortality.

*Thirdly,*

## An Exposition upon

*Thirdly*, Their Temptations are more, and therefore they more need our Prayers than other Men. For having all at Command; the Pleasures, the Splendor, and Gayety of the World, are more likely to be Snares to them than others, who converse not so much with them. And besides, the Devil is more assiduous and subtil in his Temptations towards them than others: because if they can be perverted by him, they will prove great and most effectual Instruments to promote his Kingdom. And therefore in *Micajah's* Parable, 1 *Kings* 22. no sooner had God asked the Question, Who shall perswade *Ahab*? but there steps forth an evil Spirit, and undertakes the Employment. Satan loves to be busy about Princes and Rulers, because there he thinks he can make the greatest Earnings. To tempt private Persons, is but to tempt by Retail; but to tempt Princes, and to seduce the Rulers of a Land, this is to destroy by wholesale: And therefore as they are exposed to more Temptations, so should they be supported and strengthened by more Prayers.

Let us therefore heartily perform this Duty to them, and for them, a Duty not more beneficial to them, than to our selves and the whole Nation: for if we can prevail for a Blessing upon them, we our selves shall certainly share in it, if by our fervent Prayers we can obtain of God to bestow on them Wisdom and Zeal, Holiness and Piety, Peace and Prosperity. Certainly our own share in these Mercies is worth the Venture we send for them; and we shall then sit safely under the Shadow of our King, and he himself under the Shadow of the Almighty.

I have heretofore told you, that this fifth Commandment comprehends in it not only the mutual Offices between Parents and Children, but generally all the Duties to which both Superiours and Inferiours stand reciprocally bound: And therefore having already spoken of the mutual Duties of Parents and Children, of Magistrates and Subjects; I shall

shall now proceed to consider the Duties of Husband and Wife: for in this Relation also, though it come nearer to an Equality than the former, there is a Superiority on the Man's part, and Subjection due unto him from the Woman.

And here, whilst I am treating of this Subject, I beseech you give not way to any Levity of Mind, or Vanity of Thoughts; think it not a light jocular thing, as too often the Marriage-Relation, and the Offices that appertain unto it, are accounted; for it is matter of Duty that I am now propounding unto you; and matter of Duty is no less than matter of Life and Death eternal. And therefore I charge you that you attend unto it, not to get Advantages of Sport and Merriment one with another, and to object them each to other in a ludicrous and jesting way, as it is every-where too common a Custom; but attend unto it as a matter of as great Seriousness and Weight, as any that belongs unto the right ordering of your Christian Conversation; a matter that presseth the Consciences to the due Observance and Practice of it; and, if despised or neglected, will press your Souls under Guilt, and sink them under Wrath. And certainly they who are so vain as to think the Duties of this Relation to be of no great Concernment, must needs likewise be so impious as to impute trifling to the Holy Spirit of God, who hath so frequently and with so much Earnestness and Instance, recommended them unto us. There is scarce any one Epistle wherein the Apostles doe not particularly insist on these things; and certainly what was worthy their Care to write and teach, is worthy our Care to learn and practise.

The Duties therefore of married Persons are either special or common: Special, are those which are the Duties only of one Party to the other; and that either of the Husband to the Wife, or the Wife to the Husband. Common, are those which belong to both, and are by both to be mutually performed.



## An Exposition upon

I shall first begin with those Duties which belong to an Husband towards his Wife. And they are these;

*First, Conjugal Love.* Indeed Love is a beautiful Ornament to all Relations, but it is the Foundation and first Principle of this: It is Love which ought at first to tie the Marriage-Knot; and it is Love alone that can afterwards make it easy. No other respect whatsoever, can keep it from wringing and galling us. And although want of Love cannot dissolve the Bond, yet it doth the Joy and Comfort of a married State. Now of all the Objects that are allowed us to love here on Earth, a Wife is the chiefest; yea, to be loved above Parents, Children and Friends, and the dearest of all other Relations; *Gen. 2. 24. Therefore shall a Man leave his Father and Mother, and shall cleave unto his Wife.* And if you would know the full measure of this Love, the Apostle hath prescribed it, *Eph. 5. 28. So ought Men to love their Wives as their own Bodies: and ver. 33. Let every one of you in particular love his Wife as himself;* you must be as careful and tender of their Good, as of your own; and resent any Injury done unto them, as much as if it were done unto your selves. And indeed there is great reason for it; for Marriage makes of two, one mystical Person; it doth but compensate our Damage, and restore the Rib to our Side again. And therefore, by Marriage two are said to be made one Flesh; *Mark 10. 8. They twain shall be one Flesh: so then they are no more twain, but one Flesh.* And therefore all Violence and Out-rage against a Wife, (into which the rude and boistrous Fury of some brutish Men doth too often break) is as unnatural, as if you should see a Man beat and wound and gash himself: And certainly they are mad and distracted Passions which take Revenge upon themselves. *Ephes. 5. 29. No Man yet ever hated his own Flesh;* that is, no Man acting rationally and as becomes a Man, but loveth and cherisheth it. So that we are to love our Wives with the same Tenderness and Naturalness

turalness of Affection, as our own Beings, and they should be as dear to us as our selves : And if you would have this high Affection mounted a degree higher ; see *ver. 25. Husbands love your Wives, even as Christ also loved the Church, and gave himself for it.* If a natural Affection will not suffice, behold here a supernatural one, and the greatest Instance of Love that ever was expressed or conceived, brought to be the Rule and Pattern of ours. Christ loved the Church, his Spouse ; although there were many Spots, Blemishes, and Imperfections in her ; he loved her so as to leave his Father, and cleave to his Wife : he loved her better than himself and his own Life, and shed his most precious Blood for her ; and rather than the Wrath of God should fall upon his beloved Spouse, he thrusts himself between, and receives these heavy Blows on his own Person : So ought Men also to love their Wives, so infinitely if it were possible, but because it is not so, sincerely. And therefore ;

1<sup>st</sup>. They must love them, though they often bewray many Weaknesses and Imperfections, which they ought meekly to bear with, though they must not countenance nor encourage them. Love will cover a multitude of Faults, and as long as they are but Faults and not Crimes, we ought no more to divorce our Affections than our Persons from them. There is indeed a touchy Love, which will cause great Wrath for very small Offences ; but usually such kind of Love turns into Bitterness and Exasperation : therefore Offences of this Nature should prudently be passed by, only with a glancing Reproof, or with a Silence that shall be more instructive than Noise and Clamour : Here the Apostle exhorts Husbands ; *Col. 3. 19. Husbands, love your Wives, and be not bitter against them.*

2<sup>dly</sup>. We should so love them, as not to upbraid them with the Necessities or Incumbrances of a married Life, but be content to abridge our selves of our former Freedom, and to forgo our former Privileges, either of Plenty or

## An Exposition upon

Pleasure, which we enjoyed in a single Condition, without reproaching them with it. Many Fools there are who fancy nothing but Joys and Delights in a married Life; but when they enter into it, and find many unexpected Troubles, and that they cannot live either at so much ease, or with so much Splendour as before, think to right themselves by perpetual Brawls with their Wives, imputing the cause to them, and charging on them all the Burdens and Inconveniences under which they both labour, and of which commonly the Woman hath the greater share. Now this is not to love as Christ loved the Church, who for her sake stripp'd himself of his Glory, and voluntarily humbled himself, first to the Dust, and then to the Death, the cruel and cursed Death of the Cross.

*3dly.* We ought so to love them, as to interpose and step in between them and Danger, and rather suffer it to fall upon our selves than them; for so Christ loved the Church, and gave himself for it, redeeming it from the Wrath of God, by his own undergoing it, and delivering it from Death, by suffering Death for it.

*4thly.* We ought so to love them, as to endeavour to promote the spiritual Good of their Souls, and by good Counsels and Instructions insinuate into them the Love of Piety and Holiness, that so as Christ sanctifieth the Church his Spouse, we may also sanctify ours, and present them unto God without Spot or Wrinkle, or any such thing.

In these four things we are to love our Wives even as Christ loved his Church, by bearing with and pardoning their Weaknesses, by being willing to submit to many Inconveniences for their sakes, by interposing our selves between them and Danger: And lastly, by endeavouring to promote their spiritual Good and Benefit. And thus much of the first Duty which is Love, on which I have insisted the longer, because it comprehends all other Duties in it. For where there is this sincere and conjugal Affection, al-

though

though it may have different Methods of expressing it self, according to the different tempers of Men ; yet it will certainly in this, as in all other cases, command the whole Train and Retinue of other Affections to wait upon it, and see that nothing be wanting to the Good of the Object on which it is fixed. I shall therefore be the briefer in the rest.

*Secondly*, Another Duty of the Husband is provident Care for his Wife : He ought (saith the Apostle) to nourish and cherish her, as Christ doth the Church ; he must therefore impart unto her according to his Rank and Ability, whatsoever may be for her Necessity or Comfort, and not waste that in Riot and Excess among his lewd and wicked Companions, Companions that the Devil hath given him, which ought to be for the Support of her whom God hath given him for his Companion ; and who in the mean while hath nothing to feed on but her Sorrows, nothing to drink but her Tears. See how deeply the Apostle hath stigmatized such Wretches ; *1 Tim. 5. 8. If any Man provide not for his own ; and specially for those of his own House, he hath denied the Faith, and is worse than an Infidel.*

*Thirdly*, Another Duty that Husbands owe their Wives, is Protection from Dangers, when they are in Jeopardy ; and therefore when the *Amalekites* had burnt *Ziklag*, and with the rest of the Prey had taken *David's* Wives ; he pursues them with no more than six hundred Men, though they were a great Host, and rescues his Wives from their Captivity, *1 Sam. 30. 18.* And indeed the Weakness and Feebleness of that Sex being more helpless in Dangers than ours, and less able to relieve themselves, calls for this ready Aid and Succour from us ; and he who is so churlish as not to afford it, is so unnatural also as to suffer a part of himself to perish. A Wife is compared in Scripture to a fruitful Vine ; now a Vine is a weak tender Plant, and requires Support, and the Husband should be as the House-side for

## An Exposition upon

her Stay and Support; and therefore Woman was at first made of a Rib taken from under the Man's Arm; the Office of the Arm is to repel and keep off Injuries, which signifies unto us that the Husband ought to defend his Wife from all Wrongs and Injuries that she may be exposed unto.

*Fourthly*; Another Duty is Instruction and Direction. Therefore the Husband is called her Head, the Seat and Fountain of Knowledg and Wisdom, *Ephes. 5. 23. The Husband is the Head of the Wife, even as Christ is the Head of the Church.* And therefore as all Direction and Consolation is derived from Christ; so should the Husband likewise derive down and communicate Knowledg, and Comfort, and Guidance to the Wife; called therefore her Guide, *Prov. 2. 17.* And St. Peter requires of Husbands that they should dwell with their Wives according to Knowledg, to be able to advise and inform them in all emergent Cases, especially concerning God and their Souls: Whence St. Paul enjoins Wives, *1 Corinth. 14. 35. That if they will learn any thing, they must ask their Husbands at home*; and therefore much more is it required of the Husband, that he should have laid up a good Stock of Knowledg, and be able to teach them, lest such as creep into Houses and lead captive silly Women, insnare their Wives. For such is the subtilty of Deceivers, following therein the Method of the old Serpent, that they first begin with the Woman, and then make use of her to seduce the Man: for Heresy, as all other Sins, does first inveigle the Affections, and then by them corrupts the Reason. And therefore the Husband should be well grounded and principled with Knowledg, that he may keep his Wife from being led away by the crafty Subtilty of those who lye in wait to deceive, and who by good Words and fair speeches, affected Phrases, and gingling Expressions, that have nothing in them, but Sound and Errour, pervert the Hearts of the Simple.

But

But if (as it sometimes happens) God hath indowed the Wife with a greater measure of Prudence, and solid and substantial Knowledg, than the Husband; it is then his Part to hearken to her Advice, and to yield not indeed to the Authority of the Counsellour, as she is bound to do, but to the Authority of the Counsel: And this she ought to tender him with all Respect and Submission, not having Power to injoin what she knows to be best and fittest, but only with Modesty propounding it, and with Meekness persuading him to imbrace it.

*Fifthly*; Another Duty of the Husband, is Tenderness and Mildness towards his Wife, not causlessly grieving her either by Speeches or Actions. That is a wretched Family, where those who are joined in the same Yoak, spurn and kick at one another. If the Wife be careful in performing her Duty, there belongs to her a kind and loving Acceptation of it, and Praise and Commendation for it; or, if she sometimes should fail, she ought not to be rebuked with Bitterness, but with Meekness, and in such a way as the Reproof should shew more of Sorrow than of Anger. But perpetual Brawlings and Contentions, besides, that they wholly imbitter this State of Life, and eat out all the Comfort of it, instead of preventing Offences for the future, do usually provoke and exasperate to more, and are perhaps a greater Fault in the Husband, than that which he exclaims at in his Wife; besides, it will certainly indispose them, both to the Performances of those Duties which belong unto them in their general and particular Callings. It will hinder their Prayers; for how can they lift up their Hands without Wrath, as the Apostle commands, *1 Tim. 2. 8.* when they burn in Choler one against the other? How can they pray to God for Blessings upon each other, when they have been cursing and reviling each other? And as for the Duties of their particular Callings; do we not see, that in those Families where this baneful Contention reigns, they are

## An Exposition upon

are commonly neglected, and all runs to wrack and ruine, out of a kind of Revenge that one Party thinks to take upon the other. The Husband out of Discontent will not provide, nor the Wife manage; and so nothing is cared for, but only how they may quarrel and rail at each other. A Misery that many Families fall into, through the indiscreet Heats and Fierceness of the Man upon every trivial Offence of the Wife, though perhaps it was sometimes unthought of, and sometimes unavoidable.

*Sixthly*; Another Duty of the Husband, is to give due Respect and Honour unto his Wife, *1 Pet. 3. 7. Give Honour unto the Wife as unto the weaker Vessel*; for being weak, she ought to be used with the more Respect and Gentleness. Think honourably of her, as the Person whom God saw best and fittest for you in all the World; and be not tempted so much as in a Thought, to believe that any other could have been either so proper, or so beneficial unto you: Speak honourably of her, not divulging any of her Failings and Imperfections, to her Discredit; but giving her the due Praise of those Vertues and Graces that are in her. For he that disgraceth his Wife, disparageth himself; and every one will censure him as guilty of Folly, either in chusing or in governing her. Treat her honourably, neither making thy self a Servant to her Humour, for that will dishonour thee; nor making her a Slave to thine, for that is to dishonour her; but use her as thy Bosom-Friend, thy indeared Companion, and in every thing but Authority, equal to thy self.

*Seventhly*; The last Duty of an Husband, is prudent maintaining and managing his Authority. His Authority over his Wife is God's, who hath intrusted him with it: and our Saviour illustrates his own Authority over the Church, by the Authority of an Husband over his Wife, *Ephes. 5.* And therefore it is not basely to be betrayed, nor to be maintained with Rigour and a tyrannical Violence. But the  
right

right and most effectual way of keeping up this Authority, is by Prudence and Gravity, by Soberness and Piety, and a staid, exemplary and strict Life. This will cause a reverent Esteem and Veneration in the Wife, and in the whole Family; whereas an humourfom Lightness at one time, and as humourfom Severity at an other, will but expose us to Contempt for the one, and Hatred for the other. It is an hard matter for him to be revered by others, who doth not first reverence himself; for he that will prostitute himself by foolish and ridiculous Humours, or by vile and wicked Actions, either Injustice or Intemperance, or Lying, &c. it is impossible but that he must fall under the Scorn of his nearest Relations: And therefore *Nabal's* Churlishness and Drunkenness, made even wise *Abigail* to call him Fool, *Nabal is his Name, and Folly is with him*. But where there is an excellent mixture of Prudence and Piety together, the one to be a Guide, and the other to be an Example, these will make a Man truly awful and reverend, and induce the Wife and the whole Family to esteem, and to imitate him. And thus much for the Duties of the Husband towards the Wife.

Let us next consider the Duties of the Wife towards the Husband, and they are these which follow.

*First*; Subjection and Obedience: And this is required from them as absolutely and peremptorily as unto Christ himself; *Ephes. 5. 22. Wives submit your selves unto your own Husbands, as unto the Lord*. And again, *ver. 24. Therefore as the Church is subject unto Christ; so let the Wives be unto their own Husbands, in every thing*. And not only doth the Apostle give Authority and Command for it, but inforceth it by sundry Reasons. As,

1<sup>st</sup>. The Woman was made out of the Man, and therefore ought to be subject unto him, *1 Corinth. 11. 3, 8. The Head of the Woman is the Man; for the Man is not of the Woman,*



## An Exposition upon

*man, but the Woman of the Man : She is Bone of his Bone, and Flesh of his Flesh ; and therefore ought to pay him the Homage of Obedience and Subjection for those Materials of her Being, which she first received of him.*

2ly. Because the Woman was made for the Man, and therefore ought to be subject to him : So in the next *Verse, Neither was the Man created for the Woman, but the Woman for the Man.* She owes her Being to the Man's Necessities and Convenience ; and the great End of her Creation, next to the Glory of God, was that she might be helpful and profitable to Man ; *Gen. 2. 18. It is not good that Man should be alone ; I will make him an help meet for him : And therefore having received their Beings for the sake of Man, they ought to be subject unto him.*

3ly. Another Reason which the Apostle gives, is taken from the Priority of the Man's Creation, *1 Tim. 2. 12, 13. I suffer not a Woman to usurp Authority over the Man ; for Adam was first formed, and then Eve : And therefore in the same Rank of Creatures, it is but fit that he should be first in Dignity, who was first in Nature. And,*

4ly. Because by the occasion of the Woman, Sin entred into the World : So *ver. 14. Adam was not deceived, but the Woman being deceived, was in the Transgression.* And therefore it is but fit and just that she who made all Mankind disobedient against God, should her self be made subject and obedient unto Man. And this Sentence we find inflicted upon her as a Punishment for her Transgression, *Gen. 3. 16. Thy desire shall be to thy Husband, and he shall rule over thee.* Not as though there would have been no Subjection due from her to Man, if Sin had not entred into the World by her means, for the Reasons before alledged do manifestly prove the contrary ; but that now her Subjection is a Curse ; and whereas before it would have been easy and pleasing unto her, now it is become burdensome and grievous ; Man being by Sin made more humourfome, and harder to

be

be pleased, and she being made less able and willing to do it, God justly and righteously punishing her, by imposing on her a Work which she herself hath made irksome and difficult. And let me add to these Reasons of the Apostle,

5. That the Man's Titles do imply Superiority and Authority over the Wife: Such as Lord, *1 Pet. 3. 6.* Sara obeyed Abraham, *calling him Lord.* He is likewise called the Head and Guide of his Wife, *1 Cor. 11. 3. Prov. 2. 17.*

6. The Husband represents Christ, the Wife the Church, and that in this very particular of Superiority and Subjection: And therefore as the Church is subject unto Christ, so let the Wife be to her own Husband.

And thus we see their Subjection abundantly proved, both by natural and spiritual Arguments.

And in token of this Subjection the Apostle tells us, *1 Cor. 11. 10.* that the Woman was to have Power over her Head, *because of the Angels.* Which place, especially the latter Clause of it, is diversly interpreted. But I think all agree in this, That this Power which they were to have on their Heads was a Veil or Covering, which at other times, but most especially in the Congregation, Women ought to wear on their Heads; and which in the Primitive Times covered not only their Heads, but all their Face, as a Guard to their Modesty, and a Screen to keep off loose and wanton Eyes. And this Veil is called Power, to signify that they were under the Power and Authority of their Husbands. But the Men were uncovered in their Assemblies, as the Apostle tells us, *ver. 4.* to signify that they had nothing over them, but were superiour to all visible Creatures, and subject only unto God. This Power, or Veil, Women were to wear because of the Angels. Not as

\* *Tertullian* did grossly conceive from that mistaken Text, *Gen. 6. 2.* to hide their Beauty from the sight and inspection of Angels (for what Veil could do that, or how can Angels be affected with Corporal Beauty?) But either by

\* Propter Angelos, scilicet quos legimus à Deo & Cœlo excidisse ob concupiscentiam foeminarum — Debet ergo adumbrari facies tam periculosa quæ usq; ad Cœlum scandala jaculata est. *Tertul. de Virg. vel. num. 7.*

## An Exposition upon

Isa. 6. 2.

Angels, are meant the Ministers of the Church, before whom they are to shew Modesty and Bashfulness; or else perhaps the Celestial Angels, who are always present and attending in the Assemblies and Congregations of the Faithful; and therefore Women should not do any thing unbecoming and unseemly before them: Or lastly, because the Angels themselves do reverence Christ, who is their Head, and in token of their Subjection unto him, are said to veil and cover their Faces: And therefore Women also in token of their Subjection to their Husbands, who are their Heads, as Christ is of the Church, should likewise cover their Heads and Faces with a Veil. So we find *Gen. 24. 65.* that when *Rebekah* saw *Isaac* coming towards her, she took a Veil and covered her self, as a sign of her Subjection to him.

And this Subjection is recommended unto them by the Example of holy Women, to whose Practice they ought to conform their own: So *1 Pet. 3. 6.* Holy Women who trusted in God, being in Subjection to their own Husbands. And *St. Paul* gives it in Charge to *Titus*, to exhort Wives that they *be discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to their own Husbands*, *Tit. 2. 5.* And himself exhorts them to the same Duty, *Coloss. 3. 18. Wives, submit your selves unto your own Husbands, as it is fit in the Lord.*

These Commands are so many and so express, that there is scarce any other Duty which the Scripture doth urge with so much Instance and Earnestness, with such pressing Reasons and inforcing Motives, as this of the Wives Obedience. The Duty is frequently express, *Submit your selves*; and the manner of performing it, *Be subject as to the Lord*; *submit in the Lord*; which Phrase carries in it three things.

A Motive.

A Direction. And,

A Limitation.

*First;*

*First* ; A Motive to Obedience : It is done to the Lord. And tho through the forward and peevish Humours of the Husband, they may have no other Encouragement to observe and obey him ; yet to the conscientious Wife this will be Encouragement enough, that the Lord will accept and reward their Obedience ; their heavenly Husband Jesus Christ will account it as a Service done unto him. For Marriage being a Type of our Myſtical Union unto Chriſt, he eſpecially is concerned that the Duties of that Relation be performed ſo, as to bear ſome Proportion to that Spiritual Myſtery.

*Secondly* ; A Direction how to perform it ; it muſt be as to the Lord. She muſt obey her Husband not only with a deſign of pleaſing him, but the Lord Chriſt. For were it not that God commands it from them as part of their Duty and Obedience to him, it might ſometimes ſeem very fit that humourſom and ſelf-will'd Men ſhould be croſt, and that thoſe who have no other Reaſon but their Will, ſhould fail of that Obſervance and Obſequiouſneſs which they tyrannically expect. But then conſider, it is not the Husband only that commands, but the Lord, and the Wife muſt eye his Sovereign Authority, through the Authority of her Husband ; and then it will appear, that tho there be no neceſſity in what is required, yet there is a neceſſity ſhe ſhould perform what is required.

*Thirdly* ; The words import likewise a Limitation of her Obedience. The Wife muſt ſubmit and obey, but in the Lord, and as to the Lord : That is, only in lawful things, wherein by her Obedience to her Husband, ſhe may not offend againſt God. And excepting this, in all other caſes the Wife is abſolutely bound to obey the Will and Commands of her Husband to the utmoſt of her Power. 'Tis true he abuſeth his Authority, if he command what is unneceſſary and unfit ; but yet neither her Unwillingneſs to perform them, nor her judging them inconvenient to be

## An Exposition upon

done, can excuse her, or exempt her from the Obligation that lies upon her of a ready Obedience; nothing can do this but the Unlawfulness or Impossibility of what is enjoined. In all other things, altho they be never so contrary to her Humour and Inclination, she is bound by the Law of God and Nature to obey, and to submit, if not her Judgment, yet at least her Practice to the Will of her Husband, whether she think it fit or unfit to be done, as long as it is not unlawful; unless she can meekly perswade her Husband to revoke his Command, she is obliged to perform it. Otherwise when the Apostle commands Wives to be subject to their Husbands in every thing, it would signify no more than in every thing which they think fit; and this certainly is no greater a Subjection than every Husband would readily yield to his Wife, and falls infinitely short of the Apostle's Intent, who requires this Subjection of the Wife to the Husband in every thing, as the Church is subject unto Christ; which certainly is not in every thing she thinks fit; neither ought she to take upon her to judge, or reject his Laws, but to fulfil them.

This therefore is the first and most comprehensive Duty of a Wife, Subjection and Obedience.

*Secondly*; Another Duty of the Wife towards her Husband, is Respect and Reverence of his Person, *Ephes. 5. 33. Let the Wife see that she reverence her Husband.*

Now Reverence consists in two things, Esteem and Fear.

*First*; She ought to cherish an high Esteem of him, if not for his Gifts and Graces, yet at least for that Relation in which he stands to her, as her Lord, and her Head, superior to her by God's Appointment and Ordinance: Yea, she must look upon him as that Person whom God out of all the numerous Millions of Mankind, hath particularly chosen and selected for her, and one whom he saw fittest and best to be her Head and Guide.

*Secondly*;

*Secondly* ; Another part of Reverence is Fear, not a servile slavish Fear, for that is inconsistent with Love, but an awful and a loving Fear, which will shew it self in two things.

*1st.* In her Care to please him, endeavouring to conform her Actions to his Inclinations so far forth, as they are not repugnant to the supream Duty which she owes to God ; *1 Cor. 7. 34. She that is married careth for the things of this World, how she may please her Husband :* And therefore she will endeavour how to comport her self in her Speeches, and in her Gestures, and in her whole Demeanour, so as may render her most grateful and most amiable to him.

*adly.* In her Joy in pleasing him, and Grief in offending him. Indeed a good Wife should be like a Mirror : A Mirror you know hath no Image of its own, but receives its Stamp and Image from the Face that looks into it ; so should a good Wife endeavour to frame her outward Deportment, and her inward Affections, according to her Husband, to rejoice when he rejoiceth, to be sad when he mourns, and to grieve when he is offended ; this is that Reverence which Wives owe to their Husbands, thinking highly and honourably of them for their place sake, and endeavouring to avoid and shun whatever may offend them : and therefore those who are cross and vexatious, and either by Clamours and contentious Speeches, or by thwarting and peevish Actions grieve and sadden the Hearts of their Husbands ; let them know that they highly provoke the Lord, who hath commanded Reverence and Respect to be paid to the Husband as his Type, and as part of that Reverence and Respect which is due unto himself.

*Thirdly* ; Another Duty of a Wife is Helpfulness to her Husband : she ought indeed to be a Help to him in every thing ; to his Soul in furthering his Graces, and wisely and opportunely admonishing him to his Duty, at least by an holy and blameless Conversation ; so commending the Go-  
spel

## An Exposition upon

pel of Christ unto her Husband, that at length he may begin to esteem and reverence that Piety which hath so adorned and qualified his Wife: And *what knowest thou, O Wife, whether* by such an exemplary Life as this *thou mayst save thine Husband*, as the Apostle speaks, 1 Cor. 7. 16. To his Body, by cherishing and tendering of it; to his good Name, by endeavouring to augment and preserve it, reporting well of him, and silencing and convincing any scandalous Rumours that may be spread abroad concerning him; to his Estate (wherein indeed lies her chief Helpfulness, and which she ought to make her constant and daily Employment) if she cannot bring in, and get any thing to increase the Stock, yet she ought prudently and frugally to manage what her Husband intrusts her withal, and not to waste it vainly and profusely; for let her know that whatsoever is so spent or wasted is but stolen; and if she shall alienate any thing from her Husband contrary to his consent, either expressly declared, or else upon good grounds supposed to be tacitely granted and allowed, it is no better than Theft. And therefore when we read that *Abigail*, without the consent of her Husband, took a considerable Present to bestow upon *David* to divert his ireful Intentions; it may very well be supposed that if *Nabal* had known, as well as she, the Danger wherein he stood, he would have been as forward to encourage her to do it, as she was ready and willing. And therefore here were good grounds to suppose a tacite and implicate Consent unto the Action. The Husband is the true and only Proprietor of all: and though the Wife hath a Right to all, yet it is only a Right of Use, and not of Dominion; she ought not to dispose of his Estate, or any part of it, contrary to his Mind and Consent; her proper Office is providently and faithfully to manage the Affairs of the Family that are committed to her Over-sight and Care: and therefore in the Description of a good Wife given us at large, *Prov.* 31. from *verse* 10, to the end, we find

find the whole of it taken up in shewing her Industry and Care in ordering the Affairs of the Family.

*Fourthly*; Another Duty of the Wife is Modesty, and that both in Apparel and Behaviour.

*1st.* In Apparel; that it be according to her Place and Rank, not affecting Gaudiness, or strange Fashions, nor yet affecting on the contrary a Singularity of Obsoleteness and outworn Antiquity; for Pride may be equally shewn either way: The best Temper is for them not to wear Garments to be taken notice of. The Apostle gives them this Rule; 1 Pet. 3. 3, 4. *Let not the Woman's adorning be the outward adorning, of plaiting the Hair, and of wearing of Gold, or of putting on of Apparel: But let it be the hidden Man of the Heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the Ornament of a meek and quiet Spirit, which in the sight of God is of great Price.* And so St. Paul, 1 Tim. 2. 9, 10. *I will that Women adorn themselves with modest Apparel, with Shamefacedness and Sobriety; not with broidered Hair, or Gold, or Pearls, or costly array; but (which becomes Women professing Godliness) with good Works.* This indeed is the best Ornament, that which makes them lovely in the Sight of God, and that too which makes them esteemed by all sober and serious Persons. Indeed I do not think that costly Array is in either of these places absolutely forbidden: Doubtless, Gold and Jewels may lawfully be worn, if we keep ourselves within our Rank and Quality, and fashion our selves to those who are most sober in that rank, rather than to those who are most light and vain: but the Prohibition is to be interpreted either by the Degree, *i. e.* be not excessive nor vain in your Apparel, which happens when the Habit exceeds either the Quality or the Ability of those that wear it; or else it is to be interpreted by a Comparison, let not the adorning be the outward adorning of wearing of Gold, or putting on of Apparel; that is, study not so much how to set off your selves in your Garments, as how to adorn



## An Exposition upon

adorn your selves with a meek and quiet Spirit, with Sobriety, Modesty, and good Works, which is the richest and most beautiful Robe you can wear.

*2dly.* As she must be modest in her Apparel, so in her Behaviour and Deportment; her Countenance, Gesture, and Speeches, must be all fitted to shew the inward Calmness and Serenity of her Mind; and therefore imperious, clamorous, and turbulent Women, who at every Word spit Passion and Poison, are a Torment and Vexation to themselves, and more to their Husbands: *The Contentions of a Wife*, saith the wise Man, *are a continual dropping*, Prov. 19. 13. And it is such a dropping, as will at last eat and fret through his very Heart, though it were made of Stone.

These therefore are the Duties of the Wife.

There are likewise common Duties to be performed by both mutually: I shall only name them to you. Such are fervent Prayers to God both severally and together, that he would be pleased to pour down his Blessings and his Graces upon them, and give them Wisdom to demean themselves towards each other aright: Conjugal Love, Communion of themselves, of their Estates, of their Habitations, a mutual bearing one anothers Weakness, with prudent and pious Indeavours to heal and remove them; the Nurture and Education of Children, the Government of their Family committed to their charge, for whom they are to provide not only what is requisite for their corporal Good, but much more for their spiritual; in as much as their Souls are much more worth than their Bodies; and therefore they ought to observe constant Family-Duties, and make choice of honest and religious Servants, and as far as in them lies, keep out the Infection of evil Company from entring within their Doors, as carefully as they would the Plague. And whilst they thus live, and thus love, they have good reason to believe, that as they are joined in a near Relation

tion each to other, so they are both joined in a near Relation to the Lord Jesus, who is the Husband of his Church, and all the Faithful in it; and when Death shall dissolve their Marriage-Union, and separate them one from the other, it is only to bring them to live for ever with that Husband from whom they can never be separated nor divorced.

And thus much for the mutual Duties of Husbands and Wives.

Let us in the next place proceed to consider the Duties of another Family-Relation, and that is between Masters and their Servants; for these also are comprehended under this Commandment, *Honour thy Father and thy Mother*, since there is a confessed Superiority of the one over the other; and upon that account (as I not long since told you) Servants have honoured their Masters with the Stile and Compellation of Father: Thus 2 *Kings* 9. 13. When those prudent Servants sought to mitigate the Rage of proud *Naaman*, who thought his Greatness too much slighted by the Prophet, in that he would only cure, and not complement him; they reverently call him Father; his Servants came near and spake unto him, and said, *My Father*, &c.

And here, not to discourse of Dominion and Servitude, whether the Original and Foundation of either be in Nature and Institution, nor of the Difference of Servants by War, Purchase, or Compact; I shall only speak of what is more immediately pertinent to my Subject, and what may be more instructive and profitable to you, *viz.* The mutual and reciprocal Duties that Masters and Servants ought to perform each to other.

The Duties that equally concern them both, consist in the general, either in the right chusing, or in the right using one another.

I shall begin with the Servant's Duty, and that first as to the choice of his Master.

N n

He

## An Exposition upon

He ought where his choice is left him free, to chuse a faithful Master, such an one as fears God, and will be willing to promote the spiritual Good and Salvation of his Soul; with such certainly he shall best serve, who do themselves serve God; where he shall have nothing but reasonable and lawful Commands to obey, and pious Examples to imitate. Many poor ignorant Souls have had cause for ever to bless God, that his Providence hath cast them into such Families, where they have received the first Knowledge, and the first Savour of Godliness. But if the Servant be before-hand knowing and religious, what comfort can it be to him to live, where there is a constant Neglect of Holy Duties, nothing but Excess and Riot, and Profaneness, and abusing of the Name of God, and scoffing at his Service and Servants? Certainly Necessity should hardly induce him, much less Choice lead him to be a Servant in a Family, where the Devil is the Master of it. The Psalmist sorely complains, that he was forced to take up his Abode among wicked and ungodly Men, *Psal. 120. 5. Wo is me that I sojourn in Mesech, that I dwell in the Tents of Kedar.*

And as it cannot but be exceeding burdensom and tedious to thee, and cut thy Soul to the very Quick, to be at the command of those who rebel against thy God, to hear his holy Name blasphemed, his Ways, and Worship, and People derided, which are dearer to thee than thy very Life; so is it very dangerous, and full of hazard. It is hard to keep Zeal, and the Sparks of Grace and Divine Love alive, when thou hast the greatest Helps to it that can be administered. How wilt thou then preserve them alive, when thou hast so many quench-coals about thee, when the Flouds of Ungodliness shall compass and surround thee about? Either thou must dissemble thy Piety, (and that is the ready way to lose it, for Grace is like Fire, stifle and keep it close, and it will certainly die) or else thou must put thy self upon the sore Temptation of being mocked and scorned for it :

it: Thou knowest not how far thou mayest forsake God, and thy first Ways for compliance sake. It is the hardest thing in the World to be religious alone, and to keep up Zeal and Affection for God, when all that we converse with are Wicked and Ungodly. Vice is the most contagious Plague that is; and it will be a very great wonder if those with whom thou familiarly conversest, with whom thou eatest, and drinkest, and sleepest, do not at last infect thee. We see holy *Joseph*, by living long in the *Egyptian* Court, had learn'd some of the Court-Fashions, and could readily swear by the Life of *Pharaoh*.

Venture not thy self therefore into those Families, where the Governours are either corrupt and erroneous in their Principles, or lewd and dissolute in their Conversation; for it will be hard for thee to swim against the Stream both of Example and Authority. Or if thou shouldst be able to bear up against both, it will cost thee more Pains and Struggling to do it, than all the temporal Advantages thou canst there reap, will be worth to thee.

This is the first Duty that belongs to a Servant, *viz.* That he chuse a pious and religious Master.

*Secondly*; After thou hast made thy choice, and art entertained, consider how thou oughtest to demean thy self towards thy Master.

And here, if by what thou shalt hear thy Duty seem very hard unto thee, yet it is no harder than it hath pleased God to make it; yea, and possibly not so hard as thy Master's. For he is bound to give an account for thee unto God; but so art not thou for him. Thy Miscarriages shall be severely revenged upon him, if they have been through his default of needful Instruction, or of Care and Discipline; but so shall not his upon thee. And therefore in this respect, all Inferiours have a mighty Advantage to sweeten the Meanness and Lowness of their Condition, that they shall

## An Exposition upon

not be punished for the Sins of their Superiours, but Superiours may for the Sins of their Inferiours ; yea, and sometimes for their due Obedience too, when they command them things, though not unlawful, yet unfit ; for that may be a Sin in a Superiour to command, which is a Duty for an Inferiour to obey, when commanded : And certainly in the end, his task will be found easiest, who is to obey, rather than his who commands.

Now here, *First* ; The chief and comprehensive Duty of a Servant, is Obedience unto the Commands of his Master. For this is absolutely enjoined them, *Col. 3. 22. Servants, obey in all things your Masters according to the Flesh* : And again, *Ephes. 6. 5. Servants, be obedient to them that are your Masters according to the Flesh*. In all things that are not dishonest, and contrary to the Laws of God, there Obedience is required ; yea, although in many things their Commands should be impertinent, or too imperious and tyrannical, yet Servants in such Cases are no more exempted from Obedience, than their Masters shall be from Punishment, for the unreasonableness of their Commands they shall give an account unto God, their Master ; and thou for detracting thy Obedience both to them and him.

*Secondly* ; Another Duty is, a patient suffering their Reproofs and Corrections ; yea, and so patient are they to be, as not so much as to answer again : *Tit. 2. 9. Exhort Servants to please their Masters well in all things, not answering again*. So strictly hath Religion tied them up to Obedience, that they ought not to reply against a Rebuke, nor to derogate so much from the Authority of their Masters, as to murmur at it : And therefore to use Violence against them, is so high a Degree of Disobedience, that it approacheth near to Sacriledg ; yea, and this quiet and silent Submission, is required also not only where the Servant hath given just cause for Reproof and Correction, but although he suffer from

from the groundless Rage and Passion of his Master. See 1 Pet: 2. 18, 19, 20. *Servants be subject to your own Masters, with all fear, not only to the Good and Gentle, but to the Forward also: for this is Thank-worthy, if a Man for Conscience towards God endure Grief, suffering wrongfully. For what Glory is it, if when ye be buffeted for your Faults, ye take it patiently? but if when you do well, ye suffer for it, and take it patiently, this is acceptable with God.* See here with what Pressingness the Apostle enjoins them this Duty. And indeed a Duty so hard, so contrary unto Flesh and Blood, had need to be prest home upon your Consciences: You ought to be patient not only when you are justly reprov'd and corrected for your Faults; but if the distempered Rage of a Master should break forth without any Reason, or contrary to all Reason; if he should reprove and buffet you, not for your Faults, but for your Duty, you ought to take it patiently; and not to strike again, no not so much as to answer again; that is, not to answer with Taunts and Invectives, but calmly, and at fit and convenient Seasons, to present unto him the Justice of your Actions, and the Reasons that moved you to them. I must confess, that of all things which belong unto the Duty of a Servant, this is the most difficult; and there is nothing that can sweeten and facilitate it, but only conscience of their Duty, and the Acceptation and Reward which they shall find with God for it; and therefore they had need pray for a great measure of Self-denial, and Mortification of those Passions which will be apt to struggle in them upon this Occasion, and by an Eye of Faith look up to God to support them, esteeming it a Chastisement inflicted upon them by their Heavenly Master; and that, be their Spirits never so high, will enable them to undergo it without any more murmuring than they would use against God himself when he immediately afflicts them.

*Thirdly;*

## An Exposition upon

*Thirdly*; Another Duty of Servants is, a reverential Fear of their Masters, *Malachy* 1. 6. *A Son honoureth his Father, and a Servant his Master. If I be a Father, where is mine Honour? if I be a Master, where is my Fear?* And the Apostle hath commanded Servants to be obedient to their Masters with Fear and Trembling, *Eph.* 6. 5. And again, *1 Pet.* 2. 18. *Servants be subject to your Masters with all fear.*

Which Fear is to be expressed by them in their Speeches and Actions. In their Speeches, by forbearing any Clamours or irreverent Muttering in their Presence. Their Words must be few and humble, giving them all those respectful Titles that belong justly to their Place and Quality. Yea, and they must not only speak fair to them whilst they are present, but speak well of them when absent, begetting in others as good an Opinion of them as they may, concealing their Infirmities, and what they cannot speak truly of them to their Credit, therein to be silent. They ought likewise to testify their Reverence in their Actions, comporting themselves with all the Expressions of Modesty and Respect before them, and readily doing not only what their Masters shall expressly command them, but what they judge will be pleasing and acceptable to them; and therefore we have that Expression, *Psal.* 123. *2. The Eyes of Servants look unto the Hands of their Masters, and the Eyes of a Maiden unto the Hands of her Mistress.* Intimating to us, that good Servants will not only readily obey when they have a verbal and oral Command, but will be ready to take the least sign, the least beck from their Masters, and strive not only to fulfil, but even to prevent their Commands by the readiness and respect of their Obedience.

*Fourthly*; Another Duty of a Servant is, diligence in his Master's Affairs. He ought to set his Mind to them, and imploy his time in them. For he is not faithful, who is negligent; and he steals from his Master, who doth not use his  
Strength,

Strength, and spend his time in his Service. Every slothful Servant is a Thief; and so much Advantage as he hinders his Master of by his Negligence and Idleness, of so much he doth but rob him. And therefore in the Parable of the Talents, when the Master takes an Account of every Man's Improvements, he calls that Servant who had not used his Talent, nor been industrious in his Service, not only slothful, but wicked, *Thou wicked and slothful Servant.* Matth. 25. 26.

*Fifthly*; Another Duty is, Fidelity and Trust in what is committed to their charge; not defrauding their Masters, nor purloining from them the least Value, but serving them with all Faithfulness and Integrity; so *Tit. 2. 9, 10. Exhort Servants to be obedient to their Masters, not purloining, but shewing all good Fidelity.*

And unto this appertains carefulness in preserving their Masters Estate, not wasting or consuming it either by riotous Living, or Negligence. Doubtless many Men have sunk and decayed under the unfaithfulness or carelessness of their Servants, either stealing from them, or prodigally wasting what was theirs. Let such know, that every Farthing stands upon account in God's Debt-book; unless they make amends to their Masters, if ever Providence shall enable them to do it, they must make a punctual Payment to Divine Justice, which is infinitely the more dreadful Creditor.

*Sixthly*; As Trust in Affairs, so likewise Truth in Speech is another Duty of a Servant. They ought to approve themselves such, that their Masters may repose themselves upon their Words. And as Servants are the Hands and the Eyes of their Masters, so they ought to make no other report unto them, than what is as certain as though they had touch'd it and seen it themselves. We read of *Gebazi*, that when he was returned from taking a Bribe of *Naaman*, he stood very demurely before his Master, with a Lie ready prepared



## An Exposition upon

prepared in his Mouth. *Whence comest thou, Gehazi? Thy Servant*, saith he, *went no whither*. But this Lie cost him a Leprosy that stuck incurable to him and to all his Posterity after. I am loth to be uncharitable, but I much doubt, that if the same Judgment were inflicted upon every Servant that comes to his Master with a lying Excuse, every Family would be infected, and very few in this Relation escape that loathsome Contagion. Certainly it is only a cowardly, base, slavish Fear that induceth one to this vile Sin of lying. And what? Wilt thou be more afraid to offend thy Master by confessing a Fault, than to offend thy God by committing another to conceal it? What else is this, but to heap up Sin upon Sin, and to make a single Transgression to become two thereby? A Sin the most odious unto God, who is Truth it self, and usually most detestable to Men, and with difficulty pardonable by them; for it imputes a great deal of Folly and Ignorance to them, as such who are so weak that they cannot find out the matter. And therefore Psal. 101. 7 the Psalmist saith, *He that telleth Lies, shall not tarry in my sight*.

*Seventhly*; Another Duty of Servants (and it is the last I shall mention) is to serve their Masters with good Will, and in singleness of their Hearts; not grudgingly, as of Constraint, for that is slavish, but readily and chearfully as unto the Lord. Not as Men-pleasers only with Eye-service, being no longer diligent than their Masters Eye is upon them, but careless and negligent as soon as his back is turned; but as the Servants of Christ, doing the Will of God from the Heart, as the Apostle commands and directs them, *Ephes. 6. 5, 6, 7*.

Now to perform Service unto their Masters as unto God and Christ, imports these two things.

*First*; A serious Consideration that God is concern'd in every thing they do, as the Object of it; so *Col. 3. 23*. *Whatsoever ye do, do it heartily, as unto the Lord*. And therefore

Servants

Servants are commanded to have Respect, not so much unto Men as unto God. This is the way to ennoble thy Service, be it never so mean ; it is God whom thou servest in them, that God whom the greatest Princes and Potentates of the Earth ought to serve. And be the Employment what it will, yet the Greatness and Glory of that Master to whom thou doest it, puts an Honour and Dignity upon it.

*Secondly* ; To do Service as unto the Lord, implies thy doing of it upon this very account, because God hath commanded it. Be the Action what it will be, yet if you can truly say that you do it, not only because your Master hath commanded it, but because God, his Master and yours, hath laid the Authority of his Command and Injunction upon you to obey him, this prefers a Man's Service unto God, and makes it an Action done truly unto him.

And this may be a great Encouragement unto Servants, (for indeed their Condition generally wants Encouragement) that tho their Employments may be the meaner and inferiour Drudgeries of this Life, and those possibly not very well accepted by their harsh and froward Masters ; yet be their Work never so painful and laborious, whilst they perform it out of Conscience to God's Command, it is accounted as done to him, and not to them ; they are his Servants more than theirs, and he will kindly accept and bountifully reward them.

We have thus considered the Duties which Servants owe unto their Masters. Let us now proceed to those Duties which Masters owe reciprocally to their Servants. And those consist (as before I noted) either in the right chusing, or in the right using them.

The Master's first Duty is a prudent Care and Circumspection into the Choice of his Servants. And indeed this is a matter of great moment, and that wherein the Happi-

## An Exposition upon

ness and Comfort, or else the Misery and Trouble of a Family doth very much depend.

Now there are two Qualifications in a Servant, that ought chiefly to be regarded in the making choice of him.

The one is Ability to discharge his place, and manage those Affairs which you commit to his Care and Trust.

The other is Conscientiousness and Piety in doing faithful Service, not to thee only, but to God, the common Master of you both.

And indeed this latter is of more Importance, and of greater Concernment to thee than the former: For when thou entertainest a godly Person, tho possibly not so sufficient for thy Employment as some others, it will be a Commendation of thy Charity, that thou maintainest one of God's Servants in thy Family. But when thou entertainest a lewd profane Wretch, only because he is able to dispatch his Work, thou maintainest one of the Devil's Slaves, and takest into thine House a sworn Servant to the mortallest Enemy thou hast in the World, which is justly reproachable both with Folly and Impiety.

Yet how little is this usually regarded! I know it is the Custom of too many, that if they can light on those whom they think proper for their Affairs, never inquire what their Principles or what their Practices be as to Religion, whether Popish, or Factious; whether for the Mass, or the Meeting; but chuse them as they would do Beasts of Burden, the most strong and able; and account it the only Property of good Servants to be able to perform their Office, and willing to drudg as much as they would have them. But let them know that they make a very unwise and a very sinful Choice. For such Servants will assuredly make much more Work than they dispatch, and leave more Filth in the House than they cleanse out. Tho they be never so able and fit for their Employments, yet think not such an one fit for thee, who refuseth to serve that God whom

whom thou thy self art bound to serve; and believe it to be a Design of the Devil to help thee to one who shall do thy Work, but undo thy Family. One vile and wicked Servant is enough to corrupt a whole Household; for assure your selves they come there to do the Devil more Service than you, and their lewd Examples and Presumptions will seduce and draw others into the same Excess with themselves. For to this I impute the Rise and Growth of that general Profaneness that is too reigning in most Families, especially in those whose Quality or Estates require a numerous Attendance; they are commonly too careless what Russian and debauch'd Servants they entertain; and their Children (which else might be the Ornament and Glory of the Nation) conversing with these, learn from them those first Rudiments of Vice, which afterward their Condition and Wealth enables them to perfect into consummate Villany and Devilism. Here they learnt the first Taste of Excess and Intemperance; here they were taught the first Syllables of Oaths, and instructed how to lisp out Curses and Obscenity, and according to their Proficiency, applauded by these impious Wretches for their gentile Docility and Aptness. Such Servants as these should be rooted out, not only as the Pests of particular Families, but their Influence reaches farther, even to corrupt those who may hereafter have an Influence on the State and Common-wealth; for they serve only to give Youth the first Relishes of Sloth, and Pleasure, and Vice, which by woful Improvements grow at last to be inveterate Habits, and make them only a Shame to their Families, and a Curse to the Kingdom.

So it is proportionable in all meaner Families; where the Servants be wicked, the Children ordinarily will be more ruled by their Examples and Flatteries, than by their Parents Authority and Commands. And therefore it highly concerns you to make a prudent Choice at first;

## An Exposition upon

first ; or if therein you have been mistaken, as soon as you can to rid your Houses of those Vermin and Caterpillars, which else will destroy the verdant and budding Hopes of your Children ; and to bring in those who are sober, staid, and godly, who will make it their great Care, first, to serve God, and then you. Take the Resolution of the Royal Psalmist for your Pattern and Direction, *Psal. 101. 6, 7. Mine Eyes shall be upon the Faithful of the Land, that they may dwell with me : he that walketh in a perfect way, he shall serve me : he that worketh Deceit, shall not dwell within my House ; he that telleth Lies, shall not tarry in my sight.* Certainly those will be the best Servants to us, who are faithful Servants to God ; or if they should be less fit for thy occasions, yet they will sufficiently earn their Wages, tho they only pray for thee. It is said of *Joseph, Gen. 39. 5.* when he was brought into *Potiphar's* House to be his Servant, *that the Lord blessed the Egyptian's House for Joseph's sake : and the Blessing of the Lord was upon all that he had in the House, and in the Field.* Godly Servants bring a Blessing along with them to the Families where they reside ; and having such a Servant, thou hast a Friend in Court, one that can do thee kind Offices in Heaven through his Interest at the Throne of Grace. And therefore as it is thy Duty, so it is thy Wisdom and thy Concern to make choice of such ; these best know their Duty ; these will make most Conscience of performing it ; in their Integrity and Faithfulness thy Heart may repose, and they will intitle thee and thy Family to these Blessings which attended them.

That's the first Duty, respecting the Choice of Servants.

*Secondly ;* Another general Duty of Masters is, rightly to use them when they are chosen : And that consists likewise in two things,

Government, and  
Provision.

*First ;*

*First* ; Their Government ought to be prudent and discreet, such as may maintain their Authority, and yet not be sowr'd into Tyranny : And therefore it should be a Master's Care to demean himself gravely and awfully before his Servants ; his very Countenance and Comportment should be enough to beget Reverence in them. But when the Master is vain and light, the Servants will grow, first familiar, and then contemptuous.

Government consists in two things, Command and Correction : But that which doth most of all tend to make both effectual, is good Example.

First, therefore, a Master ought wisely to command and enjoyn his Servants what they should do. And herein is required a great deal of Skill and Prudence. For tho Servants ought not to inquire into the Reasons of all that their Masters bid them do, yet doubtless it is a very difficult matter for them to bring themselves to do that which is apparently vain and ridiculous ; and by imposing such things upon them, the Master will much hazard the loss, or diminution of his Authority ; and therefore in laying his Commands upon them, he ought to have regard both to the Manner and Matter of them.

As to the manner ; He ought not to command with Rigour, with ill Language and Revilings, as is the Custom of too many, who when they enjoyn their Servants any thing, preface their Commands with a Reproach, which tends to nothing but to discourage them, to make them hate the Employment, and him that setteth them about it ; and by this means we make our Servants to become our Enemies. The Apostle therefore hath given this Caution ; *Ephes. 6. 9. Ye Masters, do the same things to your Servants, forbearing Threatning.* Nor yet should they prostitute their Authority by any submiss Intreaties ; for it is an Evil which the Earth it self cannot bear, when a Servant reigneth and bears sway over his Master, as the wise Man observes, *Prov. 30. 22.*

But

Macro-  
b. Saturn. l. 1.  
c. 11.

## An Exposition upon

But there should be such an equal Mixture of Mildness with Gravity, and Love with Authority, that the Servant should not only be compelled, but inclined by it unto Obedience. Indeed there is required much Evenness of Temper in him that would make a good Master; not to be hurried with violent and causeless Passions, nor to be swayed by irrational Humours; for nothing doth more detract from Authority than Humorsomness; because Servants not having any standing measure of what will please such a Master, will at last grow careless of it, and despise the Commands of him who is as much a Servant as they are Servants; yea, a very Slave to his Passions and Humours, than which there cannot be a baser and a viler Slavery: and therefore those who are Servants to fickle and capricious Masters, though they may seem very obsequious to them, yet cannot but secretly despise them: for Power may indeed make their Commands to be obeyed; but it is Reason only, and Gravity, that can make them venerable and reverend.

*Secondly*; As a Master ought to respect the Manner how he commands, so likewise the Matter what he commands. And in this take these three Rules.

*1<sup>st</sup>*. He ought to command nothing but what is lawful to be performed; for both they and their Servants have a supreme Lord and Master in the highest Heavens, whom they both ought to fear and obey. His Service is no farther due to thee, than as it is consistent with the Service of God; and when thou commandest any thing contrary thereunto, thou art not a Master, but a Tempter. It is true he is bound in Conscience to observe thee, yet it is only in those things wherein the Law of God hath left his Conscience free; and therefore where the great and universal Lord hath laid a Prohibition upon him, his Obedience is superseded, and thy Commands do only bind thy self to Guilt, not him to Observance: He is bound to work for thee, but not to lie, or to steal, or to cheat for thee: and if thou art so wicked

## the Fifth Commandment.

307

wicked as to injoyn him any such thing, it is no uncivil Answer to say to thee, as the Apostles did, *Acts 5. 29. We ought rather to obey God than Men.*

2dly. A Master's Commands must be not only lawful, but possible: to command things impossible, is the height of Folly. And therefore when *Abraham* commanded his Servant to procure a Wife for his Son; he prudently answers, What if she will not come? upon which Supposition his Master acquits him from the Oath of God that was betwixt them; *Gen. 24. 8. If the Woman will not be willing to follow thee, then shalt thou be clear of this Oath.* To command things impossible to be effected, will but detract from the Master's Authority, and lessen his Esteem, and cause the Servant to think his own Discretion to be a better Guide for his Actions, than his Master's; yea although the thing be not simply impossible in it self, but only to the Servant, considering either his Inability or Employments; or if it be hugely inconvenient, or prejudicial, or unseasonable, the Master ought not in Conscience or Prudence to exact it. For, as to command things unlawful, is Impiety, and things impossible, Folly; so to require things unreasonable and prejudicial, is mere Tyranny: And as such it is recorded in *Pharaoh* and his Task-masters, who to weary and wear out the *Israelites*, exacted the whole tale of Bricks, but would not allow Straw to make them.

3dly. A Master's Command ought not to be Vain and Impertinent; but he should have some swaying Reason, though perhaps not always fit to be communicated to the Servant why he commands such things from him, Reason sufficient to satisfy his own Judgment, and his own Conscience.

These three Rules ought to be observed by Masters; they ought to command nothing that is unlawful to be done; nothing but what is possible; nothing but what is profitable and useful. And this is the first Part of a Master's.



## An Exposition upon

ster's Government, *viz.* Prudent commanding his Servants.

*Secondly*, It is the Master's Duty to correct those Servants that are stubborn and disobedient. The wise Man tells us, *Prov. 29. 19. There is a Servant who will not be corrected with words; for although he understand, he will not answer.*

Yet here Prudence must be the measure of what Discipline is fit for them, according to their Age, Disposition, and the Nature of their Offence. A Reproof will work more effectually with some than Stripes; and those who have ingenuous Spirits, though in a servile Condition, will either be discouraged, or exasperated by a too-rigorous Usage. And God hath expressly interposed his Will in this Particular, *Levit. 25. 34. Thou shalt not rule over him with Rigour, but shalt fear thy God.* Indeed no Correction is to be inflicted on them out of Passion and Revenge: But either,

1<sup>st</sup>. For Reformation and Amendment, that they may be the more wary for the future; Or,

2<sup>ly</sup>. For Example's sake, to terrify others from the same, or the like Offences. Even an Heathen could say, *Nemo sapiens punit, quia peccatum est, sed ne pelletur*: No wise Man doth punish, because the Offence is already committed, (for then it comes unseasonably and too late) but that it might not be committed again.

But still be sure that the Corrections be not immoderate and too severe; neither exceeding the proportion of the Fault, for that is Cruelty, nor unbeseeming thee to inflict, or the Age and Quality of thy Servant to suffer, for that will be reproachful to both. Generally Reproof is the best Discipline. But if they be such contumacious Fools as not to be amended with that, although it be lawful, and in some Cases necessary, to use a sharper Method towards them; yet the best and most prudent Course, and that which

Plato apud  
Lactant.  
de ira Dei,  
c. 18.

## the Fifth Commandment.

309

which will tend most to thy Quiet and Credit, is to discharge them.

Now to move you to Mercy and Lenity towards them; Consider,

*First*, That you your selves have a Master, the great and glorious God. This the Apostle urgeth, *Eph. 6. 9. Masters, forbear threatening, knowing that your Master also is in Heaven.* Think with your selves how often you provoke him, and yet he forbears you, although you are infinitely more inferiour to him, than any Servant can be unto you: and this will calm your Passions, and cause you, if not altogether to wave, yet at least to allay and mitigate the Rigour and Severity of your Chastisements.

*Secondly*, Consider that they are equal with you in respect of God. It is true, they are your Servants, but both you and they are Fellow-Servants to the great Lord and Master. And if thou in a Rage shouldst take thy Fellow-Servant by the Throat, and imperiously abuse him; fear, lest thy Lord may require it, and vindicate his Wrongs in the Punishment of thy Tyranny. There is no respect of Persons with him; but he that hath done Wrong, shall receive for the Wrong that he hath done. And what art thou, O vile Worm, that thou shouldst domineer over thy Fellow, who is moulded of as good Earth, and hath as precious and immortal a Soul in him, as thy self? For,

*Thirdly*, Consider that thou art equal likewise in Nature, only Divine Providence hath made the difference. Whence then such a supercilious disdain of Servants, *Quasi non iidem tibi & consent & alantur elementis, eundemq; spiritum carpant*, (as *Macrobius*); as if they did not consist of the same Materials, nor draw the same Breath with thy self. They are Servants, but yet they are Men; they are Servants, yea rather they are thy Fellow-Servants. And it is in the Power of the same Providence who hath subjected them to

Servi sunt, imo homines :  
servi sunt, imo conservi. Id.

P p

thee,

## An Exposition upon

thee, to change the Scene, exalt them, and bring thee into Bondage. Why then shouldst thou despise them? whereas thou knowest not how soon thou mayest be brought under a more miserable Servitude. They are Servants out of Necessity, when perhaps their Masters are voluntary Slaves: Some are Slaves to their Lusts, others to Covetousness, others to Ambition, and all to Hope, all to Fear. And there is no Servitude so justly contemptible, as that which is voluntary and wilful.

Consider again, that he who is a Servant to Men, may be the Lord's Free-man; whereas he that is free among Men, may be a Slave to his Lusts, and by them to the Devil: And therefore we ought neither to think despicably of them, nor to use them severely, but to treat them with Love, as our Fellow-Creatures, our Fellow-Servants, yea, and Fellow-Heirs of the same Inheritance of Life and Glory.

And thus much concerning the Master's Duty in Government.

Another General wherein his Duty consists, is Provision; and that both for their temporal and spiritual Good; for the welfare both of their Bodies and their Souls.

*First*; As for their temporal Provision, he is bound to supply them with things necessary for them according to the Tenour of the Agreement and Compact made between them, *Coloss. 4. 1. Masters, give unto your Servants that which is just and equal.* He ought to provide for them Food and Raiment; or else in lieu of any of these, faithfully to pay them their agreed Wages. *Levit. 19. 13. The Wages of him that is hired shall not abide all Night with thee, until the Morning.* And again, *Dent. 24. 14, 15. Thou shalt not oppress an hired Servant that is poor and needy; at his Day thou shalt give him his Hire; neither shall the Sun go down upon it, lest he cry against thee unto the Lord, and it be Sin unto thee.* This Oppression of Servants in withholding from them their

cover

## the Fifth Commandment.

311

covenanted Reward of their Labour, is a crying and provoking Sin. So the Apostle, *James 5. 4. The Hire of the Labourers which have reaped down the Fields,* (so likewise of those who have done any other Work and Service for you) *which is of you kept back by fraud, cryeth; and the Cries of them that have reaped, are entered into the Ears of the Lord of Sabbath.*

*Secondly;* As the Master is to make temporal Provision for their Bodies, so much more is he to provide for their spiritual Welfare, and the good of their Souls; in as much as their Souls are incomparably to be preferred before their Bodies. Every Master is to be both a Priest and a Prophet within his own Family, as well as a King; he is to instruct them in the Will and Laws of God, to inform their Ignorance, resolve their Doubts, excite and quicken them to the Service of God, to rectify their Errours and Mistakes, to pray with them and for them, to direct them in the Way that leads to Heaven and Happiness, and above all, to walk before them in it by his holy and pious Example. But how few are there that do conscientiously perform this Duty! Do not the most think it enough if they provide Necessaries and Conveniencies for the Body, the dull, outward, and earthly part of Man? and indeed it were enough, if they had only Beasts to look after. But remember, thy Servants, and those who belong to thy Charge, have precious and immortal Souls, capable of eternal Glory and Happiness, but liable to eternal Misery and Torments: and God hath intrusted thee with these Souls of theirs, and will require them at thy Hands. What an heavy and tremendous Doom will pass upon thee, when God shall demand at thy hands the Souls of thy Servants, or of thy Children, which have perish'd through thy default! Will it be enough then to plead, Lord, I fed and clothed them, and was careful of their Health and Welfare? Yea, indeed if their Bodies only were committed to thy care, this were enough;

## An Exposition upon

but see, there they stand condemned, and ready for eternal Flames, for the Ignorance which thou oughtest to have informed, for the Profaneness which thou oughtest to have chastised and hindred, for those Neglects of holy Duties in the which thou oughtest to have gone before them; and therefore though they shall die and perish in their Sins, yet their Blood will God require at thy Hands, whose Carelessness or evil Example, hath hardned them in Wickedness, and led them on securely to Destruction.

Let me therefore warn you who are Masters and Heads of Families, that as you tender the Souls of those who are under your Charge, yea, as you tender your own Souls, which are deeply engaged and concerned in theirs; so that you would use all diligence and industry in promoting their spiritual Good, that you may at the last Day present them with Joy before the Tribunal of God; Lo here am I, and the Children and Servants that thou hast given me. Now that you may with Joy and Triumph present them before the Throne of Justice then, be frequent in presenting them before the Throne of Grace now. Let not a Day pass without its stated Hours of Prayer in your Family; instruct those that are ignorant, reduce those that are erroneous, admonish and rebuke with all Authority those that are faulty, discard those that are contumacious and incorrigible: Let not a scoffing *Ismael*, a Scornor and Derider of Piety and Holiness, remain within your Doors; and especially be careful that both you and your Family do strictly observe and sanctify the Lord's Day; for therein consists a great part of the Life and Strength of Religion, and this Day usually gives a seasoning to all the Days of the Week after. Prepare your Families by private Duties, for publick; let none of them stay at home from the Ordinances, but upon great and urgent Necessity. Suffer them not to wander, some to one Pasture, and some to another; but where the Ordinances of God are duly dispensed; and whither

whither thou thy self art called, thither do thou lead thine, that as they altogether receive their bodily Food in thy House, so they may altogether receive their spiritual Food in the House of God; take an Account of their profiting by what they hear; be as careful to see thy Family well employed in the Service of God upon that Day, as to see them employed in thine own Service and Affairs the other Days of the Week: And therefore be not long nor unnecessarily from them, for God hath made thee his Overseer; and if his Work go not forward in private Family-Duties, especially on the Lord's Day, thou canst never expect a Blessing upon what they do for thee.

And thus much concerning the mutual Duties of Masters and Servants.

The next sort of relative Duties that I shall treat of is, that of Pastors and their Flocks, Ministers and their People. For between them also is such a relation of Superiority and Inferiority, as brings them under the Direction of this Commandment. We do not arrogate too much to our selves, nor take too much upon us, when we affirm that we are Superiour to the People, and have an Authority over them in things Spiritual, and appertaining unto God. And although through the Vices and foul Miscarriages of those who are dignified with this high Honour, and partly through the Meanness of their outward State and Condition; to which may be added likewise, the Meanness and Abjectedness of their Spirits, as a Consequent upon the former, basely prostituting themselves, and forfeiting the Respect that is due to them, by their sordid crouching for a Morfel of Bread at the lower-end of a Gentleman's Table; though by these, I say, not only their Persons, but their Office be sunk into the lowest Scorn and Contempt; yet I cannot but with the Apostle magnify mine Office, which is truly Excellent and Venerable; and it is the great Sin

## An Exposition upon

Sin of the People to despise this Calling, altho the Follies and Indiscretions of Ministers themselves may not only occasion, but invite them to do it.

Now here I shall plainly set down the reciprocal Duties which they ought mutually to perform each to other.

The Duties of Ministers either respect their Call to that Office; or their Management and Discharge of it.

The great Duty that respects their Call is, to look to it that they be rightly called, that they do not temerarily thrust themselves into so sacred a Function, unless they be duly set apart thereunto. For as the Priests under the Law were *taken from among Men, and ordained for Men in things pertaining unto God, to offer Gifts and Sacrifices*, as the Apostle speaks, *Heb. 5. 1.* So likewise the Ministers of the Gospel are to be duly sanctified and set apart for this high Employment, to stand before the Lord, and to minister in things that appertain unto his Worship: and it is an intolerable Presumption for any to intrude themselves into this Lot, without being selected thereunto by that Order which God himself hath appointed and left unto his Church. *For no Man taketh this Honour to himself, but he that is called of God*, as the Apostle subjoins, *ver. 4.* And therefore God complains of those Prophets whom he had not sent, and yet they ran; and to whom he had not spoken, and yet they prophesied, *Jer. 23. 21.* Audacious undertaking Men it seems they were; like some of late days, who thought their Forwardness alone a sufficient Consecration, and the Seal of whose Commission bears only the Stamp of their own Impudence.

Now to the due Constitution of a Minister there is requisite a twofold Call.

*First*; He must have an inward Call, which consists both in the Gifts of the holy Spirit, and also in the Inclination of his Will to use them for God's Glory in this holy Ministration. Now these Gifts with which he must be endowed,

## the Fifth Commandment.

315

dowed, some of them are absolutely necessary to capacitate him for the Office ; others are only conducive to make his Ministration in it the more effectual.

That which is absolutely necessary, is a competent Knowledge in the Truths of the Gospel, without which the great End of the Ministry cannot be attained, which is to teach and instruct the People. It is indeed their Duty to strive after an Eminency in this Knowledge ; for they are the Lights of the World, and should be able to diffuse abroad their Beams, that they might enlighten those that are ignorant, and sit in Darkness. But yet there is no stated Measure nor Standard for their Knowledge. For we find that our Lord Jesus Christ, the great Minister and Teacher of the World, sent forth his Disciples to preach, when yet they were very ignorant of many important Truths of the Gospel. Eminent Knowledge is therefore necessary for their Duty, but competent Knowledge is necessary for their Office.

That which is highly conducive to the Effectualness of their Ministry, is sanctifying Grace, and an holy Life and Conversation. Not that they are not true Ministers without this ; for we find a *Judas* sent forth with the same Authority and Commission as the rest of the Disciples. Yea and the Apostles, who had Christ himself for their Master and Instructor, yet are by him sent to attend upon the Ministry of the Scribes and Pharisees ; who, tho they were very wicked and ungodly Hypocrites, yet because they sat in *Moses's* Seat, *i. e.* because they had a rightful Authority to teach the People, therefore he commands his own Scholars to hear and obey them ; *Whatsoever they bid you observe, that observe and do ;* Mat. 23. 2, 3. It is not therefore personal Grace that gives Authority to our Ministry ; but yet it may and doth contribute much Efficacy unto it. God may feed his People, as he did *Elijah*, by a Raven ; and make a cold Breath kindle the Sparks of Grace in the Hearts of others,



others, and blow it up into a Flame. But yet it is far more comfortable and profitable to the People to sit under a Minister who shall go before them in Example, as well as in Doctrine; who not only prescribes them Rules of Holiness, but is himself an Example to those Rules: Such an one who speaks from the Heart, is most likely to speak unto it; and having himself experienced the Ways of Holiness, can more favourably recommend them to the Acceptation of his Flock. And certainly he will be more like to speed in his Errand, when he shall persuade them to nothing but what he hath found the Goodness and Sweetness of in himself. All others are but like those mercurial Statues, which in old Times were set up in cross-Ways, with their Hands extended to point out the right Road to Passengers, but themselves never walked in them: These indeed may be serviceable to direct their People. But a Minister should not only be a Director, but a Leader; he should not only point out the Way, but walk before his Flock in it. And it is commonly observed, that they are the Labours of such, that God most usually owns and crowns with Success.

*Secondly*; As he must have an inward Call in the Gifts of the Spirit of God; so likewise he must have an outward Call by a solemn separation of him to this Work through Imposition of Hands. This indeed gives him the Ministerial Power, and invests him with Authority to dispense the Ordinances of Jesus Christ as an Officer and Minister of the Gospel: And this Authority St. Paul calls a Gift, 1 Tim. 4. 14. *Neglect not the Gift that is in thee, which was given thee by Prophecy, with the laying on of the Hands of the Presbytery.* This Gift here spoken of, I take to be nothing else but the Ministerial Office conferred upon him by Ordination, according to those Predictions and Prophecies which were before given of him by some divinely-inspired Men, who foretold that he was by God designed for the Work of the Ministry, and should glorify God by a careful Discharge of

of it ; of which we read *Chap. 1. ver. 18.* Yea this Office is by our Saviour himself called the Holy Ghost ; and Ordination (how harsh soever the Phrase may seem to be) is a giving of the Holy Ghost, not indeed either in the Gifts or Graces of it, (which were afterwards plentifully bestowed upon them on the Day of Pentecost) but only Authority to exercise the Ministerial Function. Consult *John 20. 22, 23.* *When he had said this, he breathed on them, and said, Receive ye the Holy Ghost.* Which Holy Ghost I take to be nothing else but their solemn Mission to the Ministry ; and this (tho perhaps it may seem a strange Interpretation of the Place) I cannot but judg it to be the true Sense and Import of it, upon these two Considerations.

*Hooker's  
Eccles. Po-  
lit. l. 5.  
§. 77.*

*First ;* That the Holy Ghost was in no other respect at all at that time given to them. They neither received any extraordinary Degree of Grace ; or any extraordinary Gifts of Grace more than they were before indowed with. Yea, it is plainly exprest, that as yet the Holy Ghost was not given them in his extraordinary Gifts, but they were commanded to wait for the Promise of the Father at *Jerusalem* ; and the first Accomplishment of that Promise was on the day of Pentecost, when the Spirit descended upon them in the form of fiery cloven Tongues. Here then being a receiving of the Holy Ghost, and that not in the extraordinary Gifts or Graces of it ; what can remain, but that our Saviour by breathing on them, gave them the Holy Ghost, that is, Mission and Authority to preach the Gospel, and to dispense his Ordinances to the Church ?

*Secondly ;* The words following interpret these in this Sense. *Receive ye the Holy Ghost. Whose-soever Sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them ; and whose-soever Sins ye retain, they are retained.* Now these Words seem to me a clear Exposition of the former, *Receive ye the Holy Ghost*, i. e. Receive ye Authority to remit and retain Sins, which is

## An Exposition upon

one great part of the Ministerial Power, to declare Pardon to the Penitent, and Wrath to the Incurrigible and Obstinate. This, tho it may seem a strange, yet to me it seems the only true and consonant Exposition of this Place. But I shall not now further vindicate it.

Now as our Saviour used this sign of breathing upon his Disciples when he ordained them; so the Apostles afterwards instituted and used another sign, *viz.* laying on of Hands, of which there is frequent mention in Scripture, and which was introduced into the Christian Church from the Pattern of the Jewish Church. Thus we read *Acts* 9. 17. that *Paul* is ordained by the Imposition of the Hands of *Ananias*; he put his Hands on him, and said, *The Lord Jesus hath sent me that thou mightst receive thy Sight, and be filled with the Holy Ghost*; i. e. that he might be indowed with Ministerial Gifts, and invested with the Ministerial Authority. And again (which I wish heartily our dissenting Brethren, who so much decry Re-ordination, would but a little more maturely weigh and consider) he the second time receives Mission and Ordination with *Barnabas*, *Acts* 13. 2. *As they ministered to the Lord, and fasted, the Holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul, unto the Work wherunto I have called them. And when they had fasted and prayed, and laid their Hands on them, they sent them away.*

Yea this Imposition of Hands was so inseparable an Attendant upon Ordination, that sometimes it is used alone to signify it. So *1 Tim.* 5. 22. *Lay Hands suddenly on no Man*, i. e. ordain no Man rashly, and without due Advice.

Now since this external Call is so expressly and frequently mentioned, and the manner of it so particularly described, how daringly presumptuous are they, who without regarding those Methods which the Holy Ghost hath prescribed, yea despising and condemning them as obsolete and out-worn Formalities, rush into the Ministry, and pretend

an

an inward Call of Gifts and Graces, which yet in very many of them, are no other than most of the People might as well pretend unto, if they had but the like Impudence; and so we should have more Ministers than People, more Shepherds than Sheep? But let their Gifts and their Graces be never so eminent and admirable, they ought not to take this Honour to themselves, until they are set apart by the Church, and as well empowered to preach by an outward Mission, as enabled to do it by their Gifts and Qualifications.

And thus much for the first thing which a Minister ought to regard, which is his Call to that Office.

When we are assured that our Call is right, and according to the Will of God, there are then many other Duties incumbent upon us in the due exercise of our Calling. As,

*First*, and chiefly; We ought to be good Examples to the Flock. This *St. Paul* most expressly enjoins *Timothy*, 1 Tim. 4. 12. *Be thou an Example to the Believers, in Word, in Conversation, in Charity, in Spirit, in Faith, in Purity.* Indeed it is very sad to consider how the unsuitable Conversation of Ministers doth quite enervate all the force and strength of their Doctrine and Exhortations. For let them speak with the Tongues of Angels, and preach as holily and powerfully, as if the Holy Ghost did immediately inspire them; yet if their Lives be loose, and their Conversation contradictory to their Doctrine, the People will be ready to conclude, that so much Strictness is not necessary, that they only urge it as a Matter of high and nice Perfection in Religion, and that certainly they know a nearer Way to Heaven than through so many Severities which they press upon the People; and that therefore they will take the same Course, and run the same Venture that their Ministers do. And indeed how is it likely that such

## An Exposition upon

a Ministry should be effectual to bring others to Holiness, when the Minister himself declares to all the World by his Actions, that he looks upon it as unnecessary? What hold can his Admonitions and Reproofs take upon the Consciences of Men? Certainly his own Guilt must needs rise up in his Throat, and choak his Reproofs. For Conscientiousness of the same Miscarriages will retort whatsoever we can say against others, more strongly upon our selves; and suggest to us that it is but base Hypocrisy to blame that which our selves practise. With what Face canst thou press others to repent and reform; what Arguments canst thou use to prevail with them, who by continuing in the same Sin, dost thy self judge those Arguments to be of no force? Indeed it were a Temper to be wish'd and pray'd for, that we could only respect how righteous the Reproof is, and not how righteous the Person who gives it; and be content to have our Motes pluck'd out, though it be by such who have Beams in their own Eyes: That we could learn that hard Lesson which our Saviour gives his Disciples, to do as they say, but not to do after their Works; for indeed there is no more reason to reject sound Admonition, because it comes from an unsound Heart, than there is to stop our Ears against good Counsel, because it is deliver'd perhaps by a stinking Breath. But yet so it usually fares, that when Ministers of defiled and loose Lives, shall yet preach up Holiness and Strictness to their People, and as they ought, reprove them sharply for their Sins; they will be apt to think, What, is he in earnest? and doth he not see that he himself is as bad or worse? With what Face can he thunder out Wo, and Wrath, and Hell against my Sins, which yet are no more mine than his own? Doth he think to fright me with denouncing Threats and Curses, when he himself, who stands as fair a Mark for them as I, flights and contemns them? Or doth he envy me my Sins, and would ingross them all unto himself? And thus

thus with such carnal Reasonings drawn from the evil Examples and wicked Lives of Ministers, they sit hardened under their Preaching, and account all they say, but as a Lesson they must repeat, and a Tale they must tell to get their living by. Certainly such shall perish in their Iniquities, but the Blood of their Souls God will require at your hands.

But now when a Minister walks conscientiously and exemplary before his Flock, his Doctrine gains a mighty Advantage to work upon them, by his Life. This is building up the Church of Christ with both Hands, shewing them both the Equity and the Basiness of that Holiness which he perswades them to, by his own Practice. When he reproveth, his Reproofs break in upon the Consciences of his Hearers with Conviction and Authority; and if they do not reform, yet at least daunt and terrify them, and make them self-accused, and self-condemned. Here is one reproveth me for Sin, who believes it to be as evil as he represents it, by his own eschewing it. Here is one that denounces Wrath if I repent not, who doubtless believes it to be as terrible as he declares it, by his own carefulness to escape it. Certainly Preaching never comes with such Power and Energy into the Conscience, as when the Minister preacheth as well by his Works, as by his Word; and to induce the People to it, is first obedient himself to the Truths which he teacheth them. Men are easier led by Examples, than by Precepts; for though Precepts are the more exact, yet Examples are the more easy way of teaching. And he is a perfect Work-man who joineth both together, neither teaching what he will not do, nor doing what he dares not teach; and therefore it is observed of our Lord Jesus Christ the great Teacher of his Church, that he began both to do and teach, *Acts. 1. 1.*

Now Ministers must be exemplary both in themselves, and in their Families. *In themselves they must be blameless,*

## An Exposition upon

*less, as the Stewards of God; not self-will'd, not soon angry, not given to Wine, no Strikers, not given to filthy Lucre; Lovers of Hospitality, Lovers of good Men, sober, just, holy, temperate; as the Apostle sums up their Duties, Tit. 1. 7, 8.* These are the things which will give them a good Report among those which are without, and will recommend the Doctrines and Truths which they teach, to the Acceptation and Love of their very Enemies, and the Enemies of their holy Profession.

They must likewise be exemplary in their Families: A Minister must rule *well his own House, having his Children in Subjection with all Gravity,* 1 Tim. 3. 4.

And because there are so many who are ready maliciously to asperse us, we must by a serious and circumspect Conversation, cut off all Occasions from slanderous Tongues; that they who watch for our halting, may be ashamed when they can find nothing to reproach us with, save in the Matter of our God.

But if any such there be, who speak like Angels, but live like Devils; who when they are in the Pulpit, it is pity they should ever come out; and when they are out, it is great pity they should ever come into it again; who are heavenly Lights in it, but hellish Fire-brands out of it. Would to God they would consider how they destroy the very End of their Calling; and instead of converting Souls, do but harden them in their Sins, making Men abhor the Offerings and Ordinances of the Lord, putting Arguments in their Mouths to justify their continuance in their Wickedness, or else Prejudices in their Hearts, causing them to depart and separate from holy Institutions, because dispensed by profane and scandalous Ministers; let them pretend never so highly to Uniformity and Obedience, yet certainly these are the Men who have made all our Separatists, that now sadly rend our Church in pieces. For when the Sheep see a Wolf set over them instead of a Shepherd, no wonder

## the Fifth Commandment.

323

wonder if they run from him and scatter into other Pastures. It is in vain for them to tell People that they ought to be obedient to the Laws of the Church their Mother, when those that tell them so are not obedient to the Laws of God their Father. And O that they would but consider not only the Damage which they do to the Church, of which too many of them seem zealous Propugners, but the heavy Wo and Wrath which they bring upon their own Souls. Every Sermon they study, they do but draw up a Bill of Indictment against themselves; and every time they preach, they do but pronounce the Sentence of their own Damnation: And wo unto such Pastors, when they whom Christ hath set over his Sheep, shall themselves be found at the last Day standing among the Goats.

*Secondly*; Another great Duty of Ministers is, a diligent and conscientious imploying of their Gifts and Talents; they must be both able and willing to teach; they themselves must be well-grounded in the Knowledge and Doctrine of Christ: *The Priest's Lips should preserve Knowledge, and Men should seek the Law at his Mouth; for he is the Messenger of the Lord of Hosts, Mal. 2. 7.* And therefore the Apostle rejects a Novice, a raw, ignorant and unexperienced Person: *for if the Blind lead the Blind, both will be in danger of falling together into the Ditch.* And God himself tells such ignorant and foolish Teachers, *Hosea 4. 6. Because thou hast rejected Knowledge, I also will reject thee, that thou shalt be no Priest to me: seeing thou hast forgotten the Law of thy God, I also will forget thy Children.*

And as they must be able to teach, so they must be diligent in teaching: *A Necessity is laid upon them, and wo unto them if they preach not the Gospel, as the Apostle speaks, 1 Corinth. 9. 16.* They ought to be instant in season, and out of season; *2 Tim. 4. 2. Preach the Word, be instant in season, and out of season, reprove, rebuke, exhort with all Long-suffering and Doctrine.* Not as if the Minister must be continually,



## An Exposition upon

tinually in the exercise of Preaching, but he ought to preach in season, *i. e.* in the ordinary and stated Times for it; and out of season, *i. e.* on extraordinary Occasions, when the Necessity or Utility of the Church shall require it.

His Doctrine ought to be,

*1st.* Sound, such as cannot be condemned: *Tit. 2. 1. Speak thou the things which become sound Doctrine.* It must have its Authority either from the express Words of Scripture, or the Analogy of Faith rationally deduced from Scripture; for he that preacheth false Doctrine inconsistent with these, doth but mingle Poison with his Peoples Meat.

*2dly.* It must be profitable; not setting before them alien and unintelligible Notions, or such thin airy Speculations as can scarce consist with Sense, much less with Divinity: for this is to give them Wind instead of Food.

*2 Tim. 2. 14. Charge them before the Lord, that they strive not about Words to no profit, but to the subverting of the Hearers.* And *Tit. 3. 8. These things I will that thou affirm constantly, that they which have believed in God, be careful to maintain good Works: these things are good and profitable unto Men.*

*3dly.* Their Preaching must be plain, and suited to the Capacity of their Hearers as much as can be without disgusting any; for he that shall only disgorge and tumble out a heap of bombastick-theatrical Words, at which the People only stare, and gape, and wonder, preacheth to them in an unknown Tongue, although he speak English: and this is but to give them Stones instead of Bread.

*4thly.* Their Preaching must be grave and solid, not slovenly and too much neglected, for that will but beget a nauseating in the Hearers; nor yet too nicely and sprucely dressed, for that will be apt to divert the attention from the Matter to the Phrase. Their Sermons ought to have a comely and Matron-like, not a gayish and meretricious Attire.

**Attire.** The Truths they preach must be delivered in such words as may adorn, but not hide nor bury them; such as may rather recommend the Doctrine to the Consciences, than the Art and Rhetorick of the Preacher to the Ears and Fancies of the Hearers.

*Fifthly;* They ought to preach powerfully and with Authority, *1 Tim. 4. 11. These things command and teach.* We come to the People in the Name of God, and are his Ambassadors, and therefore ought to deliver his Message boldly, being sent to the People by the King of Kings, and Lord of Lords: And those who mince his Errand, as if they were afraid to speak that which God hath given them in Commission, shall at their return unto him receive the Reward of treacherous and unfaithful Messengers.

There are very many other Duties, which cannot without too much length be particularly insisted on.

As Hospitality according to the measure of their Estates, *1 Tim. 3. 2. They must be given to Hospitality. And Tit. 1. 8. They must be lovers of Hospitality.* And therefore they ought to be liberally and plentifully endowed, that they may make their Table a Snare in a good sense, and may get some to follow and observe them, tho' it be but for the Loaves. And here it will be a good Point of their Wisdom, if they can handsomly make use of such Opportunities (as we find our Saviour did after he had miraculously fed the Multitude) to break unto them the Bread of Life, and with their bodily Nourishment to feed their Souls.

Then Gravity in their Discourse, and in all their Converse: A Minister should neither speak nor do any thing that is unseemly. Intemperate Mirth, clamorous Talk, scurrilous Jestings, but especially the least syllable of an Oath, and so it be never so much varied and disguised, in a Minister's Mouth, as it is wicked, so it is utterly mis-

R r

becoming

## An Exposition upon

becoming the Dignity of his Profession, and renders him mean and contemptible.

Again; A pious and assiduous Care in visiting the Sick, who are certainly most capable of good Advice and Counsel then, altho perhaps they have all their Life-time before despised and refused it. You may possibly do more good by the sick Bed, than in the Pulpit: For Death is a terrible and thundering Preacher; and he must needs be a most forlorn and obdurate Wretch who will not listen to your Admonitions, when the hopes of a long Life, which made him formerly reject them, have forsaken him.

Again; Diligence in catechising and instructing the Younger in the Principles of Faith and Religion; root them well at first, and they will continue stable ever after. This will save your selves and your Successors much Labour afterwards: for if once you can insinuate into their Minds Piety and Verity, they will grow up to farther degrees of Perfection in the ordinary course of your Ministry, and be your Comfort and Rejoycing here, and your Crown and Glory hereafter.

There are many other Duties necessary to the right discharge of the Ministerial Function, but these already mentioned shall suffice; and all others may be reduced to some of these. I shall therefore conclude this with my earnest Request, that you would ever seriously meditate upon that Charge which God gives the Prophet, and in him all Ministers, Ezek. 3. 17, 18, 19. *Son of Man, I have made thee a Watchman unto the House of Israel; therefore hear the Word at my Mouth, and give them warning from me. When I say unto the Wicked, Thou shalt surely die; and thou givest him not warning, nor speakest to warn the Wicked of his evil way to save his Life; the same wicked Man shall die in his Iniquity; but his Blood will I require at thine Hand. Yet if thou warn the Wicked, and he turn not from his Wickedness, he shall die in his Iniquity, but thou hast delivered thy Soul.*

The

## the Fifth Commandment.

327

The Peoples Duty towards their Minister is especially twofold.

*First*, Obedience, in being perswaded by his good Advice and Admonitions. We have this most expressly commanded, *Heb. 13. 17. Obey them which have the Rule over you*; that is, not only Civil Magistrates, and your Rulers in State-Affairs, but Ministers also; for so it is added, *for they watch for your Souls, as those that must give an account; that they may do it with Joy, and not with Grief.* And they are called the Elders that rule well, *1 Tim. 5. 17.* I know that this Obedience to Ministers is a Duty so utterly forgotten in the Practice of most Men, that I doubt of some Prejudice in them against these places of Scripture by which it is so plainly enjoyned. Alas, that ever Christ and his Apostle should invest us with such Authority, which when we assume, we are look'd upon by the People as almost ridiculous for it, as if we had only a Reed in our Hands, and a Crown of Shame rather than of Dignity put upon our Heads, and are accounted of rather as insolent Usurpers upon their Liberty, than as Officers impower'd by God himself. Sirs, we take to our selves no Power over you, but what God hath by his Patent and Charter given us; and when we propound to you the Will of God revealed in his Word; or in Cases not so clearly determined therein, do give our Judgment as those who have found Mercy to be accounted faithful, we do, and may challenge your Obedience to it in the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ. For we find that in those particular Cases wherein the Apostle had no express Revelation from Christ, yet he prescribes to the *Corinthians* what he judges fit for them to do, and by that Direction obliged their Practice, not indeed simply and absolutely, yet so that in such Circumstances as the Apostle supposeth, they had sinned if they had done

R r 2

other-

## An Exposition upon

otherwise than he directed them. We desire not to lord it over God's Inheritance by any burdensom Imposition of things either unlawful, or in themselves unfit. But when we require from you those things which God himself hath commanded; or if not expressly commanded, yet are in the Judgment of those to whom you owe Obedience, thought convenient and lawful to be done, I know not how you can excuse your selves from Disobedience against God, if in these Cases you be not obedient unto us: And if you call this Usurpation, and a taking too much upon us, you

Numb. 16. do but speak the Language of *Corah* and his Complices,  
 3. and shake not so much ours, as God's Title and Authority over you, who hath given us this Power and Commission.

*Secondly*; Another Duty of the People is to honour their Ministers as their Spiritual Fathers: Yea the Apostle speaks of a double Honour that is due to them, *1 Tim. 5. 17. Let Elders that rule well, be accounted worthy of double Honour.* All must have that Honour given them which is due to their Function, but those who rule the Flock well, *καλῶς, i. e.* not barely commendably, but excellently, must have this Honour doubled to them: and those who not only thus rule, but excel others in teaching them likewise, must have this double Honour doubled upon them; especially they that labour in the Word and Doctrine.

Now this double Honour is commonly taken for the Honour of Reverence, and the Honour of Maintenance; and perhaps this place doth most especially mean this latter, when it speaks of double Honour. For this word *μῆτι* often signifies Reward and Maintenance, and is in that sense used in this very Chapter, *ver. 3. χήρας μῆτι, τὰς ὄντας* *μῆτις*, Honour Widows, *i. e.* relieve Widows, that are Widows indeed. And here by the way we may see how groundless the Assertion is, who from this place establish an Order, new and unknown to the Church of God till of late, of Lay-ruling Elders. For if this Text gives them

them any such Authority, it gives them the double Honour too ; and so consequently, by Divine Right they may challenge Maintenance from the People, as well the Ministers themselves ; nay, and if they rule well, a large and plentiful Maintenance, double as much as may suffice others of their own Rank and Order ; which Honour when they shall challenge to themselves, as doubtless they may upon as good Proof and Evidence as the Authority they pretend to, certainly their Pastors will find greater reason to annihilate these Creatures of their Fancy and polirick Accommodation, than ever they had to forge them.

But to return. We owe them,

*First, The Honour of Reverence. We ought to honour and esteem them for their Office and their Work-sake. So expressly, 1 Thess. 5. 12, 13. We beseech you, Brethren, to know them which labour among you : and to esteem them very highly in Love for their Work-sake. And again, Phil. 2. 29. Receive him therefore in the Lord with all Gladness, and hold such in Reputation. And certainly they who cast any Contempt upon Ministers, either by injurious Actions, or reviling Speeches (as it is grown a common Custom, to make them a By-word, a very Scoff, and Song of the Drunkards) do not so much despise them, as Christ who sent them. He that despiseth you, despiseth me, saith our Saviour, Luke 10. 16. And God will not leave this Sin unpunish'd, yea he speaks of it as almost an unpardonable Crime, 2 Chron. 36. 16. They mocked the Messengers of God, and despised his Words, and misused his Prophets, until the Wrath of God was against his People, and there was no Remedy.*

*Secondly ; They owe unto them the Honour of Maintenance. So Gal. 6. 6. Let him that is taught in the Word, communicate unto him that teacheth, in all good things. And there is good reason for it : For if we have sown unto you spiritual*  
*Things,*

## An Exposition upon

*Things; is it a great thing if we shall reap your carnal Things?* saith the Apostle, 1 Cor. 9. 11. What you give them is not a matter of Bounty, and mere voluntary Benevolence; and the Minister who so accounts, or receives it, undervalues his Authority, and wrongs his Right; but it is your Duty, and his due. He must have a competent and liberal Maintenance, not stinted to the bare size of necessity, but it should be affluence, such as may enable him to relieve the Necessities of others, to provide comfortably for his own Family, and to use Hospitality in his House: This is his due, and he owes you no more Thanks for tendering it, than you do him for receiving it. Not here to dispute the Divine Right of the tenth part, (which yet was not all that was due to the Ministers under the Law, for they had a considerable Accession by Offerings and Sacrifices:) I think it certain that the Incouragement of Ministers under the Gospel should equal, if not exceed theirs, in as much as our Labour is far greater, and our Ministry more excellent than theirs. But they who think it fit to keep Ministers poor and dependant, may well be suspected to do it in favour of their own Vices: For how shall he dare to reprove them, who is afraid of losing part of his Stipend, or the Benefit of his Patron's Trencher? But whilst the Gentleman in black must sit below the Salt, and after Dinner converse with the better sort of Serving-men, there is no danger that he should be so audacious as to find faults; or if he should, no great heed will be taken to what so despicable a thing as he can say.

Thus much for the Duties of Ministers and People.

The first Head of mutual Duties between Superiours and Inferiours that I shall insist on, is, between those who differ in the Gifts of Divine Bounty. And these may be considered, either as the Gifts of special Grace, or of common Providence. Of which briefly.

*First;*

*First* ; God doth indow some with an excellent measure of sanctifying Grace, and is pleased to shew the World by a few rare and choice Instances, how wonderfully he can sublime our corrupted Nature, and how near he can exalt Humane Frailty to an Angelical Perfection. This indeed is the most excellent of all his Gifts, and that which we ought most earnestly to covet and desire: For altho other Gifts, as Knowledg, Wisdom, Power, &c. do in some imperfect manner assimilate us unto God ; yet Sanctity and Holiness doth far transcend all these, both because it stamps upon us the Resemblance of the Divine Nature, in that Attribute which is its greatest Glory (whence God assumes it to his Style, that he is glorious in Holiness) and likewise because God hath highly honoured it, and given it the Dignity and Prerogative to be the only means of bringing us to the compleat and eternal Fruition of our Felicity.

Now those whom God hath thus blessed with an eminent degree of this his best Gift, ought,

*First*, To beware that they do not secretly despise their weaker Brethren in their Hearts, nor with a censorious Austerity reject those whom God hath received. It is often seen that Fellow-Servants are more inexorable each to other, than their common Lord and Master ; and that those Errours and Infirmities which are rather the slips of Inocogitancy, than the Products of a resolved Will, can hardly obtain pardon among Men, though God hath forgiven and forgotten them. Now this ariseth from a spiritual Pride, which makes us envious towards those who excel us, and scornful towards those who fall short. For when Men grow conceited of their own Excellencies and Attainments, they will be ready to condemn other Mens Duties, as formal Hypocrisy, and their Sins as total Apostasy ; they will mistake the smoking Flax for a raking Dunghil, and be forward imperiously to cast them out of God's Family, though themselves.



## An Exposition upon

selves were but lately received into it out of mere Charity. Certainly this is a Spirit (though it too much prevails in this broken and shattered Age, wherein every one thinks so much the better of himself, by how much the worse he thinks of others; yet this I say is a Spirit) utterly misbecoming the sweetness and mildness of the Gospel, which teacheth us to be meek and gentle, forbearing one another, and forgiving one another. It would better become thee, O Christian, not to observe other Mens Falls, but to look to thine own Standing: *Thou standest by Faith: be not high minded, but fear,* Rom. 11. 20. It is the worst way that so excellent a thing as divine Grace can be perverted, when it makes thee proud and censorious. For my part, I should much more confide in the security of an humble Soul that creeps along to Heaven, though with a slow yet an even Pace, than in the extatick Zeal and Fervour of such who perhaps far out-strip others, but also condemn them: for the one is still pressing forward, and regards with admiration those who excel; but the other is often looking back with disdain upon those who are slower than himself, and whilst he minds not so much his Way, as the Advances he hath made, offers many Advantages to the Devil to trip him up, and give him many a sore and shameful Fall. And therefore, O Christian, the more eminent thy Graces are, the more need hast thou to pray and strive for Humility. The tallest Cedars had need have the deepest Roots, otherwise the Storms and Winds will easily overturn them: So truly the higher any grow, the more they spread and flourish, being like the Cedars of God, beautiful in their Leaves, and plentiful in their Sap, the more need have they to be deeply rooted in Humility; or else believe it, the Wind and Tempest of Temptations, to which they stand more exposed than others, will not only sorely shake them, but utterly overturn them; when those whom they shall despise as mean Shrubs, shall stand secure, and with a tender pity weep over their Fall.

Se-

*Secondly,* Another Duty of such as are eminent in Grace, is to improve it to the benefit and advantage of others. God hath given thee a larger Portion, that thou shouldst be helpful to thy Brethren. The Stock of Grace which he hath offered thee, is not only that thou thy self shouldst live well upon it, but it was intended for the Relief and Comfort of the whole Family. Hath God indowed thee with a clear and distinct Knowledg of the Mysteries of the Gospel? know that this Lamp was lighted up in thee, that thou shouldst give Light unto others, that thou shouldst diffuse and scatter abroad its Rays round about thee, to inform the Ignorant, guide the Doubting, confirm the Wavering, resolve the Scrupulous, reduce the Erroneous, and convince the malicious Opposers of the Truth. This is not the Minister's Duty only, though more eminently and especially his, but it is the Duty of every private Christian, whom God hath blessed with a large measure of true Knowledg more than others, still keeping within his due Bounds and Limits. Or, hath the holy Spirit kindled in thy Breast a Flame of divine Affection? and is it not to this end, that thou shouldst breath Warmth into the languishing Desires of others, and by holy Conferences and spiritual Discourses, illustrating the Beauty of Holiness, the Excellency of true Piety in it self, and the Rewards it brings after it, apply thy heavenly Fire unto their chill and freezing Hearts, until thou hast inkindled them too, and set them on a Flame, that so both together might burn with vigorous Love towards God and his Christ? Or, hath God exercised thee with grievous Trials, and violent Temptations? wherefore is it, but that thou shouldst the better know how to succour those that are tempted; and by thine own Experiences, counsel and comfort those who are ready to sink under their Load, which not only the Weight, but the Unusualness makes the more intolerable? For the greatest Accent and Emphasis that such do usually put upon their

S f

Mise-

## An Exposition upon

Miseries, is, that never any before were so severely afflicted, never any before were so violently assaulted. Let them know, that no Temptation hath befallen them, but what is common unto Men, and that thou thy self hast come triumphantly from under the like: Expound to them the Depths and Methods of Satan; unravel his Wiles and Subtilties; stretch out the intangled Folds of that old and crooked Serpent: for therefore hath God comforted you in all your Tribulations, that you might be able to comfort them who are troubled, with the same Comforts by which your selves have been comforted of God, as the Apostle speaks, *2 Corinth. 1. 4.* Or, if thou art not so fit either for Instruction or Counsel, yet at least let thy Graces be beneficial unto others by an holy and exemplary Conversation; if thy Graces cannot shine through thy Gifts, yet at least let them shine through thy Life, that others seeing thy good Works, may give Glory to thy heavenly Father. And therefore never complain that thou canst not honour God in so noble a Way as others, that thou canst not speak, nor plead for him as others do. If thou livest to him, thou pleadest for him; for certainly an holy Life is a much better Commendation of Holiness, than all the elaborate Encomiums of Art and Rhetorick. These are the Duties of those that excel in Grace.

As for others, their Duty is,

*First,* Highly to love and esteem those whose Graces are more eminent and conspicuous. God is the comprehensive and ultimate Object of our Love and Veneration; and therefore the nearer any Creature approacheth to the Similitude of God, the more ought we to esteem and prize it. Now God is not more lively represented in any thing, than in the Holiness of his Saints. This is the most perfect Portraiture and Image of him who hath stiled himself the Holy One of *Israel*. They are begotten of God, made Partakers,

takers of the Divine Nature, and conformed unto his Image: And therefore as we would adore this glorious Attribute of God in its infinite Original, so we ought to esteem and venerate it in these happy Souls, to whom God hath communicated some Rays and Strictures of it. *Every one that loveth him that begat, loveth him also that is begotten of him*, saith the Apostle, *1 John 5. 1.* because of the Likeness he bears to his heavenly Father: and the more express this Resemblance is, the more intense, and the more endearing should our Affections be. We ought to associate with them, to make them our Bosom-friends, our Confidants, and our Companions; our delight should be in the Saints, and in the excellent Ones of the Earth, as *David* professeth his to have been, *Psal. 16. 3.*

*Secondly*; Another Duty is, Imitation of their holy Examples, and following of them wherein they follow the Lord Christ. If thou seest others far out-strip thee, mend thy Pace, endeavour to overtake them, tread in the same Steps, and do thy very utmost to keep even with them; envy not their Graces, but be sure to emulate them. Indeed some there are, who that they might not seem to be behind the best, prove Hindrances and Pull-backs to them, lest the forwardness of their Zeal and Piety, should be a Reproach to their own Sloth; like Truants at School, who, lest their Fellows should get too much before them, do what they can to intice them from their Books. But this is a most wicked Envy, and the Root of it is Pride and Laziness. But an holy Emulation never repines at, or hinders the Proficiency of others, it rather would by all means promote it; but only it will put us upon endeavours to be as forward as any. It will not be a Curb to them, but a Spur to us. And such an Emulation as this, every true Christian should highly cherish. For the shame of being out-striped, is as great an Incentive, as any can be given unto Vertue. Christians are like a Company of Men running in a Race, every one

## An Exposition upon

should strive, and strain every Nerve and Sinew to be first at the Goal, the first that should lay hold on the Prize and Reward: And here be sure you set your Patern right; take not the most noisy and airy Christians, who glory in Talk and Censures; take not one who hath an Affectation of being religious after a new Mode and Fashion; take not one who seeks to raise a Fame for Piety only, by decrying or condemning this or that Form of Profession; and who, if there were no Differences among us, would lose very much of his Reputation for Sanctity. For these are only Torrents that run with a violent Stream; but they are shallow, and we know not how soon they may grow dry, and deceive the hopes of those who come to refresh themselves at them. But propound those to your selves for Examples, who are of fixed Principles, and sober Practices, who are grave and solid, and in all the Duties that belong to a Christian-Conversation, labour to do them substantially rather than ostentatiously; that live within God and themselves, that have deep Thoughts, and solid Expressions of them, and whose Actions are sutable and correspondent to both. Such an one is the Christian indeed, and such (for some such there are,) I recommend to you for your Imitation. And yet there is no Man that walks so uprightly, but that sometimes he steps awry. And therefore be not led by a blind and implicit Adherence to them, but continually eye the Rule; and wherein soever they forsake that, be they Apostles, yea, or if it were possible, even Angels themselves, therein forsake them.

And thus much for the mutual Duties of Superiours, and Inferiours, in respect of Grace.

Let us next consider them in respect of the Gifts of God's common Bounty, which he promiscuously distributes both to the Good and to the Bad; I shall but briefly mention them unto you.

God's.

God's Gifts of Providence may respect either their Persons, or else their outward Estate.

Those which respect the Person, are either Gifts of the Mind, or of the Body.

*First* ; Those who excel in Gifts of the Mind, in Knowledge, and Wisdom, and Parts, a profound Judgment, or a winning Elocution, &c. they ought to improve these to the Good and Advantage of others ; not as *Achitophel* did his politick Counsel, or *Tertullus* his flattering Oratory, to oppress Right and Equity, but to guide and advise for the benefit of Mankind, and the glory of God. For these Gifts, though they are not sanctifying, yet may be very serviceable to the Church. *Hiram* though he were a Stranger to the Common-wealth of *Israel*, yet provided many excellent Materials for the Building of the Temple. So God doth many times imbellish those who are Strangers to him, with many admirable Ornaments of Understanding and Learning, and makes use of the Materials which they have prepared and laid in, for the Edification of his Church. And as *Noah* employed many to build his Ark, who were themselves overwhelmed in the Deluge ; so God many times employs such as these to build his Ark the Church, who yet may at last be swept away with the Deluge of his Wrath, and drowned in Perdition : These, though they should possess such Gifts without any sanctifying and saving Grace, yet are they very considerable Men ; and our Duty is to esteem and reverence them, to love their Excellencies, and to encourage their Labours, to praise God for them, and pray for an increase of their Gifts. How much more then, when their natural and acquired Endowments are conjoined with sanctifying Grace, and the Love of the Truth doth as much possess their Hearts, as the Knowledge of it doth their Heads ? It is a sordid Baseness to detract

## An Exposition upon

tract from any Man's Worth, or extenuate his Abilities, by some slanderous Buts, and Exceptions, which is the dissingenuous Practice of many, who think all that added to their own Praise, which they thus nibble away from another Man's.

*Secondly*; Another Superiority which God hath granted some over others, is that of old Age, which is of it self reverend and awful; and we ought to give that due Respect unto it, which both Nature and the Law of God requires, *Levit. 19. 32. Thou shalt rise up before the hoary Head, and honour the Face of the old Man, and fear thy God.* God hath put a signal Honour upon it, by stiling himself the *Antient of Days*, *Dan. 7. 9.* and he threatens it as a great Judgment upon a People, *Isa. 3. 5. That the Children shall behave themselves proudly against the Ancients.* We read how severely a Scorn cast upon an aged Prophet, was revenged in those Children which mock'd his Baldness. A reverend Awe before them is not only a Point of Manners, but part of a moral and express Duty; and therefore it is said of *Elihu*, *Job 32. 4.* that he waited till *Job* had spoken, because they were elder than he; and *ver. 6.* he saith, *I am young, and ye are very old, wherefore I was afraid, I durst not shew you mine Opinion.*

And if such Respect and Reverence be due unto them from others, they ought chiefly to reverence themselves, and by grave, and prudent, and holy Actions, to put a Crown of Glory upon their own gray Heads. They ought not to be vain and light in their Converse, nor Children of an hundred Years old, nor by the Folly and Wickedness of their Lives, expose themselves to that Contempt which will certainly be cast upon them where Age is not accompanied with Gravity and Prudence. And therefore we find it, *Prov. 16. 31. The hoary Head is a Crown of Glory, if it be found in the way of Righteousness*; otherwise instead of being

ing a Glory, it is but a double Shame and Reproach.

*Thirdly*; There is another sort of the Gifts of common Providence, wherein some excel others, and that is, Riches and Honour: These the Scripture calls Fathers. *Nabal* altho he were a Fool and a Churl, yet *David* in his Messages to him, doth implicitly call him Father, 1 *Sam.* 25. 8. *Give, I pray thee, whatsoever cometh unto thine hand, unto thy Servants, and unto thy Son David.*

Their Duty is to be humble towards their Inferiours, knowing that they are only external Goods; and those the least considerable of all the Stores of God's Blessings that make them to differ from others. And to communicate to the relief of others Necessities, that they may be rich in good Works, and make themselves Friends of the Mammon of Unrighteousness, that when they fail they may be received into everlasting Habitations: for he that is rich only in hoarding and keeping up his Store, is no better to be accounted of, than the base Earth, which locks up more Treasures in its Bowels, than they can in their Chests.

And their Inferiours Duty, is to pay them all due Respects according to what God hath bestowed upon them; to acknowledg the Riches of God in making them rich, and to endeavour to promote as far as in them lies, the spiritual Good of their Souls, that they may not be rich here, and undone eternally. For a rich Man may be more universally instrumental either of Good or Evil, than others can: and therefore to win such an one to the Faith, or to preserve him stable in it, is a most charitable Work, not only to their Souls in particular, but to the Church of Christ; the Affairs of which may be much advanced by such a Man's Wealth and Interest.

And so much for this last Relation between Inferiours and Superiours, in the Gifts of God's especial Grace or common Bounty.

Thus



## An Exposition upon

Thus now I have at last gone through the mutual Duties of many Relations; some Natural, some Civil, some Ecclesiastical, and some Oeconomical; I know not with what Acceptation or Success. Possibly some may think these things too mean and trivial to be so long insisted on. But let me tell such, that Relative Duties, as they are the most difficult of all others to perform, so they are the best Trials of true Christianity, and the Power of Godliness: He that indeavours not to walk closely with God in these, let his Notions and Profession be never so lofty and sublime, it will be no uncharitableness at all to judge that all his Pomp is but a mere Form of Godliness, and an hypocritical Ostentation.

Let me exhort you therefore in the fear of God, that ye would be much in pondring these things. There needs no great Labour to understand them, nor to find out Mysteries and concealed Depths in them. It is true they are plain, but they are of daily use; and it is but requisite that we should not be long understanding what we are continually to practise.

Let me subjoin but one general Rule to this, and I have done with it; and that is, That in all these mutual Duties, it is no excuse for the one Party to fail of the most conscientious and careful Performance of what belongs to him, because the other doth so. For certainly another Man's Sin cannot excuse mine; and God hath bound us in duty not only to one another, but all of us unto himself. And therefore although they may break their Obligations and Covenants, yet that doth not take off our Obligation. Should the Father be careless of, and cruel to his Child, yet this doth not at all exempt him from paying Duty and Obedience unto his Father: Should a Master be tyrannical over his Servant, yet the Servant's Duty remains still stated and unaltered, to reverence, fear and

and obey him. Should a Minister be careless of the Flock committed to his Charge, yet his People are still bound to give him Respect and Honour in regard of his Office. Should a Magistrate tyrannize over his Subjects, yet still they are to own him, and obey his Commands in all lawful things. For Mal-administration of any Office, or any Authority, cannot countenance and excuse want of Duty in Inferiours; still we are as carefully to perform what God hath required, as if they were the best Parents, or Magistrates, or Masters in the World: And if there be any wrong done, or defect on their Part, we must leave it to him to reward our conscientious Obedience, and to punish their wilful Offences. And so likewise it is incumbent upon Superiours to perform their Duties faithfully and conscientiously toward their Inferiours, be they never so perverse, ingrateful, or rebellious; for their Faults cannot excuse our Neglects.

And thus much for this large and comprehensive Precept, *Honour thy Father and thy Mother.*

To the Precept is added the Promise, as a Motive and Encouragement to Obedience; *That thy Days may be long in the Land which the Lord thy God giveth thee.* And this Promise God's Faithfulness stands engaged to fulfil to all that are dutiful and obedient.

Now here we may observe, that whereas the free and genuine Administration of the Gospel, promiseth eternal Life, and the Joys and Glories of Heaven to Believers; the old Law runs generally upon earthly and temporal Blessings; and among them insists frequently upon length of Days, and an happy and prosperous Life, as the chiefest Blessing and highest Expectation of humane Nature: which must not be so understood, as if the Promises of the Law were only for these beggarly and terrene Con-

T. t

cern-

ceriments; but because this Procedure was more suitable to the whole System of that Pedagogy wherein God thought fit to discipline them by Types, and to lead them unto the Sun by Shadows: Therefore as he allayed his own spiritual Worship with the mixture of very many external Rites, and pompous Observances; so he propounded likewise their eternal Rewards unto them, by temporal and earthly Promises; and by both attempered their Religion unto their estate of Infancy, bringing it down as much as possible to the Verdict of Sense, reserving the manly and heroick Duties of believing his Word without a Pawn, to the more grown Ages of the Church.

But howsoever, although these Promises made to the Jews were thus typical, yet these Figures were not altogether so figurative, as not to be properly understood and fulfilled. Though Heaven were typified by *Canaan*, yet God's Veracity would have suffered, if he had brought them to Heaven, the true Land of Promise, and not given them their Inheritance in the earthly *Canaan*; so likewise that God might be true to his Promise, it is not enough that he rewards the Obedient with eternal Life, but his Faithfulness stands obliged to prolong their temporal Life, to such a Duration as may be fit at least to make a Type of the everlasting Rest.

Neither doth the more spiritual Dispensation of the Gospel, look upon this Blessing of long Life, as a thing below its Cognizance, but propounds it as a Promise of Moment, though it be now divested of its typical use, and stands for no more than it self signifies. And therefore we find that the Apostle puts a Value upon this Fifth Commandment on this very Reason, that it is the first with Promise, *Eph. 6. 23.* And St. Peter at large transcribes that Passage of *Psal. 34.* *What Man is he that desireth to live; and loveth many Days? let him depart from Evil, and do Good, &c.* And St. Paul tells

tells us, that Godliness is profitable unto all things, having the Promises of this Life, and of that which is to come. And what is there that can concern this Life, more than Life itself? God's Faithfulness is therefore obliged by Promise, to lengthen out an holy and obedient Life.

Not will it be very hard to vindicate his Faithfulness in the performance of this Promise; although God suffer many to grow Old in their Sins, whose Youth began their Course of Wickedness with Rebellion against their Parents, and who continue to their decrepit Days, their Impieties and Rebellions against God; when as early Towardliness and Piety, are generally look'd upon as mortal Symtoms; and God seems especially to shorten their Days to whom he here promiseth a long Life. For since this present Life is nothing else but a Tendency and Preparative unto Eternity, neither it nor any thing in it can be called Good, but only as it relates to our eternal State. And therefore all Promises of earthly Blessings, must necessarily imply this Condition, that they shall be literally fulfilled unto us, if they may promote our eternal Happiness; otherwise they would not be Promises, but Threatnings; and that which we apprehend a Blessing, would indeed prove no other to us than a Snare and Curse. We may boldly challenge long Life, when all the Circumstances of it will tend to our everlasting Welfare. But God, who knows how frail and yielding the best of us are, and in the Series of his Divine Providence, seeth what prevailing Temptations we shall be exposed unto, doth oftentimes in Mercy abridge this Promise, and takes us from the World, lest the World should take us from him; and deals with us as Princes deal with Duellists, they make them Prisoners, that they might preserve them: So God that he might preserve his People from their great Enemy, commits them to safe Custody of the Grave. And if this be to be unfaithful, certainly his Faith-

## An Exposition upon

Faithfulness would be nothing else but an Art to circumvent and undo us; should he only to keep that inviolate, perform those Promises which would be to our Hurt and Detriment. Nor indeed can any Man, whom God hath blessed with a right Judgment and due Esteem of things, be willing to compound for the Continuance of this present Life, with the Hazard or Diminution of his future Happiness.

Thus much for the Explication of the Fifth Commandment.

THE

---

## THE SIXTH COMMANDMENT.

### **Thou shalt not kill.**

**T**HE Commandments of the Second Table, do all of them immediately respect that Duty which we owe unto Men; whom we may consider, either, as under some peculiar Differences; or else in their common Nature. We have already spoken concerning the Duties that belong unto them under the first Acception, as they are differenced into *Superiours*, and *Inferiours*. There are other Duties, which appertain universally unto all, under what Difference soever they may be considered; whether they be *Superiours*, or *Inferiours*, or *Equals* among themselves; and these are contained in the five following Precepts; all which concern our Neighbour, either in his Person, or in his exterior Gifts, of Wealth, or Good Name.

His Person is to be considered, either naturally, or Mystically: Naturally, as he is this individual Man; and so the Sixth Commandment provides for his Security: *Thou shalt not kill*. Mystically, as he is in the state of Marriage; which, of Two, makes up one Mystical Person: And so Care is taken for him in the Seventh; *Thou shalt not commit Adultery*.

If we consider him in his External Gifts, so his Estate and Substance is safeguarded by the Eighth Commandment; *Thou shalt not steal*: His Reputation, and good Name by

## An Exposition upon

the Ninth; *Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy Neighbour.*

- And as a strong Fence set about him, and also about the other Laws, that neither of them be violated, God hath not only prohibited the outward Acts of gross and flagitious Crimes, but the inward, and lurking Motions unto Evil, in our Thoughts and Affections; and this, in the Tenth Commandment: *Thou shalt not covet.*

I shall begin with the first of these; which takes care for the Security, and Indemnity of our Persons; *Thou shalt not kill.* And this forbids that barbarous and inhumane Sin of Murder, that First-born of the Devil, who was a *Murderer from the beginning*; the first branded Crime that we read of, wherein natural Corruption, contracted by the Fall, vented its Rancour and Virulence, the Sin of *Cain*, that great Instance of Perdition, who slew his Brother *Abel*, because his Brother's Works were *righteous*, and his own *evil*.

Neither doth this Precept confine it self only to forbid the actual Sin of Murder; but all Degrees, and all Causes of it; as Hatred, and rash Anger, Revenge, and Slanders, and false Accusations; and whatsoever may prejudice the Safety of our Neighbour, or tempt us to see him perish, when it is in our power to rescue, and relieve him.

\* *Manichei. Aug. de Civit. Dei, l. 1. c. 20.*

Some old Hereticks \* extended the Sense of this Prohibition, *Thou shalt not kill*, even unto Brute Creatures themselves; holding it unlawful to slay any of them for the Use and Service of our Life. Possibly indeed, Unmercifulness even towards them, and a cruel tormenting of them, not to satisfy our Occasions, and Necessities, but our unreasonable Passions, may be reducible as a Sin against this Commandment, (for all Acts of Cruelty are so;) but simply to kill them for our Necessity, cannot: God the universal Lord both of them, and us, hath granted us this Prerogative in our Charter, to have the power of Life and Death over them.

*Gen.*

## the Sixth Commandment

*Gen. 9. 3. Every moving Thing that liveth, shall be Meat for you.* And doubtless we may put them to any kind of Death, that the necessity either of our Food or Physick will require. This *Killing* therefore, forbidden in the Text, refers only unto Men, like our selves; and therefore it is very properly rendred by others, *Thou shalt do no Murther.*

Yet neither is every killing of a Man *Murther*: For there are several Cases, wherein, although one kill another, yet he is no *Murtherer*: As,

*First*, In the Execution of Justice. Magistrates, and such who have lawful Power and Authority, may, and ought to put capital Offenders to Death, and if they do not, God will charge it upon them as their Sin. It is an ancient Law upon Record, *Gen. 9. 6. Whosoever sheddeth Man's Blood, by Man shall his Blood be shed*; as if there were no other way for Expiation, no other Method to wash away the stain and guilt of Blood, but only by his who unjustly spilt it. And Again, *Deut. 19. 21. Thine Eye shall not pity; but Life shall go for Life.* And indeed, if we rightly consider it, this is not to Butcher up Mankind, but to preserve them. God hath commanded Magistrates to kill, that he might prevent *Murther*: For our Nature is so extremely corrupt, that there is no other effectual way to hinder us from killing, but by enjoining the Magistrates to do it. And therefore as Physicians, in cases of violent, and immoderate Bleeding, do often open a Vein in another part of the Body, as the best Method to stop it by Revulsion; so when the Body Politick bleeds by private rage and revenge, gushing out into *Murthers*, the way to stop this Blood, is to shed Blood.

Neither doth our Saviour's Command, not to *resist evil*, *Matth. 5. 39.* gainsay this legal and punitive way of Blood-shedding: For those words do only forbid private Revenge, not publick. We must not be Judges in our own Causes, nor when we apprehend our selves wronged, carve out to our selves what Measures of Revenge our Wrath and Fury shall dictate;



## An Exposition upon

disstate; we who have no Authority, or Commission, ought not to take Life for Life, nor Eye for Eye, nor Tooth for Tooth, much less Life for an Injurious Word, or an idle Quarrel; we must not repay with the least revenge, those who have done us the greatest wrongs; in which sense, we must not resist evil; but if we have in any thing suffered wrong, we ought to bring all our Causes and Complaints to the Magistrate; for into his Hands hath God put the *Sword of Justice*, Rom. 13. 4. *Revenge* is so sacred a thing, that none ought to intermeddle with it but those whom God hath appointed; for he hath solemnly ascribed it to himself, *Heb. 10. 30. Vengeance belongeth unto me; I will recompense, saith the Lord.* And he hath constituted the Magistrate, as his Deputy, in this Work and Office; and therefore he only ought to revenge, by Punishment proportionable to the nature of the Crimes committed: So that to speak properly, it is only God, and not Man, that sheds the Blood of wicked Persons. The Magistrate receives his Commission from God, and doth it as his Minister, and Servant; yea, and in doing it, is so far from doing a cruel and unjust Act, an Act that will either pollute his Hands, or stain his Conscience, that it makes him the more holy and pure: And therefore when *Moses* called the *Levites* to slay those *Idolaters* that had worshipped the *Golden Calf*, he speaks of it, as an holy Function, *Exod. 32. 29. Consecrate yourselves to day unto the Lord; every Man upon his Son, and upon his Brother, that he may bestow upon you a Blessing this day.*

Secondly, There may be Blood-shed in a just and lawful War, without the charge or crime of *Murder*. Indeed we are commanded to *follow Peace with all Men*, and as much as lies in us, and, if possible, to *have Peace with all Men*, Rom. 12. 18. But sometimes, through the Ambition, and turbulent Spirits of others, through their politick Designs of picking unjust Quarrels, it may be no longer possible to main-  
tain

## the Sixth Commandment.

5

tain Peace; and in this case, where we have Right, and Equity on our side, it is lawful to wage War : I speak not now of private Differences between Person and Person; but of publick, between Nation and Nation : In which Case, the Supreme Magistrate hath the power of making War, and proclaiming Peace.

There are some who decry this Assertion, and think it contrary to the Temper of a Christian, who is a Son of Peace, to be a Man of War. I confess, there is nothing that can justify War against another Nation, but either,

*First*, Necessary Defence against an unjust Invasion: Or,

*Secondly*, Recovery of what is unjustly taken away. Thus *David* pursued the *Amalekites*, who had carried his Wives away Captives : Or,

*Thirdly*, The punishing of some great Injury and Wrong. Thus *David* likewise wars against the *Ammonites*, for the contumelious Usage of his Ambassadors.

But where the Cause is just, the Manner in which we prosecute it is warrantable, the Authority which engageth us in it, being rightly constituted over us, I see nothing but that it is very fit, when it is very necessary, to take up Arms, and in a publick War to right ourselves upon injurious Enemies: For, as there may be many wrongs done by one Party against another, who must be judged by the Law common to them both; so there may be many wrongs by one Nation against another; which, if they will not consent to redress, there being no common Magistrate, nor common Law over them both, (except the Law, and Right of Nations, of which, the more powerful usually make little account;) in this case, certainly the injured may very justly have recourse to War. For, what Law is to Persons of the same Nation, that War is to Persons of a different Nation.

We.

## An Exposition upon

We read, That among those many Penitents that came to *John the Baptist*, for Instruction, when Soldiers also came, he did not bid them lay down their Arms, or their Commission: He preach'd not to them, *Fight no more, Kill no Man*; but gives them directions how they should demean themselves in their Calling: Which he would not have done, if he thought their Calling in self unlawful. He bids them *do no violence, accuse no man falsely; but be content with your Pay, or Wages*, Luke 3. 14. Neither did our Saviour, when he so highly commended the Centurion for his Faith, rebuke him for his Profession; but extolls him for taking the Ground and Argument of his Faith, from his Military Calling, Luke 7. 8. *I am a Man under Authority, having Soldiers under me; and I say unto one go, and he goes; and to another come, and he comes; and to my Servant, do this, and he doth it.* This very Calling of his he urgeth Christ with, and makes it an Argument to strengthen his Faith, that certainly Christ was able to cure his *sick Servant*; because, if he, who was but a Captain, had such Authority over his Soldiers, to command them to come, and to go at his Word; how much more absolute Power had Jesus, as Lord both of Life and Death, over all Bodily Diseases, to command them to come, and to go at his pleasure. This I take to be the Force and Reason of his Words: Upon which Christ gives him this large Testimonial and *Encomium*, Verse 9. *When Jesus heard these things, he marvelled, and turned him about; and said unto the People, I have not found so great Faith, no, not in Israel.* But not to multiply more Instances, that one Place may seem fully convincing and satisfactory, *John. 18. 36.* When Christ was examined concerning his Kingdom, he answereth, *My Kingdom is not of this World; if my Kingdom were of this World, then would my Servants fight, that I should not be delivered unto the Jews:* Which clearly implies, That although Wars, and Fightings were not proper Means to advance the Spiritual Nature of the Kingdom of Christ,

## the Sixth Commandment.

7

Christ; yet if the Methods of his Humiliation had permitted him to assume the Royal Sceptre, his Servants and Followers might lawfully have fought to defend his Claim and Title. But enough of this.

*Thirdly*, A Man may shed Blood in the necessary Defence of his Person, without being guilty of Murther, when he is suddenly assaulted by those who attempt to take away his Life, and hath no other means left him to secure it. In this case, there being no Possibility of having recourse to a Magistrate for Protection, every Man is a Magistrate to himself. But here (because all Cases of Blood are tender) let me caution you, that it is not enough the Danger be impending, but it must be instant and present, such wherein a Man's Life is in all Probability lost, if he doth not stand upon his Defence. For in Dangers that are only threatened and approaching, we ought to trust Providence, and to use our best diligence to work our escape from them. But if the Assault be sudden, and no way of Escape visible, we may lawfully take away the Life of him who unjustly seeks to take ours; for this is not a design to kill him, but to preserve our selves.

Yea we find *Exod. 22.2.* that God allows the killing of a Thief, if he break into a Man's House by Night; but not so if he attempted it by Day. And possibly the Reason of this Law might be, because when any cometh upon another in the Night, it might be presumed that he takes the Advantage of the Darkeness, not only to steal his Goods, but to mischief his Person. And therefore God allows it as lawful to kill such an one, as a part of necessary Defence. From which I think we may safely conclude, that it is lawful also to kill those who attempt upon our Goods, when we have reason to fear they may likewise design upon our Persons.

*Fourthly*, There is yet one Case more, and that is accidental Blood-shedding, which is not chargeable with Murther, when Blood is shed without any Intention or Purpose of doing;

## An Exposition upon

doing it. Such a Case we find mentioned in Scripture; as when in hewing of Wood from a Tree, the Ax should slip, and by chance kill a Man's Neighbour, *Deut.* 19. 5. And therefore for such innocent Man-slayers, God himself appointed Cities of Refuge, that they might fly unto them, and be safe from the Avenger of Blood. But here we must look to it, that we be employed about lawful things; otherwise, if we be doing that which is unjustifiable, which accidentally proves to be the Death of another, this cannot be excused from Murther; and I am sure God exacts the same Punishment for it: And therefore it is said, *Exod.* 21. 22. That if Men strive among themselves, and hurt a Woman that she die, though it was not intended by them; yet Life shall go for Life, because their Strife and Contention between themselves is an unlawful Action. There ought also to be a due Care taken, to avoid any Mischief, that may happen upon doing of a lawful Action; by giving notice to those who come in the way of Danger, and forbearing to do it whilst they are there. But in all Cases, where the Death of another is intended, (let it be upon never such violent and sudden a Passion,) although there were no premeditated, and rancouring Malice born towards them before, howsoever our Laws may be too favourable to it, and call it Man-slaughter; yet doubtless it is in Conscience, and in the Sight of God, wilful Murther. For the Man-slayer, whom the Scripture mentions distinct from the Murtherer, is only he who slays his Neighbour accidentally, not designing nor intending him any harm: This is the only Man-slaughter, which our Law is pleased to call Chance-Medley; and whatsoever is not this, is Murther, and ought as such to be punish'd.

Now Murther may be either of a Man's self, or of another. Both of them are most black and heinous Crimes.

*First,* As for Self-murther; Many of the ancient Heathens thought it the most heroick and gallant way of dying, and would have recourse unto it upon very slight Occasions; accounting

## The Sixth Commandment.

9

counting it an universal Remedy that Nature had put into their hands, to rid themselves of any Trouble which they were loth to bear. Yet some, even among the *Heathens*, have very sharply, as well as justly taxed this wicked Custom; among whom that saying of \* *Aristotle*, in his *Ethicks*, is very considerable: For a Man to die, only that he may avoid Poverty, or Crosses, is not Gallantry, but meer Cowardice; and declares, that he wants Courage to encounter them. In which Particular, this Heathen had a better Illumination than the Author of the Book of *Mactabees*; who very unworthily commends one *Razis* a Jew, for chusing rather to destroy himself, than yield to his Enemy. Which Passage, besides divers others, do evidently prove those Books not to belong to the Canon of Scriptures; but deserve to be called, as they are, *Apo-chryphal*. And truly, Self-murther, next to the unpardonable Sin against the Holy Ghost, is, I think, the most dangerous, and most desperate that can be committed: and because it leaves so little room for Repentance, it leaves but very little for Hope and Charity. Those wretched Creatures whom God hath so far abandoned, as to permit them to fall into this horrid Crime, had they but any the least Care of their Eternal Salvation, they would certainly tremble, when they are offering Violence to themselves; considering that they must instantly appear before God, and lift up those Hands at his Great Tribunal, which they but a minute before imbrued in their own Blood: It is a Sin, which when the Devil tempts Men unto, he cannot make use of his most prevailing Wile and Stratagem. For when he tempts to other Sins, he still drills on the Sinner with Hopes of living to repent and reform, and promiseth him Mercy and Forgiveness: But this of Self-murther precludes all such Hopes and Expectations; For they die in their Sins; yea, their Death is their Sin; and what a forlorn Estate are they in, who resolve that their last Act shall be a damnable Sin? These are Self-Murderers to Purpose, and destroy not only their Bodies, but their Souls too.

\* Τὸ δὲ  
πονηρὸν  
φύλον  
περιαν, ἢ  
ἐρωτα, ἢ π  
λυμνοδν.  
ἐκ ἀνδρῶν  
ἀλλὰ μὲν  
ἀνδρῶν δὲ  
Arist. Eth.  
l. 3. c. 7.  
And this  
Lucian  
calls δειν  
τὸ βίον. De  
Morte Pe-  
regrimi.

B b b

Con-

## An Exposition upon

Consider again, that it is a Sin committed against the very Standard and Rule of our Love to others: For God hath commanded us to love others as our selves; and therefore as we may not murther another, so much less may we murther our selves. And those who are hurried to this impious Act, as they do actually destroy themselves, so they do virtually and interpretatively murther and destroy the whole World; and are as guilty before God, as if, together with themselves, they had murthered their Parents, their Children, their nearest Relations, and all Mankind besides; and that because they destroy that Fundamental Law which should regulate their Love to their Neighbours; and which is the stated Rule, according to which they should endeavour after their Welfare and Preservation. And therefore, if ever the Devil work upon thy melancholy and discontented Pride, to tempt thee to this damnable and almost unpardonable Sin, be sure to collect all thy Strength unto thee; and, with infinite abhorrence of it, command him to avoid: Let not any Shame, or Poverty, or Horrors of Conscience, fasten this Hellish Temptation upon thee; for know assuredly, that if thou hearkenest unto them, and puttest them in Execution, there is no Probability, but that thou must pass from Temporal Sufferings to Eternal Torments; which, be thy Condition in this Life never so deplorable and wretched, thou hast no Reason to hasten, but wilt, in Hell, think that they came too soon upon thee.

*Secondly*, The Murthering of another, is a most heinous and black Sin, a Sin, that God doth usually by some wonderful Method of his Providence detect, and bring to Punishment; and which dogs the Consciences of those who are guilty of it, with horrid Affrights and Terrors, and hath sometimes extorted from them a Confession of it, when there hath been no other Proof nor Evidence. The two greatest Sinners that the Scripture hath set the blackest Brand upon, were both Murtherers, *Cain* and *Judas*; the one, the Murtherer

## the Sixth Commandment

11

Murderer of his Brother ; the other, first of his Lord and Master, and then of himself. And God so infinitely hates and detests it, that although the Altar were a Refuge for other Offenders, yet he would not have a Murderer shelter'd there ; but he was to be dragg'd from that unviolable Sanctuary unto Execution, according to that Law, *Exod. 21. 24. If a Man come presumptuously upon his Neighbour, and slay him with Guile, thou shalt take him from mine Altar that he may die.* And accordingly we read, *1 Kings 2. 30.* That when *Joab* had fled, and taken hold on the Horns of the Altar, so that the Messengers who were sent to put him to Death, durst not violate that Holy Place by shedding his Blood, *Solomon* gives Command to have him slain even there, as if the Blood of a wilful Murderer were a very acceptable Sacrifice offered up unto God. And indeed in the first Prohibition of Murder that we meet withal, God subjoins a very weighty Reason why it should be so odious unto him, *Gen. 9. 6. Whoso sheddeth Man's Blood, by Man shall his Blood be shed ; for in the Image of God made he Man.* So that *Homicidium est Deicidium* ; to slaughter a Man, it is to stab God in Effigie : For though the Image of God's Holiness and Purity be totally defaced in us since the Fall ; yet still every Man, even the most wicked and impious that lives, bears some Strictures of the Image of God in his Intellectuals, the Freedom of his Will, and his Dominion over the Creatures : And God will have every part of his Image so revered by us, that he who assaults Man, is esteemed by him, as one who attempts to assassinate God himself.

This of Murder is a crying Sin ; Blood is loud and clamorous : The first that ever was shed, was heard as far as from Earth to Heaven, *Gen. 4. 10. The Voice of thy Brother's Blood crieth to me from the Ground ;* And God will certainly hear its Cry, and Avenge it.

But not only he whose Hands are imbrued in the Blood of others ; but those also who are Accessory, are guilty of Murder. As,

B b b 2

First,



## An Exposition upon

*First*, Those who command or counsel it to be done: Thus *David* became guilty of the Murther of innocent *Uriah*; and God, in drawing up his Charge, accuseth him with it, 2 Sam. 12. 9. *Thou hast slain him with the Sword of the Children of Ammon.*

*Secondly*, Those who consent to Murther, are guilty of it. Thus *Pilate*, for yielding to the clamorous Out-cries of the Jews, *Crucifie him, Crucifie him*; though he washed his Hands, and disavowed the Fact, yet was as much guilty as those who nailed him to the Cross.

*Thirdly*, He that concealeth a Murther, is guilty of it. And therefore we read, *Deut.* 21. 6, 7. That in case a Man were found slain, and the Murtherer unknown, the Elders of that City were to assemble, and wash their Hands, and protest, *That they had not shed this Blood, neither had their Eyes seen it.* Intimating that if they had seen and concealed it, they had thereby become guilty of the Murther.

*Fourthly*, Those who are in Authority, and don't punish a Murther, when committed and known, are themselves guilty of it. Thus when by the wicked Artifice of *Jezebel*, *Naboth* was condemned to die, although *Ahab* knew nothing of the Contrivance till after the Execution; yet because he did not vindicate that innocent Blood when he came to the Knowledge of it, the Prophet chargeth it upon him, 1 Kings 21. 19. *Hast thou killed, and also taken Possession.* The Guilt lay upon him, and the Punishment due to it overtook him; although we do not read, that he was any otherwise guilty of it, than in not punishing those who had committed it. And those Magistrates, who upon any Respect whatsoever, suffer a Murther to escape unpunished, are said to pollute the Land with Blood, *Numb.* 35. 31, 32, 33. *Ye shall take no satisfaction for the Life of a Murtherer, but he shall surely be put to Death. So shall ye not pollute the Land wherein ye are; for Blood defileth the Land: And the Land cannot be cleansed of the Blood that is shed therein, but by the Blood of him that shed it.*

But

## the Sixth Commandment.

13

But in this Commandment, not only the Perpetration of Murther, and the actual imbruing our hands in the Blood of our Brother, is prohibited ; but likewise all Causes and Occasions leading to it : As,

*First, Envy* ; which is the Rust of a cankered Soul, a foul, meagre Vice, that turns the Happiness and Welfare of others, into our Misery and Torment. Thus *Cain* first enviously repined at the Success and Acceptation of his Brother's Sacrifice, and this quickly prompted him to Murther.

*Secondly, Unjust, and immoderate Anger* ; which if it be suffered to lie festering in the heart, will turn into the Venom of a perfect hatred. This is not only a Cause, but a Degree of Murther ; and as such, it is accounted by our Saviour, who is the best Expofitor of the Law, *Matth. 5. 22.* *You have heard, that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill ; but I say unto you, that whosoever is angry with his Brother without a cause, is in danger of the Judgment, and whosoever shall say unto his Brother, Racha, shall be in danger of the Council ; but whosoever shall say, Thou Fool, shall be in danger of Hell-fire.* Which Passage I have formerly at large explained to you ; and therefore I shall at present wave it.

Now *Anger* is not as *Envy*, simply and in it self unlawful ; for there may be a vertuous Anger, as well as vicious ; an Anger that merits Praise and Commendation, and is so far from being a Sin, that it is a noble and generous Grace. To be moved with indignation for the Cause of God, when his Glory is eclipsed, his Name dishonoured, his Ordinances profaned, his Sanctuary polluted, his People vilified ; this is an holy Anger, and may well lose that common and vulgar Appellation of *Anger*, and pass under the Name of *Zeal*. Such was our Saviour's against those that defiled the Temple, when with a miraculous Authority, he whipp'd them out, and vindicated the House of God unto the Worship of God, from the usurpation of the God of this World, *Mammon*. And therefore we find that Passage, *Psal. 59.* applied to,

## An Exposition upon

to this Action of Christ, *The Zeal of thine House hath eaten me up.* So likewise, when by their hypocritical Silence they seemed to discountenance and disallow the *curing of a Man on the Sabbath Day*, it is said, *He looked round about upon them with anger; being grieved for the hardness of their hearts, Mark 3. 5.*

2. Again, There is also an innocent and allowable *Anger*, when we have just provocation unto it; for Religion doth not utterly root out and destroy the natural Passions; but only moderate, and regulate them. We may be angry, but we must not sin in our Anger, *Ephes. 4. 26. Be angry, but sin not.* And,

3. There is a vicious and sinful *Anger*; which is a rash and foolish Passion, a short Phrensie, that puts a man for the present quite besides himself, and so agitates the Spirits, that the Bloud boils about the Heart, and sends up such footy Fumes, as darken the Understanding, and deprive him of the use and benefit of his Reason.

—ΧΑΛΘ—  
—Ανδρῶν—  
—ἐν δυνάμει—  
—ἀλλήλων—  
—ἡντιν ἡ—  
—ὕψ. Hom.—  
Iliad. Σ.

The Two Ingredients that make up *Anger*, are Grief for some Injury conceived to be done unto us; and Desire of Revenge, to discharge our Gall and Choler upon those that have wronged us; as if we gave our selves ease by laying load upon others.

And there are Two Things that make *Anger* to be evil and sinful.

1. When it is without Cause.
2. When it is without Bounds.

*First*, Causeless Anger is a kind of Murther; when Men will fret and rage, although there be no provocation at all given them. Some Men's Galls overflow so much, that upon every trivial occasion, or perhaps when there is none, but only their own Umbrage and Suspicion, they fly out into intemperate

temperate Speeches, and revengeful Acts, and are presently all in a Flame and Combustion, when there is nothing to irritate them, but their own cholerick Fancies; like Clouds that break out in Thunder and Lightning, when all the Fire and Sulphur is bred only in their own Bowels. See this testy Spirit in *Jonah*, who, though he were an holy, yet it seems by his History, he was a very passionate Man: First, he is angry that God would spare *Nineveh*, after he had prophesied Ruine and Destruction to it: He grows into a Pet, even with the Mercy of God, as if he circumvented him, and designed to make him accounted a false Prophet. *Jonah 3, 1. It displeased Jonah exceedingly, and he was very angry.* *Jonah* is angry because God is appeased: The froppishman thinks the Almighty too easie; and can hardly forgive that Mercy, which so readily forgave the *Ninevites*. And again, when God had caused a Worm to destroy the Gourd which he had prepared to shade this hot and angry Head, *Jonah* falls into another Fit of bitter Passion for the loss of so poor a thing as his Gourd: And when God meekly expostulates the cause with him, *Dost thou well to be angry for the Gourd?* His Passion so far transports him, that he dares to return this malapert Answer, even to the great God, *Yea, I do well to be angry to the very death.* See here how his Gall overflows, and taints both his Reason and his Religion: He hurls his Fury about against God and Men; and (as he sits in his Booth, looking, and praying daily that Fire and Brimstone might come down from Heaven to consume that great City,) when he saw his Expectation frustrated, and the Date of his Prophecy expired, without the Accomplishment of it, he quarrels with God, storms against every thing, is weary of his Life, and could rather have fired it himself, than it should have escaped.

*Secondly, As Causeless Anger, so immoderate Anger is a great Sin, and a committing of Murder in our hearts.*

Now.

## An Exposition upon

Now *Anger* may be immoderate two ways; either in the Degree, or in the Continuance and Duration of it.

*First*, In the Degree, when it is vehement and excessive, transporting us beyond our due Bounds and Temper. I know no Law that forbids a Christian to resent an Injury. Our Saviour Christ himself, when he was buffeted, was sensible of, and reproves that Insolence. *John 18.23. If I have spoken evil, bear witness of the evil; but if well, why smitest thou me?* Christianity doth not make Men Stocks, but keeps them from being Furies; it doth not root up, but only prune our Anger, and cuts off all *superfluities of Naughtiness* from it. It may, when just cause is given, warm, but not fire our Spirits: But when it breaks forth into reviling Speeches, or into revengeful Actions, be sure it hath catch'd fire then, and is enkindled of Hell.

And yet the just Anger of Superiours, as Magistrates, or Masters, or Parents, may lawfully break forth upon Inferiours, in inflicting due punishments. Nor will this fall under the guilt of a sinful Revenge, but a just Reward, whilst they are careful that the Punishment exceed not the Fault and Crime committed.

But for those who have no Authority over others, to seek revenge upon them, either by railing or defaming Speeches, or by repaying Injury for Injury, is a Transgression of this Commandment, the Effect of immoderate Anger, and a kind of Murder in them.

*Secondly*, Anger may be immoderate in the Continuance and Duration of it: For Age will sow it into Hatred, and turn what was Wine into Vinegar: And therefore the Apostle counsels us, *Be angry, and sin not*. But how may that be done? *Let not the Sun, saith he, go down upon your wrath, Eph. 4. 26*. And indeed he that goes to Bed, and sleeps with Anger boiling in his Breast, will find the Scum of Malice upon it the next Morning. This is a Passion, which if it be long cherish'd, will *excitere Spiritum*, drive away the Spirit.

For

## The Sixth Commandment.

77

For how canst thou think that the Dove-like Spirit of God will reside where the Heart remains full of Gall; or, that the Celestial Flame of Divine Love should burn bright and clear, where there are so many thick Fumes and Vapours continually rising up to damp and choak it? How darest thou betake thy self to Rest without first invoking the great God, and locking up thy self by Prayer into his custody and safe tuition? And how darest thou pray whilst Wrath estuates and rancles in thy Breast? Canst thou in Faith pray for Forgiveness, who dost not thy self forgive? Our Saviour hath expressly told us, that if we *forgive not Men their Trespases, neither will our Father which is in Heaven forgive us our Trespases*: And therefore as long as Anger and Desire of wreaking our Revenge upon those that have wronged us, are entertained by us, so long we invalidate our own Prayers, by not performing that Condition, without which, God will never hear nor accept them. And therefore be sure you be no longer angry than you may lawfully abstain from Prayer. For we are commanded to *lift up holy hands without wrath*, 1 Tim. 2. 8. For certainly Dissention and Animosity with Men, is no fit temper to prepare us to hold communion with God. And therefore, though thy Gift be ready to be laid upon the Altar, remember thy self, look inward, and see whether all be quiet and calm there; if there be no grudge, no anger against thy Brother: If thou findest any, either go first, and actually reconcile thy self unto him, or if opportunity will not suffice for that, purge out the Leaven of Wrath and Malice, and reconcile thy self unto him in thine own heart; for under the Law, no *Offering of the Lord was to be mingled with Leaven*; and now under the Gospel, God will accept of no oblations that are offered up unto him with the Ferment of Wrath and Passion: Although it may surprise us, yet let it not possess us. See what the Wise Man counsels us, Eccl. 7. 9. *Be not hasty in thy Spirit to be angry*: Or if through haste and incogitancy, it may seize upon you,

C c c

yet

yet let it not dwell there; for he adds, *Anger dwelleth in the bosome of Fools.* And certainly the calm and peaceable Spirit of God will not dwell in that House where there are perpetual Tumults and Discords, and where our unruly Passions make such a Noise and Uproar, that his secret Whispers, and Suggestions cannot be heard.

And thus you see what kind of Anger is sinful; that which is causeless, and that which is immoderate, either in Degrees, or in Duration: and likewise what Anger is lawful; that which is zealous for God's Glory, and that which is rightly tempered, for our own, and our Neighbour's Good.

Let us, in the next place, consider whence sinful and unwarrantable Anger doth usually proceed. You shall find this bitter Fruit to have likewise its Root of Bitterness. The Causes of it are commonly these;

*First, Pride,* and an over-weening conceit of our selves. *Pride* is the fruitful Mother of many Vices; but it manifestly none with more care and tenderness than this of *Anger*; and therefore the Wise Man tells us, *Prov. xij. no.* That only from *Pride* cometh *Contention*; and indeed, as the Philosopher \* observes, *Anger* usually ariseth from an Opinion that we are despised and contemned. Now the proud Man thinks every one contemns him, that doth not value him as highly as he values himself; that is, beyond all reason; and if he cannot meet with such Fools, he grows angry, and discontented with all the World. Proud Flesh about a Scare, is always tender, and cannot bear the least Touch; and so proud Persons, if they be never so little touch'd, presently grow enraged, and think they have a great injury done them, if others do not as much admire and respect them as they do

\* Η ἀργὴ ἔστιν ὀρεξίς μετὰ λυπῆς πικρῆς αἰσθητικῆς διὰ τὸ αἰσθητικὸν ἐλπιεῖν ὅτι εἰς αὐτὸν, ἢ εἰς οὐτὸς πρὸς μὴ πρὸς αὐτὸν. Arist. Rhet. l. 2. c. 2.

\* Ἄλλ' αὖτις, καὶ τῆς ὀργῆς ἀπὸ διαφάνειαν τῆς γένεσιν ἄλλως ἢ ἀλλοῦ αἰσθητικῆς εἰς αὐτὸν τὴν εἰσὶν οἱς ἐπὶ τῆς ἀπορίας δὲ αὐτὸς τὸ ἀπορροῦν καὶ ἀμείνων πρὸς γένεσιν. Plat. de Ira c. lib.

them-

# the Sixth Commandment

19

themselves. Whoſoever is much a Self-Lover, cannot fail of frequent occasions to make him angry. Now the proud Man is the greatest Self-Lover in the World ; and the Misery is, that he usually loves himself without a Rival ; and if all do not veil to him, to say what he shall dictate, and to think what he shall determine, and to do what he shall prescribe, he takes it for an high Affront ; and as he hath given himself an Authority over others, looks that they should submit to it, and acknowledge it : And others, perhaps, having no less Pride, or, possibly, more Reason, refusing to gratifie his vain and arrogant humour, Quarrels and Dissentions arise, and endless Jars and Discords.

Secondly, Another Cause of this Passion, is the Weakness, and Feebleness of Nature : And therefore it is truly observed by *Plutarch*\*, that those who are of the infirmer Natures, and weakest Constitutions, are most harass'd with it ; as, Children more than Men ; old Age more than the staid part of Life ; and sick persons more than those that are in Health : For *Anger* is a great Weakness, and therefore lodgeth most in the weakest ; *Ants* and *Pismires*, and such little Creatures are most busie with their Stings ; whereas strong and generous Creatures must be much provok'd before they will be injurious.

\* Μείζων  
δυνάμις ἐστὶ  
μέλιτος  
ἀδινείας.  
Αἰὼς καὶ γυ-  
ναικὶς ἀν-  
δρῶν ὀργή-  
λαίτερον καὶ  
νοσήνους  
ὀργισμένους  
τῶν καὶ γέ-  
νητος ἀν-  
μαλόντων.  
καὶ κακῶς  
περιήνορες  
ἐπιτιμούντων. Plut.  
De Ira co-  
hib.

There are many other Causes of the violent stirring of this exorbitant Passion ; as over-much Love of vain Trifles ; which, if they come to any Mischance, as usually they do, we are apt to be disturbed at it ; easiness to believe at the first Recommendation, and engaging our Affections in things before we have had Trial and Experience of them ; which, afterwards proving quite contrary to our Expectations, the Disappointment will excite our Choler, &c. But I shall not insist on these.

Ccc 2

Let



## An Exposition upon

Let us therefore proceed to lay down some Rules for the  
restraining, and moderating of Anger : And that,

*First, In Others.*

*Secondly, In our Selves.*

*First, In Others* It is an hellish Sport for us to irritate and stir up Anger in others, only for us to laugh at, or to make our Advantages by it : Scarce a less Sin than to make them drunk, that we may abuse them : For prevailing Passion is, for the time, a kind of Drunkenness ; and both are a degree of Frenzy and Madness. Thou oughtest not therefore unnecessarily to exasperate thy Brother, whom thou knowest prone to this great Weakness. Otherwise be assured that all his intemperate Speeches, and rash Actions, shall be imputed unto thee, and are thy Sins as well as his ; and whatsoever Revilings he dischargeth against thee, shall at last also be charged upon thee : And what a foolish thing is it for thee to bear the sting of them here, and the punishment of them hereafter ? The Wise Man hath told us, *Prov. 14. 9.* That they are *Fools who make a mock at Sin.* And if thou, for thy Recreation, provokest any to an undecent and misbecoming Passion, know that such Laughter is deadly to thy self, and thou art like those poisoned Persons who laugh themselves to Death.

*Secondly, To prevent, and suppress it in thy Self,* (for there it doth most hurt, since another Man's Anger is none of my Guilt, if I have neither been faulty in stirring it up, nor too easie to catch the Flame from him,) take these following Rules and Directions :

*First, Labour and pray for a meek and humble Spirit.* Think lowly of thy self; and then certainly thou wilt not be angry, if others conspire with thee in thinking and speaking of thee as thou dost of thy self. Most commonly Anger

## the Sixth Commandment.

21

ger (as I have said) proceeds from an Opinion of being despised : Now do thou first of all despise thy self ; and then all Reproaches and Injuries will signifie no more to thee, than that other Men approve thy Judgment ; and that certainly can be no Cause of Anger. Thou wilt not be angry for want of a Ceremony, or Demonstration of Respect, which others impose or exact ; nor wilt thou quarrel with any, for not relying on thy Judgment, or contradicting thy Sentiments, when thou shalt reflect upon thine own Ignorance and frequent Mistakes. They are the high Hills, whose Heads are wrapp'd about with Clouds and Tempests, when the humble Valleys are calm and serene : So humble Souls, that lie low in their own Esteem, remain undisturbed, when lofty Persons are still molested with the Tempests of their own Passions.

*Secondly*, Consider how often thou givest God occasion to be angry with thee ; which if he should take, thou wert for ever undone. He bears many Affronts and Indignities at thy Hands. And who art thou ? A poor vile Worm. And who is he ? Even the great Almighty God, the universal King of Heaven and Earth, that he should put up such Wrongs at thy Hands. And shall God daily take Injuries from such a wretched nothing as thou art, God, who is thy Lord and Master ; and wilt not thou bear them patiently from thy Fellow-Servant, who, it may be, is in every respect equal to thee ; but only inferior to thee in this, that he provokes thee unjustly ? Certainly were we as tender towards our Brethren, as we all desire God should be towards us ; could we forbear others, as we our selves would be forborn, there would never be any Quarrel commenced ; or if it were, it would be soon compounded. What saith the Psalmist, *Psal. 103. 9. He will not always chide, neither will he keep his Anger for ever. He hath not dealt with us after our Sins, nor rewarded us according to our Iniquities.* Let this great Example be ours, not to be soon moved to Anger, or quickly

## An Exposition upon

ly to free our selves from it. Indeed many there are that are slow to Anger, and in that they imitate God ; but then they are tenacious and retentive of Wrath, and hardly placable again. Their Anger is like an Impression upon some hard Metal, very difficultly made, and as difficult to be effaced. Let such consider what would become of them, if God should be as slow to be reconciled to them, as they are to their Brethren : Nay, he is infinitely more wronged by you than you can be by them ; and yet he so far condescends, as first to seek Reconciliation. And although he be infinitely able by the least expression of his Wrath and Power for ever to destroy you ; yet herein God commandeth his Love unto you, that when you were Enemies, ye were reconciled unto him by the Death of his Son. Certainly whosoever doth but seriously reflect upon the infinite Patience and Forbearance of God, if he hath any Sweetness diffused into his Soul by that Consideration, if he hath any Conscience of imitating his Heavenly Father, in that which is his most adorable Attribute, if he hath any care to ascertain unto himself the Pardon and Remission of his own Offences, will therein find a powerful Influence to sway him to the like Acts of Mercy and Forgiveness.

*Thirdly,* Another Rule is, beware of Prejudice against thy Brother ; for Prejudice is a very ill Interpreter of Actions, and will be sure to expound them in the worst Sense. Be not easie to believe, that those who offend thee do it with design, or that they despise and undervalue thee : Rather think it any thing else than Contempt of thee : Believe that his Offences proceed rather from his Folly and Indiscretion, or that he is forced and necessitated to do it, that others have put him upon it. If they be thy Friends that wrong thee, suppose it to be only a Fault of their too great Familiarity, and a misgoverned Intimacy. If they be such as are subject to thee, believe that since they know thou hast Power to chastise them, they would not do it purposely to provoke thee.

If

If they be vile and sordid Persons, trouble not thy self with their Affronts; for thy Reputation is above them. Thus I say, incline to believe in any thing rather than a design'd Abuse. For though a strict Jealousie over our Reputation, and an Aptness to think our selves wronged, seem to proceed from Generousness, and a Sense of Honour; yet indeed it proceeds only from Baseness and Weakness of Mind. Who soever accounts himself despised by another, is in a Sense less than he, and confesseth himself his Inferior. He is the noble, and heroick Spirited Person, who is unshaken with the petty Affronts and Injuries of others; and hath so much stable Confidence in the Integrity of his Actions, that he cannot believe any can traduce him, or them; whereas to be angry at them, doth but in a sort justify Slanders, and will beget a Belief, that that is not all together groundless, whereat he shews himself so much concerned. It is an old Maxim of Prudence; *Cavortia: si irascere, agnita videntur; Spreta, exolescunt*; If you be angry at Railings, you seem to acknowledge them; if you condemn them, they vanish.

Fourthly, Be not familiar with any angry Person: For as one Fire will kindle another; so it is likely that his Choler will kindle thine, till both flame into an inordinate and extravagant Passion. See the Direction expressly given us, *Prov. 22. 24, 25. Make no Friendship with an angry Man; and with a furious Man thou shalt not go, lest thou learn his Ways; and get a Snare to thy Soul.* Indeed there is no such Food to Wrath, as Wrath; and it is a very hard Matter to refrain being angry with him, who will causlessly be angry with us. And as thou must shun the Company and Acquaintance of cholerick Persons; so likewise of Scoffers: For a Scoff and a Jeer is many times more provoking than a Blow; and nothing will sooner kindle the Coals of Contention than a biting Taunt. And therefore Solomon adviseth us, *Prov. 22. 100. Call out the Scammer, and Contention shall go out; yea, Strife and Reproach shall cease.*

Fifthly,

## An Exposition upon

Ἀγαθὸν  
καὶ ἐστὶν ἐν  
πυρετῷ  
καρπὸς δὲ  
ἐν ὀργῇ πῦρ  
γὰρ ὡς  
αἱ παλιν  
ἔχουσιν ἐν  
ἀσέει.  
Plut. de  
ira cobib.

*Fifthly*, It is very good Counsel, if thou seelest any *Motions* of this unruly *Passion* begin to stir in thine *Heart*; that thou arrest it for some time, before thou either speak or act. Let this *Mud* have some time to settle again, that *Reason* may in the mean while recover its *Throne*, and direct thee how to govern thy self like a wise *Man* and a *Christian*. Speak not whilst thou art in the impetuous *Hurries* of thy *Passion*: For it was well said of *Plutarch*, that it is good in a *Fever*, but much better in *Anger*, to have the *Tongue* kept clean and smooth. Put an Interval of time between thy *Anger* and thy *Actions*. For those who act in the *Violence* and *Paroxysms* of their *Anger*, do either they know not what, or else what they may have *Reason* to repent of. And therefore *Solomon* tells us, that the *Discretion* of a *Man* deferreth his *Anger*, *Prov. 19. 11.* and the beginning of *Strife* is as when one letteth out *Waters*, *Prov. 17. 14.* At first when a *Man* cutteth the *Bank* of a *River*, the *Passage* is but little, and the *Stream* may be easily stopp'd. But by continual running, it will wear away the *Earth*, and widen the gap; and whole *Floods* and *Currents* will pour out, where but some few *Drops* were intended.

*Sixthly*, and lastly, Contemplate the huge *Ugliness* and *Deformity* of this *Sin* in others; how it makes *Men* brutish in their *Souls*, and deformed likewise in their *Countenance*. It inflames the *Face*, fires the *Eyes*, and makes a *Man* look like a *Fury*, deafens the *Ears*, froths the *Mouth*, makes the *Heart* beat and pant, the *Tongue* stammer, the *Voice* harsh and rough, the *Speech* precipitate, and oftentimes ridiculous; briefly, it puts the whole *Man* into a preternatural *Fever*, and transforms the *Body* into a *Monster*, and the *Man* into a *Devil*.

And what! Shall I give way to *Passion*, so uncomely a *Passion*, that will make me scorned, when I would seem most terrible? Certainly, were there no other thing whereof to accuse this immoderate *Anger*, it were enough to render

## The Seventh Commandment.

85

render it odious; but when it not only destroys what I was, but seeks the Ruine and Destruction of others, it concerns me to stop it in its first Rise and Ebullitions, lest the Boilings of my Blood proceed so far, as to attempt the shedding of the Blood of others.

And so much for this Sixth Commandment.

---

## THE SEVENTH COMMANDMENT.

**Thou shalt not commit Adultery.**

**I**N opening the former Commandment, we have seen what Care God takes for the Security and Indemnity of every Man's Person. This Command which I have now read unto you, extendeth farther, and provides for his Security, as he is considered mystically in Marriage-Union, which of Twain maketh one Flesh: The one defends him from the violence of bloody Rage and Revenge; the other from the Violations of impure Lusts.

I judge it not convenient to be too circumstantial in shewing you what is prohibited under this Precept. I know that some, especially the Popish Casuists in their Treatises of Moral Divinity, such as *Sanchez*, *Diana*, &c. have spoken of these things so minutely, and with such a filthy Accuracy, that they suprate the very Eyes and Fancies of their

D d d

Readers;

Readers ; rather teach Vice, than condemn it ; and instruct the Ignorant to sin skilfully, rather than convince the Guilty to bring them to Repentance. Some Wickednesses there are, which it is far better not to reprove, than to name ; it is more expedient to leave those who are guilty of them to be lashed by their natural Light and Conscience, than by exagitating such Crimes, teach others, not so much to abhor, as to practice them. And let this be my Apology, if I pass over this Subject with more than my accustomed Brevity.

*First*, That which is here literally and expressly forbidden, is that detestable and loathsome Sin of Adultery ; which properly taken, is a Sin committed between Persons, the one, or both of them married unto another. \* However even in the highest Circumstances, it is a most heinous Sin ; but on the married Person's side most inexcusable, and intolerable *Gen. 39. 9.* It is called a **great Wickedness against God**, even on the unmarried Man's part. And *Levit. 20. 10. Deut. 22. 22.* The Temporal Punishment assigned unto it, is no less than Death: The same Punishment that belonged to Murder, and greater than was inflicted for Theft. And if Humane Laws were as severe in the Punishment of the Sin, as Divine, the Fear of it might possibly be of greater influence, to deter Men from such Filthiness, than either Shame or the Denunciation of Eternal Punishments. Yea, we read in History that our Progenitors, the English Saxons \*, even while they remained Pagans and Idolaters, so hated this Sin, that they made it, yea, and simple Fornication also, punishable with Death, and severely inflicted it upon those that were found guilty ; which Custom continued among them after they were converted to Christianity, until the Year of Christ, 750. when when the Antichristian See of Rome, the Mother of Whoredoms, abrogated this Law, as too rigorous for Christians, And *Job* calleth it *an heinous Crime ; yea, an Iniquity to be*

\* *Speed's*  
*Chron.*  
*pag. 289.*

*be punished by the Judges. A Fire that consumeth unto Destruction, Job. 31. 11, 12.*

But although they may escape the Judgment of Men, either through the Secresie of their Wickedness, or the too gentle Censures of the Law; yet they shall not escape the righteous Judgment of God; nor those Everlasting Punishments that he hath prepared for them in Hell, *Heb. 13. 4. Whoremongers and Adulterers God will judge.*

Now there are Two Things in this Sin of Adultery that make it so exceeding heinous.

*First*, The Luxury and Incontinency of it, in letting loose the Reins to a brutish Concupiscence, and yielding up the Body to Pollution, and the Soul to Damnation.

*Secondly*, The Injustice of it; being a Deceit of the highest, and most injurious Nature that can be: For,

*First*, It is the Violation of a most solemn Vow and Covenant; and so adds Perjury to Unfaithfulness, alienating that Person to another, who, by the most sacred and strictest Obligations, is bound only to that Partner and Yoke-fellow, to whom God, and their own Consent, and the legal Rites of the Church and State, have addicted them.

*Secondly*, It is the Source and Cause of a spurious and supposititious Birth, bringing in a strange Blood into the Inheritance of lawful Children, whereby this Unfaithfulness becomes Theft, as well as Perjury.

But although this Sin of Adultery be alone mentioned in the Command; yet according to the Rules laid down in the beginning of this Work, all other kinds of Uncleaness are forbidden under the Name of this one gross Crime. For the Law of God is perfect; and as all manner of Chastity, both in our Thoughts, Speeches and Actions, is there injoin'd us; so likewise whatsoever is in the least contrary, and pre-



judicial to a spotless Chastity, and an inviolate Modesty, is hereby forbidden. And therefore,

*Secondly*, This Commandment forbids the Uncleanneſs of Fornication, which properly is the Sin committed betwixt two ſingle Perſons. And though it hath not ſome Aggravations that belong to the other; yet it is an abominable Sin in the Sight of God. I know how it is extenuated by the impure \* Romaniſts, as a ſmall ſtain, that may eaſily be waſh'd off by the ſprinkling of a little Holy Water. But it is no Wonder, if they who have drank deep of the Cup of the Fornications of the great Whore, and are guilty of ſpiritual Fornication, if they ſhould ſpeak lightly of Corporal Fornication alſo. But let us hear how God, who is infinite Purity, hath ſentenced this Sin, when he threatens that he himſelf will judge Whoremongers; and tells us, *1 Cor. 6. 9. That neither Fornicators, nor Idolaters, nor Adulterers ſhall ever inherit the Kingdom of God.* No, the New Jeruſalem which is above, is an Holy City, and no unclean thing ſhall for ever enter into it. *Without are Dogs, and Sorcerers, and Whoremongers, and Murderers, and Idolaters, Rev. 22. 15.* And it were well with them, if all their Punishment were only to be left without: But there is a Lake of Fire prepared for them, into which they ſhall be caſt and plunged, the Fire of Hell to puniſh the Flames of Luſt, *Rev. 21. 8. The Fearful, and the Unbelieving, and the Abominable, and Murderers; and Whoremongers* (you ſee how in both Places they are ſtrung up with the vileſt and moſt infamous Sinners,) *ſhall have their Portion in the Lake, which burneth with Fire and Brimſtone, which is the ſecond Death.* The Apoſtle reckons up this as one of the Works of the Fleſh, *Gal. 5. 19. The Works of the Fleſh are manifeſt, which are theſe, Fornication, Uncleanneſs, Lasciviouſneſs, &c.* And exhorts us to a careful Mortification of it, *Col. 3. 5. Mortiſie therefore your Members which are upon the Earth, Fornication, Uncleanneſs, inordinate Affection, &c.*

*Thirdly,*

\* Mazarin.  
in Pſal. 51.  
Durand.  
Sent. 1. 4.  
diſt. 33. 92.  
Erman.  
Sa. Art. 20.  
Tit. Epi.  
ſcopus.

## the Seventh Commandment.

29

*Thirdly*, Here likewise are forbidden all incestuous Mixtures, or Uncleaness between those who are related to each other within the Degrees of Kindred specified, *Lev. 18.* from the 6th. to the 18th. Verse; whether the Kindred be by Affinity, or Consanguinity, *i. e.* whether by former Marriage, or by Blood and Descent. And the nearer any Persons are so related to us, the greater is the abomination if we approach unto them; whether it be with pretence of Marriage, which in this case, is null and void; or without any such Pretence.

*Fourthly*, Here is likewise forbidden *Polygamy*, or a taking *a Wife to her Sister*, that is, to another, *Lev. 18. 18.* God indeed seemed to connive at this in the holy Men of old; yet it never was otherwise than a Sin from the foundation of the World. And therefore the Prophet *Malachy* refers us to the Primitive Institution of Marriage, to shew the obliquity of this Practice, *Mal. 2. 15. Did not he make one?* That is, Did not he create one Woman for one Man? *yet had he the residue of the Spirit; i. e.* the same Spirit and power whereby he created all things in the World, resided still in God, and therefore he could as easily have formed more Women as well as one, had he not purposed to oblige them one to the other solely, and to teach them by their being paired at first, not to seek multiplication of Wives afterwards.

Therefore *Polygamy* was unlawful in the beginning, even then when the necessity of increasing the World might seem to plead for it; and how much more unlawful now, when that necessity is ceased. Besides this the Apostle hath commanded, *1. Cor. 7. 2. Let every Man have his own Wife, and every Woman her own Husband.*

*Fifthly*, Here also are forbidden all those Monsters of unnatural Lust, and those Prodigies of Villany & Filthiness, which  
are:

## An Exposition upon

are not fit to be named among Men, but thought fit to be punish'd upon Beasts themselves; as ye may read, *Lev. 20. 15, 16. and Levit. 18. 22, 23.*

*Sixthly*, All those Things that may be Incentives to Lust, and add Fuel to this Fire, are likewise forbidden in this Command; all Impurities of the Eyes, of Contact, of leud and obscene Speech, all immodest Spectacles, wanton Actions, uncivil and garish Attire, or whatsoever else may kindle either in our selves, or others, any unchaste Affections; for all these things do but lay in Provision for the Flesh, to fulfil it in the Lusts thereof.

*Seventhly*, Because this Law is spiritual, therefore it not only forbids the gross outward Acts of Filthiness, but the inward uncleanness of the Heart; all lustful contemplations, and Idea's, and evil Concupiscences: For it is not enough to refrain unchast Desires from breaking forth into Act; but we must also refrain our Hearts from entertaining any such Desires. These Flames pent up in the Heart, will soon and consume it; and though its Ruine be more invisible, yet it will be sad and fatal: As there is an Heart-Murther, so there is an Heart-Adultery; and he that commits speculative Uncleanness, and prostitutes his Thoughts and Imaginations to the impure Embraces of filthy Lust, is, according to our Saviour's Interpretation, guilty of the Transgression of this Command: So, *Matth. 5. 27, 28. Ye have heard that it was said to them of old time, Thou shalt not commit Adultery; but I say unto you, that who so looketh on a Woman to lust after her, hath committed Adultery already with her in his Heart.*

And thus you see what is prohibited.

All that now remains, is,

*First*, To set forth the exceeding heinousness of this Sin; and to shew you why it is so justly odious unto God, and ought to be so unto us: And,

*Secondly*,

## the Seventh Commandment.

31

Secondly, To give you some Rules and Directions which may secure you from it.

The Greatness and heinous Nature of this Sin appears,

*First*, In that it is a Sin which murders two Souls at once ; and therefore the most uncharitable Sin in the World. Other Sinners can perish singly. The Swearer damns none by his Oaths but himself ; and although he curse others to the Pit of Hell , yet shall descend thither alone for them. The Drunkard, with his Intemperance drowns but his own Soul in perdition : The bloody Murtherer may say with *Lamech*, Gen. 4. 23. *I have slain a Man to my wounding, and a young Man to my own Hurt.* And indeed all other Sinners, though their Wickedness prompt them to draw in Associates and Partakers with them ; yet the Nature of their Sin doth not require a partnership in their Guilt ; but they may be solitarily wicked, and perish alone : Only this Sin of Adultery necessarily requires Partnership, and involves another in the same Condemnation : And is it nothing to thee, that another's Damnation shall be set upon thy score, and the Blood of their Souls charged upon thine for ever ? Think with your selves what horrid Greetings these unclean Wretches will give each other in Hell, when they who have here wallowed together in Beastly Sensuality , shall there wallow together in unquenchable Flames, and with ineffable Anguish exclaim against, and curse both themselves, and one another ; the one, for enticing, the other for consenting, and both for fulfilling their impure Desires : Or suppose that God should vouchsafe thee Repentance unto Life ; yet art thou sure that his Justice and Severity will not harden the other in this Sin to which thou hast been the Author and Persuader ? How knowest thou but they may persist, and perish in their Wickedness, Divine Vengeance may snatch them away, without affording them space, or grace to repent. And is it nothing to thee that thou hast damn'd a Soul

## An Exposition upon

Soul, as well as defil'd a Body; and for the satisfying of thy brutish Lust, hast brought upon them everlasting Woes and Torments. If God hath granted thee Mercy, how anxiously solicitous oughtest thou to be to deliver those out of the Snares of the Devil, whom thou hast entangled therein, and by all holy Counsels and Remonstrances reduce them unto God by Repentance! Or if a speedy execution of Divine Justice should cut them off before, what a sad Consideration will it be to thee that thou hast eternally ruined a poor Soul! This, if thou hast any sense of Sin, or of the Wrath of the great God due unto it, will make thee go mourning all thy days, and bring down thy gray hairs with sorrow to the Grave.

*Secondly*, This is the most degrading Sin of all others; it debaseth a Man from the excellency of his Nature, and resembles him to the condition of brute Beasts. The Perfection of a Man is to govern himself according to Law and Reason, to bound and circumscribe his Actions by the Rules of what is fit and honest; whereas Beasts shew the inferiority of their Natures by the Scope and Range of their unguided Appetites, *per vagas & effusas libidines*. Hence the Prophet compares Adulterers to *Fed Horses, every one neighing after his Neighbour's Wife*, Jer. 5. 8. And God joyns such impure Persons with the vilest and most detestable of brute Beasts. *Deut. 23. 18. Thou shalt not bring the hire of a Whore, nor the price of a Dog into the House of the Lord thy God for any Vow; for even both these are an abomination to the Lord thy God.*

*Thirdly*, This is a Sin that doth most of all others obscure, and extinguish the Light of a Man's natural Reason and Understanding. Nothing doth so much darken the Understanding, as the Fumes of Lust, *Hos. 4. 11. Whoredom, and Wine, and new Wine take away the Heart.* And to this the Apo-

stle

## the Seventh Commandment.

33

He gives Testimony. *Eph. 4. 18, 19. Having the understanding darkned, being alienated from the Life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart, who, being past feeling, have given themselves over to work all uncleanness with greediness.* So far doth this Beastly Sin besot the Mind, and besot Men, that according to the chaste, and modest Phrase of Scripture-Language it self, is frequently called *committing of Folly*; as if there were no Folly like to this, and it alone deserved to carry away the Name and Title from all other Sins: And indeed it is a most notorious and egregious Folly, for a short Pang and Epilepsie of sensual Delight, to betray the Soul to a gloomy dulness, bitter remembrance, guilt, and eternal shame and death.

*Fourthly*, This is a Sin justly the most infamous and scandalous amongst Men; a Sin that brands them with the greatest shame and reproach; a reproach which can never be wiped away; and certainly if such an one doth ever seriously consider his own Filth, he cannot but be ashamed of himself: For although there be a shame consequent upon the Act of every Sin; yet the Credit and Reputation of a Man is never so deeply blemish'd, nor so foully stain'd by any Sin as that of Adultery. *Prov. 6. 32, 33. Whoso committeth Adultery with a Woman, lacketh Understanding; He that doth it, destroyeth his own Soul; a wound and dishonour shall he get, and his reproach shall not be wiped away.* Yea, the dishonour of Adulterous Parents is so foul, that like a black Blot, it diffuseth and spreads it self even upon their Children. *Deut. 23. 2. A Bastard was not to enter into the Congregation of the Lord unto the Tenth Generation.*

*Fifthly*, Consider that this Sin of Uncleanness is a kind of Sacrilege; a converting of that which is sacred, and dedicated, unto a profane Use. What saith the Apostle, *1 Cor. 6.*

E e e

19.

19. *Know ye not that your Body is the Temple of the Holy Ghost?* And if it were a Sacrilegious Impiety to turn the Temple of God, which consisted only of vile Materials, Wood and Stone, to vile and inferior Uses; if our Saviour's Zeal burn'd within him when he saw the Sanctuary turn'd into a Market, and the House of God made a Den of Thieves, how much more heinous wickedness is it to convert the living Temples of the everliving God, even our Bodies, which were redeemed and consecrated unto God by the precious Blood of Jesus Christ, unto impure and unclean Uses, and to turn his Sanctuary into a Stew? The Body is not for Fornication; but for the Lord: And your Bodies are the Members of Christ: *Will ye then take the Members of Christ, and make them the Members of an Harlot? God forbid.* And the Apostle thinks this Sacrilegioufness of Uncleanfness so high an aggravation of the sinfulness of it, that he insists on it again, *1 Cor. 3. 16, 17. Know you not that ye are the Temples of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? If any Man defile the Temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the Temple of God is holy; which Temple are ye.*

*Sixthly, Consider, if all these Things will not prevail, the dreadful Punishment that God threatens to inflict upon all who are guilty of this Sin: Yea, he speaks of it as a Sin that he can hardly be persuaded to pardon; a Sin that puzzles infinite Mercy to forgive. Jer. 5. 7, 8, 9. How shall I pardon thee for this? When I had fed thy Children to the full, they then committed Adultery, and assembled themselves by Troops in the Harlots Houses. They were as fed Horses in the Morning, every one neighing after his Neighbour's Wife. Shall I not visit for these things, saith the Lord; and shall not my Soul be avenged on such a Nation as this? And indeed God doth often in this Life visit this Sin; sometimes by filling their Loins with strange and loathsome Diseases, Prov. 6. 26. Sometimes by reducing them to extreme Beggery; for this Sin,*

## the Seventh Commandment

35

Sin, as *Jah* speaks, is a *Fire that consumeth to destruction; and would root out all his increase*: Yea, this very Sin is so great a punishment for it self, that the Wise Man tells us, *Prov. 22. 14. That those whom God hates shall fall into it.* Yea, and to express this exceeding sinfulness of this Sin of Uncleanness, the Apostle tells us, That God made it the punishment of several other Sins, as black and horrid as can be well conceived, *Rom. 1. 23.* When he had spoken of the gross Idolatry of the Heathens in worshipping Images, and falling down before Stocks and Stones, he subjoyns, *ver. 24. That for this cause God also gave them up unto Uncleanness*; as if Uncleanness were bad enough to punish Idolatry, and those were sufficiently plagued for their spiritual Uncleanness, who were abandoned over unto corporal Pollutions. But howsoever, although this Sin may sometimes escape Infamy, through concealment; and other temporal Judgments of God, through Patience and Forbearance; yet it will certainly find them out at the last; and them those who have burnt together in Lust, shall burn together in unquenchable Flames; *They shall have their Portion in the Lake that burneth with Fire and Brimstone.*

These are the Demonstrations of the Heinousness of this Sin.

Let me now give you some cautionary Rules and Directions; by observing of which, you may be preserved from it.

*First,* Be sure that you keep a narrow Watch over your Senses: For those are the Sluces, which, instead of letting in pleasant streams to refresh, do commonly let in nothing but Mud to pollute the Soul. There is no actual Filthiness in the Heart of any, but came in by these Inlets: Through these the Devil casts in abundance of Filth; he stirs up indwelling Lust, and by the sinful Object which the Senses convey to the Soul, he dungs that Ground, which of it self

E e 2

was



was too fruitful before. Thus the Devil makes use of an Adulterous Eye to range abroad; and fetch in Provision for Uncleanneſs; and by it, as by a Burning Glaſs, he ſets the Heart on fire, and then blows up the Flames through the Ears, by hearing laſcivious Diſcourſes; and therefore make a Covenant with thine Eyes, and carefully divert them from all looſe Glances, and all alluring and enticing Objects. Stop thine Ears againſt all rotten and filthy Communication; and if any begin ſuch obſcene Talk, as is the common Railery of our Days, and almoſt of every Company, bluſh not thou to reprove them; but by thy Reproofs, make them bluſh at their own ſhame and wickedneſs.

*Secondly*, Addict thy ſelf to Sobriety and Temperance, and by theſe beat down thy Body, and keep it in ſubjection to thy Reason and Religion: For certainly they who indulge themſelves in Gluttony or Drunkenneſs, their Exceſs will froth, and ſome over into Luſt. And therefore it is ſaid in that forementioned place, *Jer. 5. 7.* That when the *Iſraelites were fed to the full, then they committed Adultery,*

*Thirdly*, Continually exerciſe thy ſelf in ſome honeſt and lawful Employment. Luſt grows active when we grow idle: And therefore as *Fulneſs of Bread*, ſo likewise *Idleneſs* is reckoned as one of the Sins of impure *Sodom*, *Ezek. 16. 49.* *David*, when he walked idly upon the Roof of his Houſe, lies open to the Shares, and is inveigled by the Beauty of *Bathsbeba*. Had he then been at his Harp, and his Pſalms, he might have driven the evil Spirit from himſelf, as formerly he did from his Maſter *Saul*. Running Streams preſerve themſelves clear and pure; whereas ſtanding Pools ſoon corrupt, and breed noiſome and venomous Creatures. While our Mind is employed, there will be no Time left for Luſt to dally with our Fancy, nor to dandle an unclean Affection in our Thoughts; and therefore it may be remarkable as a conſiderable Circumſtance in *Joſeph's* rejecting the Enticements of his leud Miſtreſs, that the Text ſaith, *He went*

## the Seventh Commandment.

17

went into the House to dispatch his Business, Gen. 39. 11. Noting to us, that the honest care of our Affairs is an excellent Preservative to keep us from this Sin of Wantonness and Uncleaness. But above all,

• *Fourthly, Be earnest and frequent in Prayer; and if thou sometimes joynest Fasting with thy Prayers, they will be shot up to Heaven with a cleaner strength: For this Sin of Uncleaness is one of those Devils that goes not out but by Fasting and Prayer.* God is a God of Purity; instantly beg of him, that he would send down his pure and chaste Spirit into thy heart, to cleanse thy Thoughts, and thy Affections from all unclean Desires. Beg that the Holy Ghost would but once touch thy Heart with the dear sense of his Eternal Love; that he would diffuse such a Celestial Flame through thy Soul, as may ravish it with an heavenly Zeal and Ardour, and make it scorn to stoop to the ignoble Love of poor inferiour Objects: Represent to him that thy Body is his Temple, and thy Heart his Altar in it; and desire of him, that no strange unhallowed Fire may flame on his Altar.

Whilst thou diligently and conscientiously makes use of these Means, thou maist comfortably expect to be kept pure and immaculate, innocent in thy Soul, and clean in thy Body; and as thou hast kept thy self undefiled here; so hereafter thou shalt be found worthy to walk with the Lamb in White.

THE

## THE EIGHTH COMMANDMENT.

### Thou shalt not Steal.

**T**HE foregoing Commandment (as you have heard) requires Chastity in our Persons: This which I have now read unto you, requires Honesty and Uprightness in our Dealings. A Vertue immediately founded upon that first practical Principle of all Humane Converse, which our Saviour lays down, *Matth. 7. 12. Whatsoever ye would that Men should do unto you, do ye even so to them*: And recommends it to us, as the brief Summ and Epitome of all the Scriptures; *For this is the Law and the Prophets*. A Principle, that carries such innate Light and clear Evidence in it self, that the very Heathens do frequently inculcate it in their Writings, as the primary Dictate of that Morality which they taught. This is a Maxim, which we all assent unto, not by any elaborate Instructions, or dint of Arguments, or any long train of Consequences; but it strongly masters our Understandings by its native Evidence, and springs up in us an unpremeditated Resolve of Reason. Both God & Nature have set up this Standard in our Consciences: And usually there needs no other Judge of our Actions towards others, than by comparing them with what in the like Cases we would think just and fit to be done towards our selves. It may be we are all partial to our selves in our present Concerns: And whilst we look only that way, we may possibly

possibly seek all Advantages to promote them, though to anothers Detriment. But both Reason and Religion teach us to put our selves in their Stead, and then to manage all our Transactions with them, as we our selves would judge just and reasonable, were their Condition ours. And therefore when thou dealest with another, thou shouldst first be both Parties to thy self. As for instance, a Servant should set down, and consider with himself what Respect he would require, were he in the same Circumstances with his Master, and had Servants under him. Children should consider what Duty and Obedience they would expect, were they Parents of Children: Subjects, what Honour and Submission they might reasonably demand, were they Magistrates; and so in any other Relation. And when they have thus seriously pondered it in their own Thoughts, let them then perform the same Duties to others in their real Condition, which they judged to belong to them in their personated Condition. For it is a never failing Rule for the Direction of our Practice, that what thou judgest due to thy self, wert thou in another Man's Condition, is certainly as due to him in his own; and if thou actest not accordingly, thou betrayest a great deal of Selfishness and sinful Partiality. This is a Rule applicable to all Affairs; and there is scarce any one Occurrence of a Man's Life, but he may regulate himself in it according to this Direction: And indeed there is scarce need of any other. Whatsoever thou hast to transact with thy Brother, though perhaps thou mayst spy Advantages upon him; and such, as if thou shouldest take, possibly he might never know, or never be able to redress; yet then take thy Conscience aside, and seriously ask whether thou couldst be content, and think it honest and just to be so dealt with thy self; if not, whatsoever the Temptation be, or how much soever thou mightest gain by hearkning unto it, reject it with scorn, as that which would induce thee to violate the first Principle of common Honesty among Men, and contradicts

## the Eighth Commandment.

contradicts all the Laws both of Nature, and Scripture. Were this Rule but more generally observed among Men, the World would not have that Cause to cry out of Rapine, Extortion, Oppression, Fraud and Injustice; that now it hath: The Rich would not grind the Faces of the Poor, nor the Poor causlessly clamour against the Rich: Superiours would not tyrannize over their Inferiours, nor Inferiours murmur, nor rebel against their Superiours; but an equal Peace, and uniform Justice would overspread the Face of the whole Earth, and *Righteousness would run down our Streets as a mighty Stream.* And therefore let me once again recommend it to you; for indeed I cannot press it too often,) that you would frequently set this Golden Rule before your Eyes, to do nothing to any other Person, which, were you in his capacity, you would think unjust to be done unto your selves, (and whatsoever you would expect from others, as your Due, were you in their Place, and they in yours, to perform the very same to them: For otherwise you cannot but condemn your selves in your Actions, whilst you do that, which upon this Supposition, you cannot but be convinced is unjust, and withhold that which you know to be due, and which your selves would expect should be yielded you by others. This is a Dictate of Nature and right Reason; this is the Summ of the Law and the Prophets; and all those various Precepts which are given us in the Scriptures, for the conduct of our Lives, are but as so many Lines that meet all in this Centre; and if we apply it to each particular Command of the second Table, we shall find them all founded upon this, and to be interpreted by it. We are required to honour Superiours, to abstain from Murther, from Adultery, from Theft, from false Accusations, from coveting what rightfully belongs to another; and all this according to the same Measures that we would have others to perform these very Duties to us. So that self, which is now the great Tempter to wrong and injure

## The Eighth Commandment.

41

jure others, were it governed according to this universal Maxim, would be the greatest Patron and Defender of other Men's Rights and Dues.

I have the longer insisted on this, both because it is of such general influence into the right ordering of our Conversation; and also because the most visible and apparent violation of this natural Law, is by the Sin of Theft forbidden in this Commandment, of which I am now treating.

Now *Theft* in the general, is an unjust taking, or keeping to our selves what is lawfully another Man's. He is a Thief, who with-holds what ought to be in his Neighbour's possession, as well as he who takes from him what he hath formerly possess'd.

All *Theft* presupposeth a Right and Propriety: For where nothing doth of right appertain unto me, nothing can be unjustly taken or detained from me.

Now here *First*, Certain it is, That God is the great Lord and Proprietor both of Heaven and Earth, and of all things in them, *Psal. 24. 1. The Earth is the Lord's, and the Fulness thereof.* And, *50, 10. Every Beast of the Forest is mine, and the Cattle upon a thousand Hills.* By him, and of him are all things; and for his Will and Pleasure's sake they are, and were created.

*Secondly*, This great and absolute Lord hath granted unto Man a large Charter of the World; and when he had taken an exact Inventory of those Goods with which he had furnished this great House, the Universe; (*He saw every thing that he had made, and behold it was very good, Gen. 1. 31.*) then he sets Man to live in it, as his Tenant, and freely gives him the Use of, and Dominion over all the Works of his Hands. *Gen. 1. 28. Replenish the Earth, and subdue it, and have dominion over all the Fish of the Sea, and over the Fowls*

F if

of

## An Exposition upon

of the Air, and over every thing that moveth upon the Earth. So the Psalmist, *Psal. xix. 16.* *The Heavens, even the Heavens are the Lord's; but the Earth hath he given to the Children of Men.* A large and Regal Gift, whereby he hath made over all sublunary things unto Man, reserving unto himself the Sovereignty and supreme Lordship of all, and requiring only from Man the Homage and Payment of Obedience. Yet,

*Thirdly*, This large Charter and Donation gave no particular Propriety unto any; neither if Man had continued in his happy and innocent estate, would there have been any need of *Mens or Tunes*; or any partition of these earthly Possessions; but the common Blessings had been enjoyed in common; and all things which Covetousness and Corruption now ravine after, would have been as promiscuously enjoyed and used, as the common Light and Air; and each particular Man's share in those Blessings, would have been sufficient and satisfactory. But,

*Fourthly*, Sin, entering into the World, their Desires grew immoderate after these earthly Enjoyments, and their Attempts to attain them injurious unto others, so that it became necessary to prescribe Bounds and Limits to them, and to divide among them what before lay in common among all; that each man knowing his assigned Portion, might rest satisfied with it, and be restrained from the unjust Invasion and Usurpation of another's Right. And,

*Fifthly*, and *Lastly*, This could no otherwise be effected, but by humane Laws, by mutual Compact and Agreement, declaring what should be accounted as every Man's Right and Propriety: So that it is Law which is the great Determiner of Propriety; and there is nothing *Mine or Thine* farther than this assigns it unto us: Indeed Equity must sometimes inter-

pose

pose to moderate the Letter of the Law ; for in some Cases, should we rigorously prosecute our Right, and insist upon every Punctilio that we may call our Due: This, although it would not be unjust, yet it would be Justice turned into Gall and Wormwood; it would be a Breach and Violation of the Law of Christ, and of Charity, which requires us rather to part with our own in small Matters, than to be vexatious, or contentious in recovering, or defending it.

Thus you see how all Right and Property first came into the World: A General Right, by the Donation of God; a particular Right, by the Sanction of Laws, allotting to each Man his Portion; which to invade, or usurp from him, is Injustice, or Theft.

Whence it follows, That where there is no Society in occupation of any part of the Earth, the Right accrues to the first Possessor; and where things are found which appertain to none, they fall to the first Seiser; for there can be no Theft committed where there is no precedent Title. If any therefore should providentially be cast into some Desert, and uninhabited part of the World, that general Charter that God hath given unto Mankind of possessing the Earth, empowers them to seize on it as theirs, and they may lawfully make use of the Blessings of it in common, till by mutual consent they shall divide to each other their Part and Portion: But after such a Partition made, to use the same Liberty, is no longer lawful; but Theft and Robbery.

Thus you see what *Theft* is; and that this Law of God, prohibiting us to steal what is another's, doth presuppose a Law of Man, which makes Property, and causeth Things to become either ours, or another's.

Now there are many kinds of Theft.

*First*, The highest and chiefest is that which is committed against God by Sacrilege. Now Sacrilege is an alienating



from God whatsoever he hath appropriated to himself, or is upon good grounds dedicated to the encouragement and maintenance of his Honour and Service. Indeed the alienating of what hath been given to Superstitious or Idolatrous Uses, cannot be justly branded with this black Mark of Sacrilege; for it was not so much given unto God, as unto Ignorance and Superstition: And therefore our Ancestors have done well and piously, in dissolving those Nests and Cages of unclean Birds that were so nutritious and burthensome in these Kingdoms; but withal, in my judgment, would have done much better, if they had converted their Revenues to some publick Use, either for the Benefit of the Church, or Common-wealth, rather than to their own private and particular gain. But where any thing is indeed consecrated unto God, and set apart for the maintenance and encouragement of his Worship and Service, it is no less than Sacrilege, and robbing of God; to alienate any part of this to any secular Uses, or to detain it from that Use unto which it was separated. And of this God himself grievously complains, *Mal. 3. 8, 9. Will a Man rob God?* As if it were a Sin so heinous, as that it is hardly to be supposed any Man would be guilty of it: What! not to allow that God has share among them, who had liberally afforded them all things to enjoy! *Yet ye have robbed me.* But ye say, *Wherein have we robbed thee?* In Tithes and Offerings, *Ye are cursed with a Curse: for ye have robbed me, even this whole Nation.* Certainly those Things which are appointed for the Worship and Service of God, whether they be originally by Divine Right, or not; yet they cannot be alienated, nor detained without involving the Persons, or the Nation that doth thus, in a most direful Curse: For this is no other than a robbing God of his Right. And how far these Nations may be concerned in this Sin, and how deeply sunk under this Curse, I leave it to the consideration of those who have no other Interests to sway their Judgments, but that of Piety and Honesty.

Secondly,

*Secondly*, Theft is committed against Men by an unjust seizing, or detaining what of right belongs unto them. And this may be done either by Fraud, or Force: And therefore our Saviour in reciting the Commandments mentions them both, *Mark 10. 19, Do not steal, Defraud not.* This is a Sin that God hath threatned with many severe Curses and Punishments.

*First*, The Temporal Punishment which the Scripture awards unto it, is a four fold, and sometimes a five-fold Restitution, as you may see, *Exod. 22. 1.* And therefore *Zacheus*, when he was converted, offers a four fold Restitution to those whom he had wronged, *Luk. 19. 8. If I have taken any thing from any Man by false Accusation, I restore him four fold.* And yet besides this Restitution, it seems that sometimes the Offenders were to be put to Death, especially if the Circumstances of their Theft added Cruelty and Oppression unto it. This appears in the Parable of *Nathan*, *2 Sam. 12.* When he had most artificially aggravated the Crime of the rich Man, in taking away the poor Man's Lamb, he so raised *David's* Compassion and Indignation, that he pronounceth this Sentence, *Verse 5. 6. The Man that hath done this thing shall surely die: And he shall restore the Lamb four-fold, because he did this thing, and because he had no Pity.* So that you see, that even under the Law of *Moses* it was not unlawful in some Cases to punish a Thief with Death, although the usual and prescribed Punishment was Restitution. Indeed our Law condemns them to Death, nor is it justly to be reprehended, for rooting out such Banes and Pests from the Common Wealth. For since Punishments are to be inflicted, not so much out of Revenge as Caution; not because some have offended, but to deter others from offending, it is but reasonable that the Penalty should answer this end; which we might very well doubt, whether among us any lighter than Death would do, since

we

## An Exposition upon

we see so many still persist in this wicked Course of Life, notwithstanding the Severity of the Punishment the Law provides for them. *Skin for Skin, and all that a Man hath will he give for his Life.* If therefore the Fear of Death it self cannot be forcible enough to deter them, certainly the Fear of Restitution would be much less effectual; and such a gentle and mitigated Punishment would but open a wide gap to all manner of Robbery and Rapine.

But besides the Punishment which is threatned by the Law, Consider,

*Secondly*, God leaves a Curse upon what is gotten by Theft and Deceit; a Curse that will blast and consume all such wicked Increase. They put it into a Bag with Holes; and by some unperceivable Providence it strangely wafts and slips away between their Fingers. But usually Luxury and Intemperance devours what is got by Theft and Rapine, God by his righteous Judgment making one Sin the Vengeance of another. But however, some secret withering Curse seizeth upon it; and what is thus wickedly added to our former Possessions, will rub its Rust and Canker upon them all; and if Restitution be not duly made, will insensibly prey upon them and consume them. And therefore, saith the wise Man, *Prov. 21. 7. The Robbery of the Wicked shall destroy them; and, Jer. 17. 11. As the Partridge sitteth on Eggs, and hatcheth them not; so he that getteth Riches, and not by Right, shall leave them in the midst of his Days, and at his end shall be a Fool.* Many times God raiseth up such against them, who shall deal with them as they have dealt with others; and when these Sponges are full of what they have unjustly suck'd up, shall squeeze them, and make them refund their ill gotten Treasure. Thus God threatens the *Chaldeans, Hab. 2. 8. Because thou hast spoiled many Nations, all the remnant of the People shall spoil thee.*

## the Eighth Commandment.

47

*Sec.* Such unjust Gettings tend only unto Poverty : And in this Sense it is no Solœcism to say they have but gained a loss, and treasured for Themselves, and their Posterity, Want and Beggery. And therefore as you desire to thrive in the World, and to have your Earthly Comforts multiplied, so be sure that no gain of Robbery, or Oppression, or Fraud and Deceit be found in your hands ; for this will devour even what you have gotten lawfully.

*Thirdly,* Anxieties and Perplexities of Mind do alway accompany ill-gotten Wealth : For it is a Sin so much against the very Light of Nature, that Conscience, if it be not utterly stupified and senseless, will be still molesting and haunting them with troublesome Thoughts and Reflexions. Besides, the Fear of Detection, and the Shame and Punishment which will follow upon it, must needs be a continual Disturbance unto them : Whereas what is gotten with a good Conscience, and in an honest and lawful Calling, whether it be more or less, it brings this Contentment with it, that a Man may quietly sit down and rejoyce in that Portion which the Providence and Bounty of his gracious God, and heavenly Father hath here afforded him ; he drinks no Widows Tears, nor Orphans Bloud ; he eats not the Flesh of the Poor, nor breaks the Bones of the needy ; his Conscience gnaws not upon him whilst he is feeding on what his honest Labour and Industry hath prepared for him ; and although it be but a Bit of Bread, and a Cup of Water that he can procure, yet is he entertained at a continual Feast ; His Fare may be but mean ; yet his Cheer, his Joy and Comfort is great ; and the coarsest Morsel he eats is far more savoury to him than all the heightened Delicates of rich Oppressors, whose Consciences mingle Gall and Wormwood with their most pleasant Bits, and knaws and grinds them as they grind the Faces of the Poor and needy. And therefore, saith the Wise Man, *Prov. 16. 8. Better is a little with Righteousness, than*

*than great Revenues without Right. And the Psalmist, Psal. 37. 16. A little that a Righteous Man hath, is better than the Riches of many Wicked.*

*Fourthly*, Robbery and Deceit provokes God to cut Men off by some untimely Stroke and immature Judgment; and that, either by the hand of Humane Justice with Shame and Reproach, or of Divine Justice with Wrath and Vengeance: For so we find it threatned, *Psal. 55. 23. Thou, O God, shalt bring them down into the Pit of Destruction: Bloody and deceitful Men shall not live out half their Days.* That is, they shall not lengthen out their Days to that period which the course and strength of Nature might seem to promise them; but the Hand of God shall cut them off in the vigour and midst of their flourishing Years.

But howsoever it may fare with them in this Life; howsoever they may escape the Reproach of Men, and the Sword of Justice: Yet,

*Fifthly*, They shall certainly be eternally cursed, and eternally miserable: Their ill gotten Goods shall not be able to redeem their Souls, or bribe the Justice of God, or give them the least Solace and Comfort. And what wretched Fools are they, who must eternally perish for gaining of Things that perish too; and bring Everlasting Torments upon themselves, for that which before brought them Vexations and Disquietments, *1 Corinth. 6. 10. Nor Thieves, nor Covetous, nor Drunkards, nor Revilers, nor Extortioners, shall inherit the Kingdom of God.* Where then shall their Portion be, but in that Lake which burneth with Fire and Brimstone unquenchable? Where the Lord will spoil their very Souls, as the Wise Man's Expression is, *Prov. 22. 23. Rob not the Poor, for the Lord will plead their Cause, and will spoil the Souls of those that spoiled them.*

And

## the Eighth Commandment.

49

And thus you have seen what various Ways God hath threatened that he will punish this Sin.

Before I can proceed farther, here are two Questions to be answered.

The first is, Whether in no case it be lawful to steal? What if the necessity be so urgent, that I must certainly perish, or else relieve my self by this means?

I say we ought not to do it in any Case; For Theft is in itself a Sin, and there can be no necessity to sin: For every Man is bound rather to chuse the greatest Evil of Sufferings, than to commit the least Evil of Sin. Indeed such Necessity doth somewhat mitigate the Heinousness of the Offence; but that is not at all considerable in the Direction of our Practice, since it continues a Sin still, and deserves Eternal Damnation. The Wise Man tells us, *Prov. 6. 30, 31. Men do not despise a Thief, if he steal to satisfy his Soul when he is hungry.* But this must be understood only comparatively, viz. That the Reproach and Infamy which attends such an one, is not so great as that of an Adulterer, as it appears *Verse 32.* As if he should say; to be an Adulterer, is a far fouler Reproach than to be a needy Thief. Yet he adds, *If he be found, he shall restore seven-fold, he shall give all the Substance of his House:* That is, though his Necessity and Hunger may take off somewhat from the Shame; yet it shall not from the Punishment of his Offence; but he shall restore that which he hath stolen seven-fold. Not that the Restitution should be seven times as much as the Theft; for the utmost that the Law requires was but a five-fold Restitution, *Exod. 22. 1.* But as the Word seven-fold is most frequently used in Scripture to signify that which is compleat and perfect; so is it here; he shall restore seven-fold; that is, he shall make a full and satisfactory Restitution. Since therefore the Punishment of Theft shall not be relaxed upon

G g g

the

# An Exposition upon

the Plea of Indigence and Necessity, it is apparent that Necessity cannot justify any from the Guilt of Theft. And therefore let your Wants be what they will, or can be, you ought not to supply them by any such wicked and unlawful Courses, whatever \* *Aquinas* says to the contrary. If God hath given thee Strength and Ability, thou oughtest to labour, and to use thine honest Industry to procure Necessaries; if not, thou oughtest to implore the Charity and Benevolence of others, whose Hearts God may open to thy Relief. Or if thou shouldst meet with such cruel *Dives's*, who will contribute nothing to thy Support, thou oughtest rather with godly *Lazarus* to die in thine Integrity, than to steal any thing from them; which although it be their Superfluity, yet it is not thy Right without their Donation: And this is in answer to the first Question.

\* 22 de q.  
66. Art. 7.

The Second is, What we shall judge of the *Israelites* spoiling the *Egyptians* of their Jewels, or which we read, *Exod. 12. 35, 36.*

I answer, In this Action there was no Theft committed. For,

First, The Supreme Dominion of all Things, is the Lords, and he may justly transfer the Right and Property where he pleaseth. Now they were commanded by the Lord to take these Things of the *Egyptians*; and therefore they were rightfully their own, being made so by him who hath the Sovereign Power of all Things, both in Heaven and Earth.

Altifido-  
dor. 1. 3.  
Tract. 7.  
Q. 5.

Ὁς παρὰ  
τὴν ἰσχυρίαν  
τοῦ κυρίου

ἡ ἀπολαύσις τῆς Αἰγυπτίου καὶ τῶν ἰσχυρίαν τοῦ κυρίου. *Chen Alex. Sermon. 1. 1.*

Secondly, These Things which they thus took, might be well considered in lieu of their Wages, which was not given them for their long Service in *Egypt*. And therefore it was

## The Eighth Commandment.

was but righteous in God to consign over these Riches of the *Aegyptians* to the *Israelites*, as a reward for their tedious Servitude. Now those, who by the Command of the Supreme Lord of all, take that which is but a due Reward for their Labour, cannot certainly be condemned as guilty of Theft. And this (it seems) was \* their Plea, when in the time of *Alexander the Great*, so many Ages after the thing was done, the *Aegyptians* sued the *Jews* by a juridical Process, to recover what was taken from them. But,

\* Jun Gerson in Talmud. German.

Responsione Aegyptii

*de Hebraeis vasa Aurea & Argentea. Contra Hebraei mutuas Petitiones instituant allegantes sibi quoque eorundem Patrum Nomine, ex eodem Scripturae Instrumento Mercedem, restitui oportere illius operariae Servitutis, pro latetinis deductis, pro Civitatibus, & villis aedificatis. Tertull. contra Murcion. l. 2.*

*Thirdly*, I answer, This Example is extraordinary and special, and not to be pleaded, or introduced into Practice. For certainly it is, that they had a most express Command from God to spoil the *Aegyptians*; But whosoever shall pretend any such Warrant now, by revelation or the impulse of his private Spirit, may well be censured for Enthusiasm, and condemned for Robbery.

And thus I have done with the first and greatest kind of Theft, taking away what rightfully belongs to another, whether God or Man.

*Secondly*, Another kind of Theft is Oppression, and unreasonable Exaction; and this especially is the Sin of Superiors towards their Inferiors, taking Advantage, either upon their Weakness, or their Necessity, to impose most unequal Conditions upon them, and such as they cannot bear without their Detriment, or Ruine, contrary to that Law which God gave unto his People, *Levit. 25. 14. If thou sell ought unto thy Neighbour, or buyest ought at thy Neighbour's hands; ye shall not oppress one another.* Thus those who set their Lands



## An Exposition upon

to the Sweat and Toil of others at too hard a Rate, so that the laborious Tenant cannot subsist by his Industry; those that let out Money at a biting Interest, or rigidly exact it from insufficient Persons; Great ones, who fright the meanner into disadvantageous Bargains, and force them, through Fear, to part with what they enjoy, at an under-price; these, and other like, though they may not be condemned by humane Laws, which give too much permission to Men to make the utmost Advantage of their own; yet they are guilty by the Law of God; and their Sin is no less than Oppression; which is a Sin hateful both to God and Man. The Prophet *Micah*, Chap. 3. 2, 3. calls it a *plucking off their Skin from them, and their Flesh from off their Bones, and chopping them in pieces, as for the Pot, and as Flesh for the Cauldron.* All Unmercifulness, and hard Dealings with others, is a kind of Theft; for the Law of Nature, and much more the Law of Charity, binds thee so to deal with others, that they may have no Cause to complain of thee to God; and in the Bitterness of their Spirits to imprecate his Wrath and Vengeance upon thee.

*Thirdly*, Another kind of Theft is detaining from another what is his due, either by Equity or Compact: And how many are there whose profuse Riot and Luxury are maintained upon the intrusted Goods of others, whilst the poor Creditor in the mean time hath no other satisfaction but good Words, and scarce any thing to live upon but his own Tears and Sighs? And how many withhold the Hire of the Labourer, who when he hath wearied out himself in their Service, is denied that small Reward which he requires for his necessary refreshment? Yea not only denying it, but even deferring it beyond the time that they can conveniently be without it, is a kind of Theft and Oppression, *Deut. 24. 14. Thou shalt not oppress an hired Servant that is poor and needy; at his Day thou shalt give him his Hire, neither shall the*

*the Sun go down upon it : For he is poor, and setteth his Heart upon it ; lest he cry against thee unto the Lord, and it be Sin unto thee.* Yea, in all our Bargains and Agrements, though they be never so much to thine own Prejudice, thou art bound to stand to them, unless the other will voluntarily release thee from the Obligation. For this is one of the Characters given of a godly Person, *Psal. 15. 4. He. that sweareth, and covenanteth to his own hurt, and changeth not ;* but upon Demand, is ready and willing to fulfil his Agreement : How much more heinous and abominable is it, when they have already received the full value of their Compact, unjustly to with-hold what they have agreed to give ; which is no better than to take their Labour, or their Goods from them by Violence and Robbery ; yea, and in one respect worse, in as much as it adds Falshood to Stealth.

*Fourthly,* Another kind of Theft is in buying and selling ; and this, is a very large and voluminous Deceit : For the Subtilty of Men hath found out so many Artifices to defraud and over-reach one another, that to recount them, is almost as hard as to escape them. Here come in the false Weights, and the false Measures which are *an abomination to the Lord.* *Prov. 11. 1.* False and counterfeited Wares, over-commending, or undervaluing of Goods for advantage ; and many other unjust Contrivances, which Men's Consciences can better suggest to them, than any Discourse. The Apostle hath sufficiently cautioned and threatned such Men. *1 Thes. 4. 6. Let no man go beyond, or defraud his Brother in any Matter ; because that the Lord is the avenger of such.* Believe it, there is a Day coming when the false Weights shall be themselves weighed, and the scanty Measures measured, by a Standard that is infallibly true. Possibly thou maist deal so cunningly, that those whom thou over-reachest can have no advantage against thee, nor right themselves by Law : But remember that the great Judge will avenge them upon thee at the last day..

## An Exposition upon

day. Then all Accounts shall be balanced, and so much found resting due, which thou shalt certainly pay; though not to those whom thou hast wronged; yet to the Justice of God, who is the great and universal Creditor.

There are likewise many other kinds of Theft; as Prodigality in wasting what should satisfy the just demands of others; taking of Wages and Reward for what we do not endeavour conscientiously to perform; selling that which we have no right to dispose of, or things which ought not to be sold; taking Bribes for Justice, or Rewards for Injustice. But I shall not particularly insist upon these, and many others that might be mentioned.

And thus we have seen what the Negative Part of this Precept is.

But because every Negative implies in it a Positive, let us see what is the Duty required from us. And that is twofold.

*First*, That every one of us should have some Calling.

*Secondly*, That all of us should be contented in that Estate and Condition of Life, wherein the Divine Providence hath set us.

*First*, *Thou shalt not steal*: therefore every Man ought to have a Calling, whereon he may comfortably subsist, and by his Labour and Industry may provide at least Necessaries for himself and Family: *For he that provideth not for his Family, hath denied the Faith*, (saith the Apostle,) *and is worse than an Infidel*: Some there are who live without any Calling at all; such are like idle Drones, that consume the Labours of others, lazy Vagabonds, to whom the greatest Charity would be Correction; who only serve to devour misplaced Alms; and defraud the truly poor of their Relief: Yea, if I should rank with these a company of superfluous, debauch'd

debauch'd Gentlemen, I think I should do them no great Injury ; such, I mean, who are neither serviceable to God, nor their Country , who have nothing of true Worth and Gentility in them ; but are a Company of leud and desperate Roysters, the most unprofitable Members in the Commonwealth, and good for nothing but to kill and destroy one another in their drunken Quarrels. I know there is no necessity for Manual Employment and Labour to those whom God hath liberally endowed with his earthly Blessings ; but yet they may have a Calling, and within their own Sphere may find Employment enough to take up their Time and Thoughts ; and such as may make them the most beneficial Men on Earth, and truly honoured and loved by others. For by their Authority, their Example, the Ampleness of their Demesnes and Revenues, and the Dependence that others have upon them, they may be as influential to promote Goodness and Vertue, as too commonly they are to promote Vice and Villany ; and to such truly generous Spirits, who intend to be so employed, let me commend the careful perusal of an excellent Treatise directed unto them ; Entituled, *The Gentleman's Calling*. But yet withal, if they should condescend to some stated Vocation, and Course of Life, it would be no disparagement to their Gentility ; for certainly *Adam* was as much a Gentleman, and had as large Demesnes as any of them ; and yet God thought fit to place him in *Eden*, that he might dress and keep the Garden.

But as some have no Employment ; so,  
*Secondly*, Others have an unlawful Employment : Such whose only Work it is to instruct Vice, and excite Men to it. And how many such are there, who live by the provoking and encouraging the Wickedness of others ; and continually make use of all the Allurements that might entice unto Evil, and recommend Debauchery first to the Fancy, and then to the Will and Affections :

*Thirdly,*

## An Exposition upon

*Thirdly*, Others have indeed an honest and a lawful Calling; but they are negligent and slothful in it. Now Sloth tendeth to Poverty. *Prov. 6. 10, 21. Tet a little Sleep, a little Slumber, a little folding of the Hands to Sleep: So shall thy Poverty come as one that travelleth; drawing nearer and nearer to thee by soft and silent degrees; and thy want as an armed Man; who, though his Pace be slow, by reason of the weight of his Armour, yet his Assaults are more irresistible and destructive. And Poverty tempts to Theft. Prov. 30. 9. Lest I am poor, and steal. And therefore this Command which forbids Theft, must by consequence enjoin Labour and Industry in those lawful Callings wherein the Divine Providence hath set us; according to that of the Apostle, Eph. 4. 28: Let him that stole steal no more; but rather let him labour, working with his hands the thing that is good, that he may have to give to him that needeth; and so by his Industry, of a Thief become a Benefactor and Alms-giver.*

\* Discontent and Covetousness are the Root of all Injustice. He that thinks himself wronged that he hath not as much as some others, will be apt either through Fraud or Violence to increase his own by wronging of others.

*Secondly*, It requires us to be contented with that Portion of Earthly Comforts which our heavenly Father allots unto us. *Heb. 13. 5. Be content with these things ye have.* And certainly he that is not content with what God allows him, lies under a grievous Temptation, by fraudulent and unjust Courses to carve out his own Condition to himself, and to invade the Rights and Properties of others\*: Let us therefore check this repining Temper betimes, and not think that we have too little, and othes too much; but whatsoever God be apt to affordeth us, let us account it sufficient Provision, and a Child's Portion; and although it be but Food and Rayment, neither the most delicate, nor the most sumptuous; yet having Food and Rayment, let us be therewith contented; as the Apostle exhorts us, *1 Tim. 6. 8.* Let us look upon all other Things as superfluous, or indifferent; and not murmur, although we should never obtain them: For whatsoever is needful

## The Eighth Commandment.

37

needful to thy Subsistence; God's Providence and Blessing upon thy Industry, will furnish thee with it; and what is not needful to this, is not worth thy Envy and Repining.

And so much for the Exposition of this Commandment.

I shall only subjoin a Word or two unto those who are conscious to themselves that they have wronged others of what was their due, and either with-held, or taken from, what by Law and Equity belonged to them: Let such know that they are bound to make them a perfect and plenary satisfaction, by making an entire and plenary restitution, if the Thing they have stolen or purloined, be still extant, and in their hand; or if not, then by making a full and satisfactory compensation. Yea, be the thing great or small, more or less, though it should seemingly tend to the loss of thy Credit, by acknowledging such a Wrong; or visibly tend to thy impoverishing or undoing to restore it; yet notwithstanding, thou art bound to restore every Farthing of what thou hast wronged and defrauded thy Brother. Nor is it enough to confess the Sin before God, and to beg Pardon at his Hands; but thou must likewise render unto Man what is his due, and what thou unjustly keepest from him; whether it be his by thy Promise, or by his own former Possession, as ever thou hopest to obtain Pardon for thy Sin from the Mercy of God; yea, and thou art bound likewise to the very utmost of thy Power to make him recompence for all the damage which he hath in the mean time sustained by thy unjust with-holding his Right and Due from him; or else thou shalt never obtain Pardon and Remission for thy Guilt. And the Reason is, because as long as you detain what is another's, so long you continue in the commission of the same Sin; for unjust Possession is a continued and prolonged Theft: And certainly Repentance can never be true nor sincere, while we continue in the Sin of which we seem to

*Sires aliena propter quam peccatum est, reddi possit, & non redditur, penitentia non agitur, sed simulatur; non remittetur peccatum, nisi restitutum. Aug. Ep. ad Macedonium. 54.*

H h h

repent;

repent; and thy Repentance not being true, Pardon shall never be granted thee.

But you will say, What if those whom we have wronged be since dead? How can Restitution be made unto them?

I answer; In this Case, thou art bound to make it to their Children, or their near Relations, to whom it is to be supposed, that what thou hast wrongfully detained, would have descended, and been left by them; or if none of these can be found, nor any to whom of right it may belong, then God's Right takes place, as he is the great Lord and Proprietor of all things. And thou oughtest, besides what thou art obliged to give of thine own, to bestow it on the works of Charity and Piety; for it is then ascribed to him: Yet withal, thou hast great reason to bewail that thou hast so long deferred the restitution of it to the right owner, till now thou hast made thy self incapable of doing it.

This possibly may seem an hard Lesson; and doubtless it is so in a World so full of Rapine and Injustice; but yet as hard as it is, this is the Rule of Christianity; this is the inflexible Law of Justice; and without this, you live and die without all hopes of obtaining pardon, by continuing in your Sins impenitently.

And thus much for this Eighth Commandment.

THE

## THE NINTH COMMANDMENT.

**Thou shalt not bear false Witness against  
thy Neighbour.**

**T**HE former Commandment provided for the Security of every Man's Property, that they may suffer no Wrong nor Detriment in their Goods: This which I have now read unto you, provides for the Preservation of their good Name, which is a much dearer Possession: For, *A good Name, saith the Wise Man, Prov. 22. 1. is rather to be chosen than great Riches.* And therefore it ought to be kept by us, although not delicately and nicely; yet tenderly, and with respect. Who so contemns Fame, will soon prostitute Vertue; and those who care not what others say, will shortly arrive to that Impudence of sinning, as not to care what they themselves do. Indeed a good Name is so excellent a Blessing, that there is but one thing to be preferred before it; and that is a good Conscience; when these two stand in competition, Credit must give place to Duty; and in this Case, it is far better to lose our Repute with Men, than our Acceptance and Reward with God. It oftentimes so happens, through the Ignorance and general Corruption of Mankind, that what is honest, and pure, and just, are not yet of good Report amongst them. Piety is but Affectation; Strictness of Life a peevish Hypocrite; the Cross a Scandal;

H h h 2



## An Exposition upon

Scandal ; Christ himself a Wine-bibber, a Friend of Publicans and Sinners ; his Doctrine Heresie ; and his Miracles Impostures : And if thou lightest upon any such froward and perverse Censurers, as too many such there are in all Ages, who *think it strange*, as the Apostle speaks, *that ye run not with them into the same excess of Riot ; speaking evil of you ; seek not by any base and sinful compliance to redeem their good opinion ; but rather glory in the Testimony of their Railing, and account all their reviling Speeches to be but so many Votes for your Blessedness. Mat. 5. 11. Blessed are ye when Men shall revile you, and persecute you, and speak all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake.* Never covet a good Name by bad Actions : For what will all the concurring Applause of the whole World signifie unto thee, if yet thy Conscience condemn thee louder than they can extol thee ? This is but to have Musick at the Door, when all the while there is Chiding & Brawling within. It is far better that others should wound thy Credit, than thou thy Conscience. That is a Wound which their Tongues can never lick whole again. All the Reputation thy Popular Sinning can bring thee, will be but like hanging Bells at an Horse's Ears, when all the while his Back is gall'd with his Burthen. Whosoever will be a Christian, must resolve to go through bad Report, as well as good ; he should desire the one, but not anxiously refuse the other. And if any will bespatter him, let him be careful that it be only with their own Dirt, and not with his ; with their own Malice, and not his Miscarriages. And whilst he thus keeps his Conscience clear, he may be assured that his Credit shall be cleared up at that day, when all their unjust Reproaches shall but add a Crown and Diadem of Glory to his Head.

But where a good Name is consistent with a good Conscience, we ought to prize and value it as one of the choicest of God's Blessings in this World, and to use all lawful Means to preserve it : For,

*First,*

## the Ninth Commandment.

61

*First*, This will render a Man more serviceable to God ; and the fitter Instrument to promote his Honour and Glory in the World. And therefore the Wise Man, *Ecclef. 7. 1.* compares a good Name to precious Ointment ; and in the Comparison gives it the preference ; for as precious Ointment diffuseth its fragrancy through the Room where it is poured forth, and affects all that are in it with its delightful Scent ; so do Men's Gifts, when they are perfum'd with a good Name, delight and attract others, and by a sweet and powerful Charm allure them to imitate and practise those Vertues which they see so recommendable. And therefore we find it the Apostle's Care, *2 Cor. 6. 3.* to give no offence in any thing, that the Ministry might not be blamed. Though it be our great Folly to estimate Men's Counsels by their own Practice ; since a diseased Physician may prescribe a wholesome Medicine ; yet so it comes to pass, whether through the Curse of God, or the Prejudice of Men, that those who have lost their Credit, have, together with it, lost all opportunities and advantages of doing good in the World : Let their Parts be never so flourishing, and their Gifts never so eminent, yet if once this dead Fly be gotten into this Box of Ointment, it will corrupt it, and render it unfavoury to all. And the Devil hath no such Policy to make the Gifts of those whom he fears might shake his Kingdom unuseful, as either to tempt them to the commission of some infamous and scandalous Sin ; or to tempt others falsely to calumniate, and report such profligate Crimes concerning them : For then he knows such an one is disarmed, and made unserviceable ; and if he can but once blast the Leaves, the Fruit will seldom come to any maturity and perfection. And therefore as you desire to be serviceable to God in promoting his Glory ; and to the World, in promoting their Good and Benefit ; which is the great End of our Being, and the only thing worth living for ; so endeavour by all wise and honest Means, to keep up your good Name. Be good, and appear

to

## An Exposition upon

to be so. *Let your Light so shine before Men, that they seeing your good Works, may glorifie your Father which is in Heaven, Matth. 5. 16.*

*Secondly*, A good Name, as it gives us Advantage of doing Good to others, so it lays an Obligation upon us of being good our selves : For if the World be so kindly mistaken, as to report well of us without any Desert, yet this cannot but work upon us, if we have any Ingenuity, and ingage us to deserve it ; so happily turn that which was Praise into Motive. Or if they give us but our due Commendation, and our Vertue justly challengeth this Fame ; yet still it will engage us to do Things worthy our selves, and worthy that common Estimate that Men put upon us, that we may not fall short of what we have been, or what they still repute us to be. This is a laudable Ambition, which seeks by Vertue to maintain that Credit, which by Vertue we have acquired. And doubtless when other Arguments have been baffled by a Temptation, this hath been a Sheet Anchor to the Soul ; and hath often held it in the greatest Storms, when the Wind and Waves have beat most furiously against it. Should I consent to this Sin, what a Blot and Dishonour should I get to my self ! How should I be able to look good Men in the Face again ! Would not this Sin brand me for an Hypocrite in their Esteem ? Would they ever look upon me, or receive me with Affection after this Fall ? Should I not carry the Disgrace, and Scar of this Wound visibly upon me to my Grave ? No, one Sin shall never ruine all the Comfort, and all the Repute of so many Years Piety : And I who have been so long noted and exemplary for Holiness, will not by this one Fact make my self a scorn to the Wicked, and a shame to the Godly ; and by those Considerations, he rejects a Temptation, that perhaps ran down all other Considerations before it. But now, a Man of a lost and desperate Credit, sins impudently, without any such Restraint

strait upon him: He thinks it is but in vain for him to abstain from any Wickedness; for whether he doth, or not, People will still believe him guilty: His credit is so disfigured, and his Name so infamous, that he thinks he cannot be worse than he is already reported; and so rubs his Forehead, and outfaceth Censure, and with a brazen Impudence cares not how wicked he is, nor how many knew him to be so.

Thus you have seen how cautious we ought to be in maintaining our own good Name.

But this Command requires us also to preserve the Reputation and good Name of others, as well as our own. And it forbids,

*First, The Sin of Lying.*

*Secondly, Detraction and Slander.*

*Thirdly, Base Soothing, and unworthy Flattery.*

*First, This Command prohibits Lying.* A Sin, that comprehends under it all other Violations of this Precept: For Slander and Flattery are both of them Lies, different only in Manner and Circumstance.

And as it is a Sin large and comprehensive in its Nature; so it is general and universal in its Practice: We may well complain with the Holy Prophet, *Thine Truth is perished from the Earth.*

Here I shall first shew you what a Lie is: And then the Heinousness and Aggravation of this common Sin.

*First, A Lie, according to St. Austin's Definition of it is a voluntary speaking of an Untruth, with an intent to deceive.*

\*Voluntaria Falsi Enunciatio, fallendi Causa, Aug. de mendac. ad Conferentium, c. 44.

ctive. And therefore in a Lie there must be these Three Ingredients.

- First*, There must be the speaking of an Untruth.
- Secondly*, It must be known to us to be an Untruth, and a Falshood. And,
- Thirdly*, It must be with a Will and Intent to deceive him to whom we speak it, and to lead him into Errour. And, therefore,

*First*, Parables, and Figurative Speeches are no Lies : For neither as to the drift and scope of them, are they Falshoods ; nor yet are they spoken with an intent to deceive, but rather to instruct the Hearers ; and so have neither the Matter, nor the Form of a Lie. The Scripture abounds with these Tropical Expressions, which, although in the proper signification of the Words, they cannot be verified of the Things to which they are applied ; yet do very fully agree to them in their figurative and transferred Sense : Thus *Jotham's* Parable of *Trees chusing them a King*, was aptly accommodated to that Sense which he meant, and which those that heard him, well enough understood. And thus our Saviour Christ calls himself a *Door* ; signifying by that Metaphor, that by him alone we must enter into Heaven and Eternal Life : A *Vine* ; signifying, that without our Incision into him, and spiritual Union unto him, whereby we derive Grace from his Plenitude and Fulness of Grace ; as the Branches do Sap and Juice from the Stock, we shall be cast out as withered and fruitless Branches, fit for nothing but to be burned. Innumerable other *Metaphors* are every where dispersed up and down in the Scriptures. And besides *Metaphors*, the Scripture useth *Hyperbolies*. I shall only instance in that famous one, *John 21. ult. Many other things Jesus did ; which if they should be written everyone, I suppose that even the World it self could not contain the Books that should be written.* This high Expression the Evangelist useth only to exaggerate

## the Ninth Commandment.

65

aggrate the Number of the Miracles and remarkable Passages of our Saviour's Life ; and to signifie to us, that he did very many other things, which are not upon Record.

And sometimes the Scripture useth Ironical Taunts. Thus in that bitter Sarcasm of *Elijah* to the Priests of *Baal*, 1 *King.* 18. 27. *He mock'd them, and said, Cry aloud ; for he is a God.* Which kinds of Ironical Speeches are so far from being intended to create Errour in the Minds of Men, or to confirm them in it, that they are spoken on purpose to convince them of their Errours, and to make them appear to be shameful and ridiculous ; and therefore are no Lies.

But here we must take this Caution ; That in using such Figurative Speeches, we ought so to circumstantiate them, that the Hearers may easily perceive the Drift and Scope of our Discourses ; or at least may be assured that we intend some other meaning by them, than what the Words do properly, and in themselves bear. Otherwise, though it may not be a Lie in us, yet it may be an occasion of Errour and Mistake in them.

*Secondly*, Every Falshood is not a Lie ; for though it hath the Matter, yet it may want the Form and Complement to make it such : For many times Men do speak and report that which is not true, which yet they themselves do believe to be true ; and so are rather deceived, than Deceivers ; and perhaps are far from any intention of imposing upon the Credulity of others \*. Such an one is not so much to be accused of Lying, as of Folly and Rashness, in reporting that for Truth, the Certainty of which is not clear and evident unto him.

*Thirdly*, A Man may speak that which is true, and yet be a Liar in so doing : As in these two Cases :

\* *Vir bonus præstare debet nementiatur, prudens nemendacium dicat.*  
P. Nigid.  
apud A. Gell. noct. At. 3. l. 1 p. c. 11.

1 ii

i. When

1. When we report that to be a Truth, which, although it be so, yet we believe it to be a Falshood, and report it with an intent to deceive those that hear us: Or,

2. When we report the Figurative Words of another, leaving out those Circumstances which might make them appear to be Figurative. And therefore, *Matth. 26. 60.* They are called *false Witnesses*, which came in against Christ, and testified, that he said, he was *able to destroy the Temple of God, and to build it in three days.* In which, though there were many Falsifications of the Words of our Saviour; yet had they reported the very Words that he spake, they had nevertheless been false Witnesses; because by their Testimony they wrested them to another Sense than what Christ intended by them; for certainly he is a Liar, who reports my Words with a purpose to beget a wrong Construction of them, as much as he who reports me to have spoken what I never said.

*Fourthly*, It is no Lie to conceal part of the Truth, when it not expedient or necessary to be known. Thus, *1 Sam. 16. 2.* God himself instructs *Samuel*, when he sent him to anoint *David King over Israel*, that he should answer, *he came to sacrifice unto the Lord*; which was Truth, and one End of his going into *Bethlehem*, though he had also another; which he prudently concealed.

*Fifthly*, A Man may act contrary to what he before said, if the Circumstances of the Thing be altered, without being guilty of Lying. We have frequent Example of this in the Scripture. Thus, *Gen. 19. 2.* The *Angels* tell *Lot*, that *they would not come into his House; but would abide in the Street all night*; yet upon his Importunity and earnest Intreaties, *they went in with him.* And thus *St. Peter*, with some heat and vehemency of his Humility, refused that Christ should wash his Feet. *John 13. 3.* *Thou shalt never wash*

*wasb my Feet:* But when he was instructed in the significance of this Condescension of our Saviour, not only permits, but intreats him to do it. So likewise in all things of such a nature, we may lawfully change our Words, upon the change of our Minds; and upon the inducement of some Circumstances that were not known or considered by us, we may without the imputation of Lying, do otherwise than we before resolved and declared: But this must be heedfully cautioned:

*First,* That the Actions be not such as we are bound to perform by Divine Precept, Nor,

*Secondly,* Such as we have bound our selves unto by the voluntary Obligation of a Vow made unto God. Nor,

*Thirdly,* Such as our not doing them, or doing otherwise than we have promised, should be hurtful or prejudicial unto others: For if I have promised another that which is beneficial unto him, however I may change my Opinion; yet I must not change my Purpose, but unless he will release me, or hath forfeited the Benefit of my Promise, by failing in the Conditions of it, I stand engaged to perform what I have plighted unto him.

And thus you see what a Lie is, and what is not a Lie: The Summ of all I shall contract into this Description of it. A Lie is a Falshood, either real, or supposed so by us, spoken purposely, and with an intention to deceive another. And therefore neither Falshoods, nor thought to be so, nor Figurative Speeches, nor Truth partly concealed, nor the change of our Mind and Purposes, upon the changing and alteration of Circumstances, can be chargeable with that foul and scandalous Sin of Lying.

Now Lies are usually distinguished into Three Kinds:

The Jocular,  
Officious, and,  
Pernicious Lie.



## An Exposition upon

*First*, There is a Jocular Lie; a Lie framed to excite Mirth and Laughter, and deceive the Hearer, only to please and divert him. This, though it may seem very harmless, to deceive Men into Mirth and Recreation; yet Truth is such an awful and severe thing, that it ought not to be contradicted; no, not in Jest: And God reckons it up as a Sin, against the *Israelites*, *Hosea* 7. 3. That they *made the King and Princes glad, or merry, with their Lies.*

*Secondly*, There is an officious Lie; which is told for another's Benefit and Advantage; and seems to make an abundant Compensation for its Falshood, by its Use and Profit: But yet neither can this excuse it from being a Sin; for since a Lie is intrinsically evil in it self, let the Advantage that accrues by it, be never so great, we ought not to shelter either our selves, or others under that rotten Refuge. That stated Maxim holds universally true in all Cases, *We ought not to do evil, that good may come thereof.* And therefore, although thine own Life, or thy Neighbour's depends upon it; yea, put case it were not only to save his Life, but to save his Soul, couldst thou by this means most eminently advance the Glory of God, or the general Good and Welfare of the Church; yet thou oughtest not to tell the least Lie to promote these great and blessed Ends. This the Apostle takes for granted, *Rom.* 3. 7. Which Place, because it may seem at first glance, somewhat obscure, I shall briefly expound unto you. *If the Truth of God hath more abounded through my Lie unto his Glory, why yet am I also judged as a Sinner?* The Words, as they lye, seem to be favourable to such a beneficial Lie: But if we consider the Scope and Drift of them, we shall see that they clearly condemn it. For the Apostle had in the foregoing Verses taught, that the Unrighteousness and Sins of Men did occasionally conduce to the Manifestation of the Justice and Veracity of God, in fulfilling his Threatnings upon them; against this Position, he raiseth an Objection;

Objection: *Verse 5.* If the Unrighteousness of Men commend, and illustrate the Righteousness of God; How then can God be just, in taking Vengeance on those Sins by which he is glorified? To this the Apostle answers two Ways.

*First,* He abhors the Consequence, *Verse 6. God forbid,* that we should think him unjust, because he punisheth those Sins, which accidentally serve for the Manifestation of his Glory. For if God were unjust, how then should he judge the World.

*Secondly,* He answers by putting a like Case, and giving a like Instance, *Verse 7. If the Truth of God hath more abounded through my Lie, why yet am I judged as a Sinner?* As if he should say; by the like Reason, as you infer, that it would be unrighteous in God to punish those, who are the occasion of so much Glory to him through their Sins; by the like I might infer, that if by *my Lie* I might glorify God, I were not to be accounted a Sinner for Lying. But this, saith he, *Verse 8.* is a most wicked Consequence, and such as would justify the Slanders of those, who report that we affirm it lawful, *To do Evil that Good may come, whose Damnation is just:* That is, it is just with God to damn those, who slander us with such a gross Untruth; and it is just with God to damn those, who hold so wicked and destructive a Doctrine. So that you see nothing could be more expressly spoken against these officious Lies, than what the Apostle here produceth in this Place. He asserts in the general, That we must not do Evil that Good may come thereof; and he instanceth in particular, that we must not lie, although the Glory of God may be promoted by it.

*Thirdly,* There is a malicious and pernicious Lie, a Lie devised on purpose for the Hurt and Damage of my Neighbour; which is the worst, and the most heinous sort of all,  
and

## An Exposition upon

and hath nothing that might excuse or extenuate it. It shews an Heart brim-full of the Bitterness of Malice, when this Passion works out at the Mouth in slanderous Reports, and false Accusations. All Lies are in themselves sinful; but this the vilest, and most abominable of all.

Now for the Aggravations of this Sin, Consider,

*First*, It is a Sin that makes you most like unto the Devil. The Devil is a Spirit, and therefore gross carnal Sins cannot correspond unto his Nature: His Sins are more refin'd, and intellectual; such as are Pride, and Malice, Deceit, and Falshood. *John 8. 44. He is a Liar, and the Father of it.* And the more of Malice goes into the Composition of any Lie, the more nearly it resembles him. This is the First-born of the Devil; the beginning of his Strength; for by Lies he prevailed over wretched Man; and therefore is his Darling and Beloved Sin, and the greatest Instrument of promoting his Kingdom. 'Tis that which, in his own Mouth, ruined all Mankind in the Gross; when he falsely suggested to our first Parents, that they should be as Gods, and that which he still puts into the Hearts and Mouths of others, to ruine and destroy their Souls, and the Souls of others, *Acts 5. 3. Why hath Satan filled thine Heart to lie unto the Holy Ghost? When he speaketh a Lie, he speaketh of his own*, saith our Saviour: And certainly when we speak a Lie, we repeat only what he prompts and dictates to us. Thou never liest, but thou speakest aloud what the Devil whispered softly to thee. The Old Serpent lies folded round in thy Heart, and we may hear him hissing in thy Voice: And therefore when God summoned all his Heavenly Attendance about him; and demanded who would persuade *Abab* to go up, and fall at *Ramoth-Gilead*, an Evil Spirit, that had crowded in amongst them, steps forth, and undertakes the Office, as his most natural Employment, and that wherein he most

## the Fifth Commandment.

most of all delighted, *1 Kings 22. 22. I will go forth, and be a lying Spirit in the Mouth of all his Prophets.* Every Lie thou tellest, consider that the Devil sits upon thy Tongue, breaths Falshood into thine Heart, and forms the Words and Accents into Deceit.

*Secondly*, Consider, That it is a Sin most contrary to the Nature of God, who is Truth it self; a Sin that he hates and abominates. *Prov. 6. 17. These six things doth the Lord hate; yea, seven are an abomination unto him; a proud Look, a lying Tongue, &c.* And, *Prov. 12. 32. Lying Lips are an abomination unto the Lord.* And therefore we have so many expresse Commands given us against this Sin. *Lev. 19. 11. Ye shall not deal falsely, nor lie one to another.* *Col. 3. 9. Lie not one to another.* *Eph. 4. 25. Wherefore putting away Lying, speak every Man Truth to his Neighbour.*

*Thirdly*, Consider, That it is a Sin that gives in a fearful Evidence against us, that we belong to the Devil, and are his Children: For he is the Father of Lies, and of Liars: God's Children will imitate their heavenly Father in his Truth and Veracity. And it is a very observable Place, *Isa. 63. 8. Surely, saith God, they are my People, Children that will not lie; so he was their Saviour.*

*Fourthly*, Consider, how dreadfully God hath threatned it with eternal Death; scarce any one Sin more expressly and particularly. *Rev. 21. ult. Without, even in outer darkness, are Dogs, and Murderers, and Idolaters, and whatsoever loveth, or maketh a Lie.*

*Fifthly*, A Lie sheweth a most degenerate and cowardly Fear of Men, and a most daring Contempt of the great God. **Who**soever lies, doth it out of a base and sordid Fear, lest some Evil and Inconveniency should come unto him by declaring;

Lib. 2. c. 18. claring the Truth. And this *Montaigne*, in his *Essays*, gives as the Reason why the Imputation of Lying is the most reproachful Ignominy that one Man can lay upon another; and that which most passionately moves them to Revenge; because, saith he, *to say a Man lieth, is to say, that he is audacious towards God, and a Coward towards Men.*

*Sixtly*, Mankind generally accounts it the most infamous and reproachful Sin of all others: A Liar loseth all Credit and Reputation amongst Men; and he who hath made himself scandalous by Lying, is not believed when he speaks Truth. Yea, it is so odious and foul a Sin, that we find it generally esteemed worse than any other Sin; and the avoiding of this, thought a good Excuse for the commission of others: For when Men are moved with some violent Passion, they oftentimes resolve to do such things, which, when their Passion is allayed, they must look upon as grievous Sins; yet rather than be false to their Word, and so censured for Lying, they will venture to perpetrate. Thus *Herod*, for his Oath's sake, beheaded *John the Baptist*. And the common Excuse for rash and unwarantable Actions, is, *I said I would do thus, or thus; and therefore I thought my self bound in Honour to do it.*

*Seventhly*, It is a Sin that God will detect, and exposeth those who are guilty of it, to Shame and Contempt. *Prov. 12. 19. Lying Lips are but for a moment.* And when they are found out, as usually they are, by their own Forgetfulness, and the interfering of their own Speeches, how shameful will their Sin be to them? And the only Reward they shall have for it, is, that those who have accustomed themselves to Lying, shall not be believed when they speak Truth.

Thus much concerning that heinous and odious Sin of Lying.

There

## The Ninth Commandment.

73

There remains two other Violations of this Commandment: The one is, by Slander and Detraction; the other, by base Flattery and Soothing: And both these may respect either our selves, or others. I shall first speak of that common Sin of Slander and detraction; a Sin that is reigning and triumphant in this our Age: And if I should likewise say in this Place, I think I should not my self be guilty, of it by that censure. Indeed Slander and Detraction seem somewhat to differ; For Slander properly is a false Imputation of Vice; but Detraction is a causeless, diminishing Report of Vertue. The one traduceth us to be what indeed we are not; the other lessens what we really are; and both are highly injurious to our good Name and Reputation, the best and dearest of all our earthly Possessions.

When a Man's Life and Actions are so blameless and exemplary, that even Malice it self is ashamed to vent its Venom by base Slanders, lest it should appear to be Malice, and the Reproach should light rather upon the Reporters, than him whom they seek to defame; then it betakes it self to those little sly Arts of nibbling at the Edges of a Man's Credit, and clipping away the Borders of his good Name, that it may not pass so current in the World as before. Thus, when any are so just as to give others their due commendation either for Learning, or Wisdom, or Piety, or and other Perfection, either of Grace, or of Nature, you shall have those who lie in wait to cut off other Men's Esteem, if they see it so strongly fortified by the Conspicuousness of it, and the general Voe of the World, that they dare not attack the whole, then they lurkingly assault part of it; and what they cannot altogether deny, they will endeavour to diminish: *'Tis true, such a Man is, as you say, Learned and Knowing; but without, so knowing, as to know that too. He is wise, but his Wisdom is rather politick, than generous; and all his Designs are byas'd with Self-Ends. He is charitable; but his Charity seems too indiscreet; or if such if you did not pro-*

K k k

claim

claim his good Works, he himself would. He is pious and devout indeed, poor Man, after his Way, and according to his Knowledge. Thus by these blind Hints, they endeavour either to find, or to make a Flaw in another Man's Repute; well knowing that a crack'd Name, like a crack'd Bell, will not sound half so clear and loud in the Ears of the World, as else it might.

Thus you see what Slanders and Detractions are. Now,

First, A Man may be a Self-Slanderer, and a Self-Detracter; and such are those who traduce and defame themselves, and either assume to themselves those Wickednesses they have not committed, or blameably conceal those Gifts and Excellencies they are endowed with, when they are called to discover them for the Glory of God, and the publick Good. Some slander themselves out of hope of Reward; when they suppose the Crimes they boast of, may be accepted as Services, by others. Thus, when *Saul* had slain himself, an *Amalekite* falsely reports to *David* that he had slain him, hoping to obtain a Reward from him for dispatching his Enemy. Sometimes Men impiously boast of those Sins which they never did, they never durst commit, merely out of a braving Humour of Vain-glory, and that among their debauch'd Companions they might gain the reputation of vallant and daring Sinners. Others falsely accuse themselves of those Sins of which they were never guilty, out of a despairing and dejected Spirit. Thus many a poor Soul that hath laboured under severe Convictions, begins first to doubt, and then to conclude that he hath certainly committed the unpardonable Sin against the Holy Ghost; & in extreme anguish & horror cries *Guilty*, & confesseth the Indictment that is falsely drawn up against him by the Calamny of the Devil, and his own black Fears and Melancholy. Sometimes Men detract from themselves out of a lying and dissembled Humility;

Ἡ ὑπερ-  
βολὴ τοῦ  
κακοῦ ἐκεί-  
νῃς ἀλλὰ  
ὁρίσας  
Ἀριστ. ἠθ.  
4. 4. c. 7.

mility ; making this kind of Detraction only a Bait for Commendation ; as knowing the Ball will rebound back the farther to them, the harder they strike it from them. This is usually an Artifice of proud and arrogant Persons ; and those who cannot endure to be contradicted in any thing else, would be very loth you should yield to them in this. And lastly, Others detract from themselves out of a too bashful Modesty, or to avoid some troublesome and unpleasing Employments which they are ailed unto. Thus we find *Moses*, *Exod. 4. 10.* making many Excuses, that he was not eloquent, *but of slow Tongue, and a slow Speech* ; and all because he was loth to undertake that difficult and dangerous Charge of bringing out the Children of *Israel* from the Bondage of *Egypt*. All these Kinds of Self-Slander and Detraction are evil, and some of them most vile and abominable.

*Secondly*, There is a slandering of, and detracting from another, wronging him unjustly in his Fame and Reputation ; which we ought tenderly to preserve and cherish. God and Nature have intrusted us mutually with each other's good Name. Thy Brother's Credit is put as a precious *Depositum* into thy hands ; and if thou wickedly layishest it out, by spreading false Rumours of him, or carelessly keepest it, by suffering other to do so, when it is in thy power to justify him, know assuredly that it will be strictly required of thee: For in this respect every Man is his Brother's Keeper.

Now this Slandering of others, may be either in Judicial Process, or else in common and ordinary Converse.

*First*, In Judicial Process ; and then it is truly and properly *False witnessing* : When thou risest up against thy Brother in Judgment, and attestest that which thou knowest to be false and forged, or which thou art not most infallibly assured to be true : And this Sin is the more heinous



and dreadful, upon the account of two aggravating Circumstances that attend it.

*First*, Since usually all Actions in Law and Judgment, concern either the Person, or the Estate of thy Brother, by a False Witness thou not only wrongest him in his Name and Reputation, but in one of these, and so art not only a Slanderer, but a Thief or Murderer. *Prov. 11. 9. An Hypocrite with his mouth destroyeth his Neighbour.* And by so much the more odious is thy Crime, in that thou pervertest the Law, which was intended to be a Fence and Safeguard to every Man's Property, and turnest it against it self, making it the Instrument of thy Injustice and Cruelty. The Psalmist, *Psal. 52. 2.* compares *Doeg's* malicious Tongue to a *sharp Razor*; and certainly when thou givest a false Testimony against thy Brother, thy Tongue is a sharp Razor, and it not only wounds his Credit, but cuts his Throat.

*Secondly*, Since usually all Judicial Proceedings exact from the Witnesses a tremendous Oath solemnly taken by the Name of the great God of Heaven; to give in a false Testimony, is not only to be guilty of Slander, but of Perjury too. Yea and let me add one thing more to make it a most accumulate Wickedness; such a false Testimony is not only Slander and Perjury; but it is Blasphemy too: For what else is it but to bring the most holy God, who is eternal Truth, to confirm a Falshood, and a Lie? What can be an higher Affront to his most Sacred Majesty than this? For a sworn Witness is therefore accepted, because he brings God in to be Witness too. And wilt not thou tremble, O Wretch, to cite God to appear a Witness to that, which a Thousand Witnesses within thee; (I mean thy own Conscience,) do all depose to be false and forged; and so to transfer thy Injustice, and Rapine, and bloody Murder upon him, and shelter them all under the shadow of his Veracity and Faithfulness?

You

You see then how horrid an Impiety this is. And yet how common, not only those who by this wicked Means suffer wrong, but others, who are conversant in such judiciary Trials, do too truly report. May it please God to put it into the hearts of our Rulers to enact more severe and rigorous Laws against those who are found guilty of it. It is sad to think, that whereas a Thief shall be adjudged to Death for stealing some petty inconsiderable Matter, and perhaps too for the relief of his pressing Necessities; yet two Villains that have conspired together, by false Accusations, and perjured Testimonies, to take away a Man's whole Estate, or possibly his Life, should for these far greater Crimes, be sentenced to so easie a Punishment, that only Shame and Reproach make up the severest part of it. Certainly, methinks, it were but just that the least they should suffer, should be a retaliation of their intended Mischiefs; and that the same they design'd against their Brother, should be inflicted upon themselves, whether it be loss of Life, or loss of Goods and Estate. It is but all Equity that the Complotters and Artificers of Mischief, should perish by their own Craft. And if this Rigour and wholesome Severity were but once used, we should not have so many Oaths set out to hire, nor would any make it a Trade to be a Witness; but Innocency would be secured under the Protection of the Laws, and the Laws themselves be innocent of the Ruine of many Hundreds, who by this Means fall into the Snares of ungodly Men. Of this one thing I am sure, That God himself thought it a most equitable Law, when he thus provided for the Safety of his People Israel. *Deut. 19. 18, 19, 20. If the Witness be a false Witness, and testifie falsely against his Brother, then shall you do unto him as he had thought to do unto his Brother: So shalt thou put away the Evil from among you; and those who remain shall hear, and fear, and shall henceforth commit no more any such evil among you.*

*Secondly,*

## An Exposition upon

*Secondly*, There is a slandering of others in our common and ordinary Converse. And this is done two Ways; Either,

*First*, Openly and avowedly, in their Presence, and to their Faces. And that is also two-fold.

Either by reviling and railing Speeches. And thus *Shimei* bark'd at *David*, 2 Sam. 16, 7. *Come out, thou bloody Man, and thou Man of Belial.* And I wish that our Streets and Houses did not, to their great Disgrace and Reproach, eccho with such Clamours; and that too many did not rake together all the dirty Expressions their Wit and Malice will serve them to invent, only to throw into one anothers Faces. A Sin, which as it is sordid and base in it self, so it chiefly reigns among those who are of a mean Condition. But wheresoever it be found, it is a Disparagement to Humane Nature, a Sin against Civil Society, and argues Men guilty of much Folly and Brutishness; and I am sure, is a Transgression of that express Command of the Apostle, Eph. 4. 31, 32. *Let all Bitterness, and Wrath, and Anger, and Clamour, and Evil-speaking, be put away from you, with all Malice; and be ye kind one to another, tender hearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you.*

But then there is another way of open, avowed Slander, and that is by bitter Taunts, and sarcastical Scoffs. And this is usually an applauded Sin among the more refined sort of Men, who take a Pride and Glory in exposing others, and making them ridiculous; thinking their own Wit never looks so beautiful, as when it is died in others Blushes. But this is a most scurrilous, and offensive way, wherein certainly he hath the most Advantage, not who hath most Wit, but that hath least Modesty. These kind of Tauntings, are sometimes such as the Apostle calls cruel Mockings; and reckons them up as one part of those Persecutions the

Primitive

Primitive Christians indured, *Act. 12. 36.* Others had Trial of cruel Mockings.

As Nero, for his barbarous Sport, wrapp'd up the Christians in Beasts Skins ; and then set Dogs to worry them : So these disguise their Brethren into false and antick Shapes ; and then fall upon them, and bait them.

Secondly, There is a more secret and sly conveyance of Slander ; and that is, by back-biting, whispering, and carrying up and down of Tales, like those Luse Tongues, *Jer. 20. 10.* that would fain find, or make themselves some Employment ; saying, *Report, and we will report :* And so a false and slanderous Rumour shall, like the River Nilus, spread over the whole Land, and yet the Head of it be never known ; it shall pass on to the indelible Blot and Infamy of thy Neighbour, and the first Author of it lie hid, and concealed in the Croud, as some Fishes will in the Mud, which they themselves have stirred. Against this sort of Men, *Solomon*, in his Book of *Proverbs*, is very severe ; and there is no one Wickedness, which that excellent Compendium of Wisdom and Morality, doth more inveigh against, than this of whispering about another Man's Disgrace, *Prov. 16. 8.* *The Words of a Tale-bearer are as Wounds, they go down into the inmost Parts of the Belly,* And this he repeats again, *Chap. 26. 22.* intimating to us, that the Wound such a Tongue makes, is deep, but yet hid and secret, and therefore the more incurable. And *Prov. 16. 28.* *A Whisperer separates chief Friends.* He is as it were the Devil's Truchman ; and Interpreter between them both ; and goes to one, and buzzeth in his Ear what such an one said of him, although perhaps it be altogether false ; and when he hath by this means got some angry and choleric Speeches from him, goes and reports them back to the other ; and so by his wicked Breath blows up the Coals of Strife and Dissention between them. And therefore the Wise Man tells us, *Prov.*

## An Exposition upon

26. 20. *Where no Wood is, the Fire goeth out ; so where there is no Tale-bearer, the Strife ceaseth.* The Apostle cautions the Corinthians againsts this Sin, 2 Corinth. 12. 20. *I fear, lest when I come, I shall not find you such as I would, lest there be among you Debates, Envyings, Strifes, Back-bitings, Whisperings, Tumults ;* and he reckons it up among the black Catalogue of those Crimes, for the which God gave up the Heathen to a reprobate Mind, to do things which are not convenient ; *being filled with all Unrighteousness, full of Envy, Murder, Debate, Deceit, Malignity, Whisperers, Back-biters, Despightful, Inventers of Evil Things,* Rom. 1. 29. 30. Now one of the chief Artifices of this sort of Men, is to calumniate strenuously, according to that old Maxim of the Devil ; *Calumniare fortiter, & aliquid adhaerebit,* Slander stoutly, and somewhat will stick behind : For though the Wound may possibly be healed, yet the Scar will still remain, and be a Blemish to a Man's Reputation as long as he lives.

But then again there is another kind of Slander and Detraction ; and that is, when a Man divulgeth those Imperfections and Faults, which are truly in his Neighbour, without being called, or necessitated to do it : For sometimes Truth it self may be a Slander, when it is spoken with an evil Design to the Hurt and Prejudice of another. Indeed if thou be duly called to witness in Judgment ; or if it be in thy own Defence and Vindication ; when if thou dost not discover him that is guilty, thou thy self mayest be supposed to be the Person ; or if the Crime be such, as ought not to escape unpunished ; or if he remain contumacious after more private Admonition ; in which Case, our Saviour commands us to tell the Church ; or, lastly, when it is for the Safety and Security of another, who might else be wronged, should we conceal from him the Mischiefs, which others intend him : In these Cases, it is both lawful and expedient to make known the Faults of thy Brother. But then be sure that thou do

do it, not with any secret Delight and Exultation, that thou hast his Credit to trample upon, to raise thine own the higher ; but with that true Grief and Sorrow of Heart, that may evince to all the World, that nothing but Conscience, and a Sense of thy Duty, enforced thee to publish his Shame, which thou shouldest be willing to hide at the price of any thing, but Sin, and thine own Shame. But alas, it is strange to consider the Depravity of our Nature, how we delight in other Men's Sins, and are secretly glad when their Miscarriages give us an occasion to reproach and disgrace them. How many are big with such Stuff, and go in pain till they have disburdened themselves into the Ears of others ! And some are such ill Dissemblers of their Joy, that they do it with open Scorn and Irrision. Others are more artificially malicious, and with a deep Sigh, and a down-cast Look, and a whining Voice, and an affected Slowness, whisper to one ; Alas, Did you not hear of such a gross Miscarriage by such an one ? And then whisper the same thing to another, and a third ; and when they have made it as publick as they can, hypocritically desire every one to keep it secret ; for that they would be loath their Neighbour should come to any Disgrace and Trouble about it. Believe it, Sirs, this, though the Matter you report be never so true, is nothing else but Slander ; because it is done to no good end, but only to feed your own Malice ; and, like Flies, to lie sucking the gall'd Backs and Sores of others. And therefore we find that *Doeg*, though he told nothing but the Truth, *1 Sam. 22. 9, 10.* Yet he is by *David* challenged as a Liar and Slanderer, *Psal. 52.*

And thus now you have seen what this Sin of Slander is.

I shall finish this Subject, with giving you,

## An Exposition upon

*First*, Some brief Rules and Directions, which through the Grace of God, may be serviceable to keep you from this common Sin. And then,

*Secondly*, Shew you how you ought to demean yourselves under the Lash of other Men's Slanderous Tongues.

*First*, If thou wouldst keep thy self from being a Slanderer of others, addict not thy self violently to any one Party, or Persuasion of Men. For part-taking will beget Prejudice, and Prejudice is the Jaundies of the Soul, which represents other Men, and their Actions, in the Colour which our own Disease puts upon them. And indeed, we have all generally such a good Conceit of our selves, that it is a very hard and difficult Matter, to have a good esteem for others, who are not of our Judgment, and of our Way. And this makes us first very willing to hear some Evil of them: For because we think that what we do is good, we cannot cordially think them good, who do not judge and act as we our selves do; and so our Minds are prepared to entertain Reports against them from others, and then to spread them abroad our selves. And I cannot but impute to this the great Uncharitableness of our Days, wherein Love and Brotherly Kindness lye murdered under the Violence of different Persuasions, and different Modes, and divers Ways of worshipping one and the same God, and our Lord Jesus Christ. Hence all those lying Rumors, and lying Wonders, that one Party invents to beat down the other. One Party reports the other to be all profane, and superstitious; and the other reports its Opposite to be all hypocritical and seditious, and both suffer from each others invenomed Tongues; and between both, Truth suffers, and Charity perisheth, and is utterly lost. For Shame, O Christians! Is this the way to promote God's Cause, or Christ's Kingdom? Doth He or It stand in need of your Lies? Will you speak wickedly for God, and talk deceitfully for him? Shall his Ho-

OUR.

hour be maintained by the Devils Inventions; I shall not speak partially; but wheresoever the Fault lies, there let this Censure fall; That it is certainly a very strong Presumption of a very weak and bad Cause, when the Refuge and Support of it are Lies

*Secondly*, If thou wouldest not be guilty of Slander, be not busie in other Men's Affairs; keep thine Eyes within doors, and thy Thoughts at home; enquire not what others say, nor what others do; but look to thine own Affairs, and guide them with discretion: Thou hast work enough at home, within thine own Heart, and in thine own House; and if thou art careful to manage that well, thou wilt scarce have either Time or Inclination to receive or divulge bad Reports of others: And therefore the Apostle joyns Idleness, Pragmaticalness, and Tatling together. *1 Tim. 5. 13. They learn to be idle, wandering about from House to House; and not only Idle, but Tatlers also, and busie Bodies, speaking Things which they ought not.* They are idle, and yet busie-Bodies; very idly busie; who, because they care not to employ their Hands, set their Tongues on work, and suffer them to walk through the World, abusing and lashing every one they meet. A true Description of a company of giddy Flies in our times, that are always roving from House to House, and skipping about, now to this Man's Ear, and by and by to that, and buzzing Reports of what Ill they have heard, or observed of others.

*Thirdly*, Take another Rule; If thou wouldest not be guilty of Slander, be frequent in reflecting upon thine own Mis-carriages, or thy Proneness to fall into the same, or greater Faults; when thou hearest or knowest of any foul and scandalous Sin committed by another, look backwards upon thine own Life and Actions. Canst thou find no Blots in thy Copy? Is the whole Course of thy Life fair written



## An Exposition upon

upon thy Conscience? If not, how canst thou with any shame and modesty upbraid thy Brother with his Miscarriages, when thou thy self hast been guilty of the like, or greater? Or why, *O Hypocrite, beholdest thou the Motte that is in thy Brother's Eye, and see'st not the Beam that is in thine own?* Methinks our shame for our own Sins, should be a Covering to our Brother's; and when we our selves are guilty, we should not be so malicious, nor foolish, as to reproach our selves, by reproaching him; otherwise, to eclipse and darken his good Name, is but as when the Moon eclipseth the Sun, her own Darknes and Obscurity is made the more remarkable by it.

Or, if God by his restraining Grace hath kept thee from those Wickednesses into which he hath suffered others to fall; yet then look inward, view and search thine own Heart, ransack over thy corrupted Nature; and there thou shalt find those, yea, and far greater Abominations than those, like Beds of twisted Serpents, knotting and crawling within thee; say with thy self, How can I reproach him who hath but copied forth mine own Nature? How can I expose his Infamy who hath but done what I have much ado to keep my self from doing? Possibly the same Temptation might have prevailed over me too, had God let it loose upon me. I owe my Preservation, not to any difference that was between us, but only to the free and arbitrary Grace of God: By this it is that I stand; and shall I reproach him for falling, who should also my self have fallen, were I not strongly upheld by another? Thus, I say, by reflecting on our selves, we shall be withheld from being injurious in our Censures, and in our Reports of others; we shall hardly divulge their real Miscarriages, much less accuse and slander them with false and forged ones. This is the Apostle's Rule. *Gal. 6. 1. Brethren, if a Man be overtaken in a Fault, you which are spiritual, restore such an one in the Spirit of Meekness, considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted.*

Fourthly,

*Fourthly*, If you would not be guilty of Slander, listen not unto those who are Slanderers and Detracters. Lend not your Ears to those who go about with Tales and Whispers whose idle Business it is to tell News of this Man and t'other : For if these kinds of Flies can but blow in your Ears, the Worms will certainly creep out at your Mouths: For all Discourse is kept up by exchange ; and if he bring thee one Story, thou wilt think it Incivility not to repay him with another for it ; And so they chat over the whole Neighbourhood ; accuse this man, and condemn another, and suspect a Third, and speak evil of all. I wish that the most of our Converse were not taken up this way, in recounting Stories of what pass'd between such and such, when all is to no other end, but to bring an evil report upon them. Now if any such Back-biters haunt thee, who make it their Trade to run up and down with Tales and News, give them no countenance; listen not to their Detractions; but rather sharply rebuke them, and silence their slanderous Tongues; and this will either drive the Slander from them, or the Slanderer from thee. *Prov. 25. 23. The North-Wind driveth away Rain ; so doth an angry Countenance a backbiting Tongue.*

*Fifthly*, If you would not be Slanderers of others, be not Self-Lovers, for Self-Love always causeth Envy ; and Envy Detraction. An envious Man cannot endure another's Praise ; and therefore seeketh all he can to blast it by false Reports, and lying Slanders ; as if all that were detracted from another, were added to his own Reputation. When his Neighbour's Fame begins to grow tall, and to spread about him, he then seeks what he can, to cut it down ; because he thinks it hinders his Prospect, and the World cannot take so fair a view of him as he desires ; and therefore he is still hewing at it, sometimes with oblique, and sometimes with direct Blows ; sometimes striking at his Parts, and sometimes at his Piety ; and if he can but make these fall in the esteem of the World, then he thinks none shall be so much

## An Exposition upon

much respected and honoured as himself. A Man that is a Self-Lover, thinks all due unto himself; all Praise and Commendation must run in his Chanel, or else it takes a wrong course, and he accounts just so much taken from him, as is ascribed to another: And this puts him upon this Base Art of Detraction, that by depressing others, he may advance himself, and raise the Structure of his own Fame upon the Ruines of his Neighbour's. And therefore if thou wouldest not slander others, be sure do not too much admire thy self. For Self-Appause, and Self-Esteem is like a Pike in a Pond, that will eat up and devour all about it, that it self may thrive and grow upon them.

*Sixthly*, Be not too easie and facile to entertain suspicious and evil Surmises against others. For if thou begin to suspect evil of another, the next thing is to conclude it, and the next to report it. This Suspicion is a strange Shadow that every Action of another will cast upon our Minds; especially if we be beforehand a little disaffected towards them. Thus very Dreams increased Suspicion against *Joseph* in his Brethren: And if once a Man be out of Esteem with us, let him then do what he will, be it never so vertuous and commendable, Suspicion will still be the Interpreter. And where Suspicion is the Interpreter of Men's Actions, Slander and Detraction will be the Gloss and Comment upon them. Indeed Suspicion is always too hasty in concluding, and many times our Jealousies and Distrusts upon very small occasions, prompt us to conclude that what we have thus surmised, is certainly come to pass; and so we take Shadows for Enemies, and report that confidently for Truth, which yet we never saw acted, but only in our own Fancies.

Now, notwithstanding that this Sin of Slander and Detraction is so great and heinous; yet may it not be justly feared, that many place their whole Religion in it, and think themselves so much the better, by how much the worse they think

think and report of other Men? Do they not think it a piece of Zeal and Warmth for the Worship and Service of God, to cry down all as Superstitious that do not worship him in their Way? Do they not make it, if not a part, yet a sign of Holiness, to be still finding faults, and crying out against others, to be censorious and clamorous? Such a sort of Men are all lewd and profane; and such a sort are all rebellious, and Hypocrites: And then to justify their Censures, instance, possibly in Two or Three, of whom perhaps they know no more than the bare Names: And what tends all this to, but mutual exasperation? Those that do not believe them, are exasperated against the Reporters; and those who do believe them, are exasperated against the Slandered: And as it tends to Exasperation, so likewise it encourageth and hardneth many in their Sins: For when they hear so much Evil blazed abroad in the World; and few or none escape without having some foul Blot rubb'd upon him, and infamous Crime reported of him, whether truly or falsely, they think that Sin and Wickedness is no such strange Thing, and so embolden themselves to commit that which they hear is so common.

I beseech you therefore, O Christians, for the Peace of the Church, which else will continue sadly rent and divided; for the sake of Christianity, which else will be discredited and reviled; for your Brethren's sake, who else will be discouraged or exasperated, be very cautious what reports you either receive, or make of others. Their good Name is very precious; precious to God, when their blameless Conversation deserves it; and precious to themselves; howsoever, unless there be absolute necessity, and you be constrained to do it for the Glory of God, and the Good of others, divulge not their Imperfections, though they be real, and in no case whatsoever feign or devise false Rumors concerning them. *Take heed lest if ye bite and devour one another, ye be not consumed one of another, and one with another.*

These:

These are the Rules to keep you from being guilty of Slander against others.

But now if any are guilty of raising an ill Report against you, observe these following Rules and Directions, how you ought to demean your selves in this Case.

*First*, If the Reproach they cast upon thee, be true and deserved, though they perhaps have sinned in disclosing it to the World; yet make this Use of it; go thou and disclose it in thy most humble and penitent Confessions unto God; yea, and if thou art called thereunto by due Form of Law, give Glory unto God by confessing it before Men. Men possibly may upbraid thee with it; but by this course God will forgive thee without upbraiding thee.

*Secondly*, If thou art falsely charged with that which never was in thine Heart to do, yet improve this Providence to stir thee up to pray the more fervently that God would for ever keep thee from falling into that Sin with which others slander thee; so shall all their Reproaches be thrown meerly into the Air, and fall at last heavy upon their own heads, whilst thou rejoycest in the Whiteness and Innocency of thine own Soul.

*Thirdly*, If any unjustly slander thee, revenge not thy self upon them by slandering them again: I must confess this is a very hard Lesson; and requires almost an Angelical Perfection to perform it well. We read in the Epistle of St. Jude, That *When Michael and the Devil contended about the Body of Moses*, it is said, that the Holy Angel durst *not bring a railing Accusation against that wicked Spirit*; but only said, *the Lord rebuke thee*. And so, when Men of Devilish Spirits spue out their Slanders, and broach all the malicious

cious Accusations that their Father, the great Accuser, hath ever suggested unto them, return not Slander for Slander; for so the Devil would teach thee to be a Devil; but with all Quietness and Meekness desire of God to rebuke their Lies and Calumnies; and by all wise and prudent Means vindicate thy self; clear up thine Integrity, and make it appear, that though *the Archers have shot at thee, and sorely grieved thee with their Arrows, even bitter Words; yet still thy Bow remaineth in its strength.* What saith the Apostle? *2 Pet. 3. 9. Render not evil for evil, or railing for railing.* And indeed whosoever doth so, seeks only to heal a Wound in his Name, by making a much deeper one in his Conscience.

*Fourthly,* When thou art falsely aspers'd and slandered, refer thy self, and appeal to the all-knowing God; retire into the Peace and Refuge of thine own Conscience, and there shalt thou find enough for their Confutation, and thy Comfort. Know that a good Name is in the power of every slanderous Tongue to blast; but they cannot corrupt thy Conscience to vote with them. Possibly it is only the excellency and eminency of thy Grace that offends them; if so, glory in it; for the Reproaches of wicked Men are the best Testimonials that can be given of an excellent and singular Christian. In a strict and holy Conversation there is that contradiction to the loose, Profane of the World, as at once both convinceth, and vexeth them; reproves, and provokes them. And if thou dost thus reproach them by thy Life, wonder not at it, if they again reproach thee by their lying Slanders. Be not too solicitous how they esteem of thee: It is miserable to live upon the Reports and Opinions of others; let us not much reckon what they say; but what Reports our own Consciences make; and if a Storm of Obloquy and Reproaches, Railings and Slanders do at any time patter upon thee, how sweet is it to retire inwards to the calm Innocency of our own Hearts: There are a thou-

M m m

land

## An Exposition upon

and Witnesses will tell us we have not deserved them. How comfortable is it to remit our Cause unto God, and to leave our Vindication to him, for whose Cause we suffer Reproach ? Thus *Jeremiah* appeals to God. *Jer. 20. 10, 12. I heard the defaming of many ; report , say they , and we will report it : But, O Lord of Hosts, thou that triest the Righteous, and seekest the Reins and the Heart ; to thee have I opened my Cause :* Thus, if whilst wicked Men are maliciously conspiring how to blot and sully our Names, we can but keep our Consciences clear ; what need we much trouble our selves how the Wind blows abroad, since we are harboured under the Retreat of a peaceable Heart ? They may possibly persuade others to believe their Calumnies ; but God who searcheth the Heart and Conscience, knows that we are injured ; and he is hastening on a Day wherein he will clear up our Righteousness ; and then the Testimony of a good Conscience shall put Ten Thousand Slanderers to silence.

And thus I have spoken of this second Sin, of Slander and Detraction.

The Third Sin against this Commandment, is base Flattery and Soothing ; which is a quite opposite Extreme to the other, as both are opposite to Truth.

Now this is either Self-Flattery, or the Flattering of others.

*First*, There is a Self-Flattery. And indeed every Man is ( as *Plutarch* well observed it, ) his own greatest Flatterer ; and however empty and defective we may be, yet we are all apt to love our selves, perhaps without a Rival, and to be puffed up with a vain Conceit of our own imaginary Perfections, to applaud and commend our selves in our own Thoughts and Fancies, and to think that we excel all others in what we have ; and what we have not, we

we despise as nothing worth. From this abundance of a vain Heart, break out arrogant Boastings of our selves, contemning of others, a presumptuous intruding our selves into those Employments and Functions which we are no way able to manage. Learn therefore, O Christian, to take the just measure of thy self. Let it not be too scanty; for that will make thee pusillanimous and cowardly; and through an Extreme of Modesty, render thee unserviceable to God and the World. But rather let it be too scanty, than too large: For this will make thee proud, and arrogant, and undertaking; and by exercising thy self in things too high for thee, thou wilt but spoil whatsoever thou rashly and overweeningly ventur'st upon. If thou art at any time called, or necessitated to speak of thy self, let it rather be less than the Truth, than more: For the Tongue is of it self very apt to be lavish, when it hath so sweet and pleasing a Theme, as a Man's own Praise. Take the Advice of Solomon. Prov. 27.2. *Let another Man praise thee, and not thine own Mouth; a Stranger, and not thine own Lips.*

*Secondly*, There is a sinful Flattering of others; and that, either by an immoderate extolling of their Vertues; or what is worse, by a wicked commendation even of their very Vices. This is a Sin most odious unto God, who hath threatned to cut off all flattering Lips, Psal. 12. 2. But especially it is most detestable in Ministers, whose very Office and Function it is to reprove Men for their Sins: If they shall *daub with untempered Mortar, and sew Pillows under Men's Elbows, crying, Peace, Peace, when there is no Peace to the wicked*, only that they may lull them asleep in their Security, they do but betray their Souls; and the Bloud of them God will certainly require at their hands.

Thus much for the Ninth Commandment.



## THE TENTH COMMANDMENT.

**Thou shalt not covet thy Neighbour's House; Thou shalt not covet thy Neighbour's Wife; nor his Man-Servant, nor his Maid-Servant, nor his Ox, nor his Ass, nor any thing that is thy Neighbour's.**

**T**HUS are we at last (through the Divine Assistance,) arrived to the Tenth and last Precept of the Moral Law. Indeed the *Papists* and the *Lutherans* divide it into Two; making these Words, *Thou shalt not covet thy Neighbour's Wife*, to be one entire Command; and then putting together the other Branches of it, *Thou shalt not covet thy Neighbour's House; nor his Servant, &c.* to piece up the last. But then withal, to keep the Number of them from swelling beyond a *Decalogue*, or *Ten Words*, the *Lutherans* joyn the First and Second together into one; and the *Papists*, in propounding the Commandments to the People, wholly leave it out; fearing they may be corrupted by hearing it, because it speaks too boldly against their Idolatry and Image-Worship. But how infinitely temerarious is it for vile Wretches either to invert, or defalcate, and as it were, to decimate the Laws of the great God, by the which, they, and all their

Actions

Actions must be judged at the last Day? And certainly, were it not that they might the better conceal from the ignorant common People, the Dangerous and Heretical Words of the Second Commandment, they could have lain under no Temptation at all, to do a thing altogether so unreasonable, as the dividing of this Tenth Commandment into Two: For upon the same ground might they as well have divided it into seven, since there are many more Concupiscences mentioned in it, than that of our *Neighbour's Wife*, and of *his House*. And if each of these must constitute a distinct Precept, why not also, *Thou shalt not covet his Man-Servant: Thou shalt not covet his Ox, &c*? Besides, the Order of the Words makes clearly against them: For, whereas they make, *Thou shalt not covet thy Neighbour's Wife*, to be the Ninth; in the Text, those Words, *Thou shalt not covet thy Neighbour's House*, go before them: So that either they must needs confess it to belong to the Tenth, or else must grant a most unintelligible *Hyperbation* both of Sense and Words; such as would bring in utter Confusion and Disorder amongst those Laws which God certainly prescribed us in a most admirable Method and Disposition.

But to speak no more of this: The Sin here prohibited, is Concupiscence, or an unlawful lusting after what is another Man's. For since God had in the other Commandment forbidden the Acts of Sin against our Neighbour, He well knew that the best Means to keep them from committing Sin in Act, would be to keep them from desiring it in Heart; and therefore he, who is a Spirit imposeth a Law upon our Spirits, and forbids us to covet what before he had forbidden us to perpetrate. It is true that other Precepts are spiritual likewise, and their Authority reacheth to the Mind, and the most secret Thoughts and Imaginations of the Heart. For our Saviour, *Matth. 5.* accuseth him of Adultery, that doth but lust after a Woman; and him of Murder, that is but

but angry with his Brother without a Cause. And it is a most certain Rule, That whatsoever Precept prohibits the outward Act of any Sin, prohibits likewise the inward Propension and Desires of the Soul towards it. But because these are not plainly, and literally express'd in the former Commands, therefore the infinite Wisdom of God thought it fit to add this last Command, wherein he doth expressly arraign, and condemn the very first Motions of our Hearts towards any sinful Object. And whereas before he had commanded us, not to Kill, not to Steal, not to Commit Adultery, not to Slander, and bear False Witness; now, in the last Place, for the greater Security that these his Laws should not be violated, he commands us, not so much as to harbour in our Hearts any Desire towards these. So that this Tenth Commandment may well be called *Vinculum Legis*; and it is especially the Bond that strengthens and confirms the Second Table. For because all our outward Actions take their first Rise from our inward Motions and Concupiscence, there is no such Way to provide for our Innocency, as to lay a check and restraint upon these.

Now Concupiscence is sometimes taken in Scripture in a good Sense; but more often in an Evil. There is an honest and lawful Concupiscence, when we desire those things which are lawful, to which we have Right, and of which we have need: There is likewise an holy, and pious, and a wicked, and sinful Concupiscence. We have both together, *Gal. 5. 17. The Flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the Flesh*. It is only concerning this sinful Concupiscence, that we are at present to speak.

Now this evil Concupiscence is the First-born of Original Sin, the first Effay, and Expression of that Corruption which hath seized on us, and on all the wretched Posterity of *Adam*. For in Original Sin, (besides the Guilt which results from the Imputation of the primitive Transgression to us, and makes us liable to eternal Death,) there is like-  
wise

wise an universal Depravation of our Natures, consisting in Two Things.

*First*, In a loss of those spiritual Perfections, wherewith Man was endowed in his Creation. And this is the defacing of the Image of God, which was stamp'd upon our Nature in Knowledge, Righteousness, and true Holiness: And as a Consequent upon this,

*Secondly*, In a violent Propension and Inclination to whatsoever is really evil, and contrary to the holy Will and Commands of God. And this is the Image of the Devil, into which Man by his voluntary Apostasy, and Defection, hath transformed himself. Now this inordinate Inclination of the Soul to what is evil and sinful, is properly this Concupiscence forbidden in this Commandment. For the Soul of Man being an active and busy Creature, must still be putting forth it self in Actions suitable to its Nature. But before the Fall, Man enjoyed supernatural Grace, though in a natural Way, which enabled him to point every the least Motion of his Soul towards God, and to fix him as the Object, and End of all his Actions: But forfeiting this Grace by the Fall, and being left in the Hands of meer Nature, all his Actions now, instead of aspiring unto God, pitch only upon the Creature. And this becomes Sin unto us, not merely because we affect, and desire created Good, (for that is lawful,) but because we affect, and desire it in an inordinate manner; that is, without affecting, and desiring God. And thus, the Soul not being able, without Grace and the Image of God, to raise its Operations unto God, pitcheth upon what it can, viz. low, sinful Objects, to the neglect and slighting of God, and the great Concernments of Heaven: And this is in the general that inordinate Disposition of the Soul, which is here called Coveting, or Concupiscence.

Next

Now there are four Degrees of this sinful Concupiscence.

*First*, There is the *Motus primò primi*, the first Film and Shadow of an evil Thought, the Imperfect *Embryo* of a Sin before it is well shaped in us, or hath received any Lineaments and Features. And these the Scripture calls the Imaginations of the Thoughts of Men's Hearts, *Gen. 6. 5. God saw that every Imagination of the Thoughts of Man's Heart was only evil continually*: That is, the very first figment and flushing of our Thoughts, is evil and corrupt: Indeed some of these are injected by the Devil. Many times he assaults the dearest of God's Children with horrid and black Temptations, and importunately casts into their Minds strange Thoughts of questioning the very Being of God, the Truth of the Scriptures, the Immortality of the Soul, Future Reward and Punishments, and such other blasphemous, hideous, and unshapen Monsters, against the very Fundamentals of Religion, for the Truth of which they would willingly sacrifice their very Lives, as a Testimony to them. These indeed are not their Sins, although they are their great Troubles and Afflictions; for they come only from a Principle without them, and they are meerly Passive and Sufferers by them, so long as they are watchful to abhor and resist them, and to cast these fiery Darts of the Devil back again into his Face. But then there are other first Motions arising up in our Hearts towards those Sins, which are more delightful and pleasant to our sensual Inclinations: These, (whatsoever the Papists say to the contrary,) as soon as ever they do but begin to heave and stir in our Breasts, are truly Sins, and do, in their measure, pollute and defile the Soul. For the Soul of Man is like a clear Mirrour, upon which if you only breath, you sully it, and leave a Dimness upon it; so truly the very first breathings of an evil Thought and Desire up in our souls, do sully their Beauty, and dim their Lustre.

## the Tenth Commandment.

97

lustre, and render the Image of God less conspicuous in them, than it was before.

*Secondly*, A farther Degree of this Concupiscence is, when these evil Motions are entertained in the sensual Mind with some measure of Complacency and Delight: When a single Object offers it self to a carnal Heart, there is a kind of inward pleasing Titillation, that affects it with Delight, and begets a kind of Sympathy between them; that look as in natural Sympathies, a Man is taken and delighted with an Object before he knows the Reason why he is so; so likewise in this sinful Sympathy that is between a carnal Heart and a sensual Object, the Heart is taken and delighted with it, before it hath had time to consider what there is in it that should so move and affect it. At the very first sight and glimpse of a Person, we many times find that we conceive some more particular respect for him, than possibly for a whole Croud of others, though all may be equally unknown unto us: So upon the very first glimpse and apparition of a sinful Thought in our Minds, we find that there is something in it that commands a particular regard from us, that unbosoms and unlocks our very Souls unto it, even before we have the Leisure to examine why.

*Thirdly*, Hereupon follows Assent and Approbation of the Sin in the practical Judgment; which being blinded, and forcibly carried away by the violence of corrupt and carnal Affections, commends the Sin to the executive Faculties. The Understanding is the great Trier of every deliberate Action, so that nothing passeth into Act, which hath not first pass'd Examination and Censure there. Whether this, or that Action is to be done, is the great Question canvassed in this Court; and all the Powers and Faculties of the Soul wait what Definitive Sentence will be here pronounced, and so accordingly proceed. Now here two Things do

N n n

usually

usually appear, and put in their Plea to the Judgment against Sin; God's Law, and God's Advocate, Conscience. The Law condemns, and Conscience cites that Law: But then the Affections step in, and bribe the Judge with Profit, or Pleasure, or Honour, and thereby corrupt the Judgment to give its Vote and Assent unto Sin.

*Fourthly*, When any sinful Motion hath thus gotten an Allowance, and pass from the Judgment; then it betakes it self to the Will for a Decree. The Judgment approves it, and therefore the Will must now resolve to commit it: And then the Sin is fully perfected and formed within; and there wants nothing but Opportunity to bring it forth into Act.

And thus you see what this Concupiscence is, and the Degrees of it; viz. The first Bubblings up of evil Thoughts in our Hearts; our Complacency and Delight in them, (as indeed it is very hard, and much against corrupt Nature, not to love these first-born of our Souls,) the Assent and Allowance of our Judgment, and the Decree and Resolution of our Wills; each of these are forbidden in this Commandment: But if the Sin proceeds any further, it then exceeds the Bounds and Limits of this Commandment, and falls under the Prohibition of some of the former, which forbid the outward Acts of Sin.

Thus much concerning *Evil Concupiscence* in the general: But here is mention likewise made of several particular Objects of it: *Thy Neighbour's House, his Wife, his Servants, his Cattle*; (under which are comprehended all sorts of his Possessions;) and all is included under the last Clause, *Nor any Thing that is thy Neighbour's*: So that to desire to take from him either his Life, or his good Name, or his Vertue, is this condemned Covetousness, as well as a Desire to take from him his Temporal Possessions and Enjoyments.

I shall

I shall close up all with some Practical Use and Improvement.

*First*, Learn here to adore the unlimited and boundless Sovereignty of the great God. His Authority immediately reacheth to the very Soul and Conscience, and lays an Obligation upon our very Thoughts and Desires; which no humane Laws can do. It is but a Folly for Men to intermeddle with, or impose Laws upon that of which they can take no cognizance: And therefore our Thoughts and Desires are free from their Censure any farther than they discover themselves by overt Acts. But though they scape the Commands and Notice of Men, yet they cannot escape God. *He seeth not as Men see, neither judgeth he as Men judge; the Secrets of all Hearts are open and bare before his Eyes.* He looks through our very Souls, and there is not the least hint of a Thought, nor the least Breath of a Desire stirring in us, but it is more distinctly visible unto him, than the most opacous Bodies are unto us. *The Lord knoweth the Thoughts of Men that they are vanity,* Psal. 94, 11. And therefore his Law, like his Knowledge, reacheth unto the most secret Recesses of the Soul, searcheth every Corner of the Heart, judgeth and condemns those callow Lusts which Men never espie; and if these find harbour and shelter there, condemns thee as a Transgressor, and guilty of Eternal Death, how plausible soever thy external Demeanour may be. And therefore,

*Secondly*, Content not thy self with an outward conformity to the Law; but labour to approve thine Heart in Sincerity and Purity unto God; otherwise thou art but a Pharisaical Hypocrite, and waldest only the outside of the Cup, when within thou art still full of unclean Lusts. This was the corrupt Doctrine of the Scribes and Pharisees. That the



Law reached only to the outward Man, and although we entertain'd and cherish'd wicked Desires, and evil Purposes in our Hearts; yet as long as they did not break forth into outward Crimes, they were not to be imputed unto us; nor did God account them as Sins. And this *St. Paul* confesseth of himself, That whilst he was trained up in Pharisaical Principles, he did not understand the inward motions of Lusts to be Sins. But alas! this is but gilding over a dry and rotten Post; which, though it may look beautiful, to Men; yet when God comes to examine it, will not abide the fiery Trial\*. Thou art as truly a Murderer, a Thief, an Adulterer in God's sight, if thou dost but harbour bloody, unclean, unjust Thoughts in thine Heart, as thou wouldst be in Men's, if thou shouldst actually kill, or steal, or wallow in the open and professed Acts of Uncleanness. Indeed most Men do herein grossly delude themselves; and if they can but refrain from the outward commission of gross and scandalous Sins, they very seldom reflect upon their Heart-Lusts, which, like deep Ulcers rancle inwardly, and perhaps grow incurable, when all the while they may be skinn'd over with a fair and inoffensive Life. Although the Heart estuate and boil over with malicious, revengeful, lascivious Thoughts, yet they usually dispencc with these, and their natural Conscience indulgeth them without disturbance. But *deceive not your selves, God is not mocked*, nor can he be imposed upon by external Shews; neither will he judge of thee as others do, or as thou thy self dost: I know it is a very difficult thing to convince Men of the great Evil that there is in sinful Thoughts and Desires; and therefore very difficult to persuade them to labour against them; for because they are of a small and minute being, therefore Men think they carry in them but small Guilt; and little Danger. Every Man that hath but a remnant of Conscience left him, will beware of gross and notorious Crimes, that carry the Mark of Hell and Damnation visibly stamp'd upon their Foreheads,

\* *Scelus  
intra se  
que cogi-  
tat illum  
sua crim-  
ina habet*  
Juv. Sat. 13.  
Et in  
composita,  
is in non  
Sineia xj. 70  
adixit.  
Arist. Rhe.  
c. 14.

Fore-heads: Such as he, that can without Reluctance commit them, must needs own himself for the apparent Offspring of the Devil. But for an invisible Thought, a Notion, a Desire, a Thing next nothing; this certainly I may please my self withal; for this can hurt no one. By a malicious Purpose, I wrong no Man; by a covetous Desire, I extort from no Man; and what so great Evil then can there be in this? It is true indeed, wert thou only to deal with Men, whom immaterial Things touch not, there were no such great Evil in them. But when thou hast likewise to do with an immaterial and spiritual God, before whom thy very Thoughts and Desires appear, as substantial and considerable as thy outward Actions, then know that these, as slight and thin Beings as they are, fall under his Censure here, and will fall under his Revenge hereafter.

Now were this Persuasion effectually wrought into the Minds of Men; were it possible they should indulge themselves as they do, in vain, frothy, unclean, malicious Thoughts and Desires: Were it possible they should so closely brood on these Cockatrice Eggs, which will bring forth nothing but Serpents to sting them to Eternal Death: Were it possible they should delight in rolling, and tossing a Sin to and fro in their Fancy; and by imagining it, make the Devil some Recompence for not daring to commit it. Certainly such Men are altogether unacquainted with the Life and Power of true Grace, when, as those Sins which they dare not act, yet they dare with Pleasure contemplate, and dally within their Fancies, and Imaginations.

Turn therefore your Eyes inwards; bewail, and strive against that natural Concupiscence which lodgeth there: And never content thy self, that thou hast dammed up the Streams of thy Corruptions from overflowing thy Life and Actions, till thou hast in some good measure dried up the Fountain of it.

*Thirdly,*

*Thirdly*, See here the best, and the surest Methods to keep us from the outward Violation of God's Laws; which is to mortifie our corrupt Concupiscence, and Desires. And therefore (as I told you) the Wisdom of God hath set this Commandment in the last Place, as a Fence and Guard to all the rest; Thou shalt not Covet; and then certainly, thou shalt not Kill; nor Seal; nor commit Adultery; nor bear False Witness; but be kept pure from all outward Defilements of the Flesh; when thou art thus cleansed from the inward Defilements of the Spirit: For from these it is, that all the more visible Sins of our Lives and Actions have their supply. And therefore, saith our Saviour, *Matth. 15. 19. Out of the Heart proceed evil Thoughts, Murders, Adulteries, Fornications, Thefts, false Witness, Blasphemy.* Observe that he puts evil Thoughts in the Front, as the Leader of all this Black Regiment. For out of this evil Treasure of the Heart, Men bring forth Evil Things; and all the Fruits of the Flesh, the Grapes of Sodom, and the Clusters of Gomorrah; receive their Sap and Nourishment from this Root of Bitterness. It ought therefore most deservedly to be the great and chief Care of every Christian to lay the Axe to this Root, to purge and heal this Fountain, that sends forth such corrupt, and poisonous Streams, to keep his Heart clean from sinful Thoughts and Affections; and then this Life will be clean by Consequence. And therefore God very pressingly requires this; *Jer. 4. 14. O Jerusalem, wash thy Heart from Wickedness; How long shall vain Thoughts lodge within thee? And let me add, that unless we make this our chief Care; unless we do most solicitously observe this last Commandment, all our Care in observing the former, will be utterly in vain; not only in respect of our Acceptance, and Reward with God, but as to any good Issue and Effect. All other Endeavours will be as successless, as to attempt the Cure of an Ulcerous*

## the Tenth Commandment.

103

Ulcerous Body, without purging it, where the Corruption will quickly break forth again ; or to attempt the emptying of a Pond , that hath many Springs still rising up in the Bottom of it, which will soon grow as full as ever it was.

---

---

# A S E R M O N

On *J O H N VII. XIX.*

*Did not Moses give you the Law : And yet none of you  
keepeth the Law ?*

**I** Have in several Discourses, according to the Measure of Divine Assistance, endeavoured to unfold unto you the vast Contents of the *Law*, and those various Duties that are summarily comprehended in those *Ten Words*, which the infinite Wisdom of God hath given us as an *Epitome* and *Abridgment* of all Morality. I well know, and am assured, that there never was, neither can there be any Treatise so exact and particular, as to drain this whole Subject : For since it comprizeth in it the *Whole Duty of Man*, in every particular Occurrence, and Action of his Life ; since the variety of Circumstances is almost infinite ; and yet these Circumstances specify our Actions, and make them morally, either good or evil. And since every *Precept* extends its Branches, so far, as to injoin every Man's Duties collaterally, which yet it doth not touch directly, and to forbid very many Sins by Consequence, which it doth not immediately prohibit ; Therefore I cannot but judge it next to an Impossibility minutely to reckon up every Sin, and every Duty methodically, to rank and dispose them every one under that particular Command to which they

they do properly appertain. The serious Contemplation of this boundless extent of the *Law*, occasioned the *Psalmist* to say, *Psal.* 119. 96. *That he had seen an end of all Perfection*: He had taken the Dimensions of all other Things, and found them such, as an inquisitive Mind might describe the whole Limits and Compass of them: *But the Commandment is exceeding broad*: Not for the Indulgence it gives; for so it is exceeding narrow. The broad Way is not the Way of God's Commandments; but that which leadeth down unto Destruction: But broad it is, in respect of its Comprehensiveness, as it reacheth to every Thought of our Souls, and every Action of our Lives, and every Circumstance of both. And therefore since the *Law of God* is of such an unmeasurable Latitude; as *Astronomers* take only the more conspicuous, and remarkable *Stars* into their Constellations, but leave innumerable others, with which the Heavens are every where thick studded; to the casual Observation of the Beholders: So I have contented my self to remark unto you those Duties, and Sins which are most eminent; and to reduce them into Order under these several Precepts, where they are either required, or forbidden, leaving innumerable others to your own private Observation.

I hope that what hath been spoken of them, hath not been as Water spilt upon the Ground, or a Sound only scattered and lost in the Air. For these Things are of infinite Concernment to us. The Knowledge and Practice of them is as much worth as Heaven and Eternal Life. And I may say unto you, as *Moses* to the *Israelites*, I have set Life and Death before you: Life, if ye will hearken and obey; but Eternal Death and Destruction, if ye refuse and rebel. Enter not any low and debasing Thoughts of the *Law*. Think not the preaching of it unworthy the Freedom of *Gospel* Times, or of *Gospel* Spirits. I know that a company of flesh Notionists, who are very willing to shake off the Yoke from their Necks; and to deliver themselves rather from

From the Conscience, than from the Power of Sin; have clamoured against this way of pressing Duty, and enforcing the Authority of the Law, as *legus Prebendari*; and have blasphemed it, as contrary to that Liberty which Christ hath purchased for us; and much beneath the spiritual Attainments of those that are made perfect in him. And I fear lest some of that corrupt Leaven may still remain in the Spirits of too many, who delight only to hear of the Riches of Free Grace, the Privileges of Saints, the All-sufficiency, and Willingness of Christ to save them; and can melt themselves away in the very Sweetness and Tenderness of their Souls under such glorious Discoveries. But if Obedience, and good Works be press'd; if we preach to them concerning *Righteousness, Temperance, and Justice*, and those Moral Duties of the Law, which respect our Deportment towards Men, as well as those which respect the Worship and Service of God; this is flat, and insipid to these nice and refined Professors, and they are ready with a scornful Pity to censure it for honest, Moral Doctrine, fit only for young Beginners, who are not as yet come from under a legal Dispensation.

Beware, my Brethren, that you do not thus vilifie and disparage the Holy Law of God. For let me tell you, this is the Rule that he hath given us to guide our Actions; and this is the Law, by which he himself will judge them: There is no other way to obtain Salvation, but only through Obedience to it. This Law is the very Gate of Heaven; and the *Two Tables*, are the two Leaves of it. We shall never enter into it, but only through these, *Rev. 21. 14. Blessed are they that do his Commandments, that they may have Right unto the Tree of Life, and may enter in through the Gates into the City.* Although our Salvation be the Purchase of Christ, and he alone hath redeem'd us from Death, and procured for us Glory and Immortality by his own most precious Blood: Yet here the Scripture affirms, that we obtain a

Right unto the Tree of Life; i. e. to Everlasting Life, by our Obedience, and doing the Commandments of God. A Right, not indeed of Merit; but a Right of Evidence, our Obedience to the Law is the only sound Evidence that we can have for our Right to the Promises of the Gospel; and without an universal Obedience in the whole Course of our Lives, all our Joys, and Comforts, and confident Expectations of Heaven and Happiness, are but splendid Delusions, and enthusiastical Dreams, by which Men of loose Principles and Practices, seek to unite together two Things, which God hath put at an irreconcilable distance; that is to say, an unholy Life here, and an happy Life hereafter. And if to press this great Truth upon the Conscience, and to insist on the necessity of new Obedience, and Repentance from dead Works, as well as Faith in our Lord Jesus Christ, be legal preaching, let mine be ever so accounted. But indeed this is so far from being a legal Doctrine, that it is one of the greatest and most precious Truths that the Gospel exhibits. To preach up Justification by the Law, as a Covenant, is legal, and makes void the Death and Merits of Jesus Christ. But to preach Obedience to the Law as a Rule, is Evangelical; and it favours as much of a New Testament-Spirit (as they phrase it) to urge the Commands of the Law, as to display the Promises of the Gospel.

There are two great Ends for which the Law was at first given; Conviction, and Reformation.

*First*, It was given, and ought still to be preached for the Conviction of Sinners: And it serves to convince them of Three Things.

*First*, Of their Guilt contracted by the Transgression of the Law. For by laying their Actions to the Rule, and comparing the Strictness and Purity of the one, with the Obliquity



guity and Defects of other, they may discern wherein they have offended, and their natural Conscience may have an Advantage to charge their Sin and Guilt upon them. Thus saith the Apostle, Rom. 3. 19, 20. *We know that what things soever the Law saith, it saith to them that are under the Law; that every Mouth might be stopped, and all the World might become guilty before God, for by the Law is the knowledge of Sin.*

Secondly, Of that Wrath and eternal Death, to which they stand exposed by reason of their Sin and Guilt. *The Soul that sinneth, it shall die, Ezek. 18. 20. And, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things that are written in the Book of the Law to do them, Gal. 3. 10. And,*

Thirdly, It serves to convince us of the utter impossibility under which we lie in this our fallen and corrupt Estate, of ever obtaining justification by the Works of the Law. *Rom. 3. 20. By the Works of the Law shall no Man be justified; for by the Law is the knowledge of Sin.* For we cannot be justified by our obedience to it, since the Law demonstrates that our obedience is imperfect. Nor can we be justified by making satisfaction for our disobedience; since the same Law assures us, that the Divine Justice will accept no other satisfaction from us, but our undergoing the Penalty threatned; which is eternal Death: So that to hope for Life by satisfying and recompensing Divine Justice for our Offences, is altogether as vain and foolish, as to hope for Salvation by being damned.

Thus far the convincing work of the Law proceeds, and when it hath brought a Man to despair in himself, by shewing him his Guilt, and that Wrath to which he stands exposed, and the Remedilessness of his sad condition by any thing that he can either do or suffer, it there leaves him, in this horror of

Dark-

## A Sermon on John 7. 19.

Darkness, till the Spirit of God, who hath thus by the Ministry of the Law convinced him of his own Unrighteousness in himself, doth also by the Ministry of the Gospel convince him of a Righteousness out of himself, in the Lord Jesus Christ: For it is the Spirit that convinceth us of Sin, of Righteousness, and of Judgment, John 16. 8.

Secondly, Another great End of the Moral Law, is, Reformation and Obedience: That having our Rule before us, we may endeavour to conform our Actions according unto it; and be deterred by the Majesty and Authority of it, from adding Sin to Sin, and *treasuring up to our selves Wrath against the Day of Wrath*; and that by seeing our Defects, we may endeavour to amend them. Thus the Apostle tells us, Gal. 3. 19. That *the Law was added because of Transgression, i. e.* because of the exceeding proneness of our corrupted Natures to transgress, God hath given us an holy and severe Law to curb in our Lusts, to check our headstrong Desires and sensual Appetites, and to keep us within the Bounds of Duty and Obedience: For these two great Ends was the Law given; Conviction and Reformation.

And upon both these Accounts the Preaching of the Law is of absolute necessity: For,

*First*, Where the Law hath not wrought its convincing Work with power upon the Conscience, there the Preaching of Jesus Christ will be altogether in vain. For until a Sinner be thoroughly convinc'd of his Guilt and Misery, and his Conscience awakened by the Threats and Terrors of the Law, that he stands forfeited to the Justice of God, liable to eternal Wrath, and may every moment be swallow'd up in the Abyss of Woe & Torments, into which Thousands before him have been already plung'd, it will be impossible to persuade him seriously to embrace these Tenders of Mercy which the Gospel

Gospel holds forth unto him by Jesus Christ; he wraps himself in his own carnal Confidence and Security; and sees no need of looking out after any other Righteousness than his own; and although his own Righteousness be but filthy Rags, both imperfect and impure; yet being his own, he thinks them better than borrowed Robes. And therefore, saith our Saviour, *Matth. 9. 12. The whole need not a Physician; but they that are sick; i.e.* Those who think themselves whole and sound, although indeed they be sick unto death; they need not a Physician; *i.e.* they apprehend not their need of him; nor will they be persuaded to seek unto him. And,

*Secondly,* As Christ cannot be accepted where the Law doth not perform its convincing Work; so he will not save, where it doth not perform its reforming Work. Where there is no amendment of Life; there can be no forgiveness of Sins; nor true hopes of Salvation. For Christ is given us, not to save us in our Sins; but from them. *He is the Author of eternal Salvation to all those that obey him, Heb. 5. 9.*

And thus you see of what absolute necessity it is to press the Law upon the Conscience, to denounce its Terrors, to inculcate its Precepts; since the convincing Work of it prepares us for Christ, and its reforming Work for the Salvation purchased by Christ. Without the one we shall never come unto him; and without the other, we shall never come to Heaven by him.

That which I chiefly design for the present, is, to treat of the convincing Work of the Law, and that in each of its Three Branches; *Conviction of Guilt; Conviction of Wickedness; and Conviction of the utter Impossibility we lie under to deliver our selves from it by our own Righteousness.*

I shall

## A Sermon on John 7. 19.

I shall now treat of the First : To which purpose I have chosen this Portion of Scripture, *John 7. 19. Did not Moses give you the Law ? And yet none of you keepeth the Law.* In which Words we have an Expostulation, and an Accusation.

In the Expostulation we may take notice of Three Things.

*First*, That this Law of which our Saviour speaks, was the whole Systeme of Divine Precepts, both concerning Ceremonial Rites, Judicial Processes, and Moral Duties : For the *Jews* from *Moses's* Hands received Instructions for all their Observances, Gifts, Offerings, Washings, and other Typical Parts of Worship; and for all their Suits and Controversies between Man and Man, which was the common and standing Law of their Nation; and lastly, for all Moral and Natural Duties, respecting either God or Man. But this last being the chief part of the Law of *Moses*, is here likewise chiefly meant and intended. *Yet none of you keepeth the Law; i. e.* None of you observeth to do according to the Commands of the Moral Law. For our Saviour frequently bears them witness that they were very punctual observers of the Ceremonial and Judicial Laws; but condemns them for neglecting *the weightier Matters of the Moral Law; Judgment, Mercy, and Faith*, Matth. 23.

*Secondly*, Whereas it is said, That *the Law was given unto them, i. e.* to the *Jews*; it must be understood, That the Ceremonial and Judicial Law was given unto them both immediately and only; but the Moral Law was given to them indeed immediately, but not only. No other People on Earth were necessarily obliged to the observation of the Ceremonial Law, much less of the Judicial, but the *Jews* alone. Yea, and (as I have before observed,) Profelytes of other Nations were admitted to the hopes of Salvation, without binding them to any other Observances, besides the keeping of

of the seven Precepts of Noah; To renounce Idols, to worship the true God, to commit no Murder, nor Uncleanneſs, nor Theft, to execute Juſtice, and to abſtain from Blood. But the Moral Law, although it was given to them immediately, yet not only to them; but its Obligation is as univerſal as humane Nature it ſelf; for indeed it is the very Law of Nature, and right Reason reduced into Precepts; and therefore although *Moses* gave this Law unto them as the Miniſter and Mediator of the old Covenant; yet it is likewise given to us by God, as the Cauſe and Author of our Nature, and the Commands of it are as obligatory unto us, as them; ſo that as our Saviour ſaith to the Jews, *Did not Moses give you the Law?* I may ſay to you, *Did not God give you the Law?* and yet none of you keepeth the Law.

*Thirdly*, Whereas it is ſaid, that *Moses* gave them the Law, we muſt here note,

*First*, That *Moses* gave it only Miniſterially; but God Primarily and Authoritatively: And therefore, *Gal. 3. 19.* It is ſaid, that *the Law was given by the hand of a Mediator*, And *Moses* is commended for being faithful in all God's Houſe, as a Servant, *Heb. 3. 5.* As one who received Commands from the great Lord and Maſter of it, and delivered them to his Fellow-Servants.

*Secondly*, That although the Law were given by *Moses*; yet as to the Moral Part of it, and ſome of the Ceremonial, it was owped in the Church of God long before his Miniſtry. As for ſome Parts of the Ceremonial Law, we read frequently of Sacrifices and Circumciſion in uſe among the Patriarchs, many Ages before *Moses's* Time; and ſo ſaith our Saviour, *John 7. 22.* *Moses gave unto you the Circumciſion; not becauſe it is of Moses, but of the Fathers.* And for the Moral Law, all the Duties of it were incumbent up-

on Mankind from the very first Creation of the World, long before the promulgation of the Law from Mount Sinai. Murther was forbidden, and known to be a Sin, before the Lord proclaimed, *Thou shalt not kill.* Yea, and cannibals Anger, and bloody revengeful Purposes; as appears, Gen. 4. 5. 6. Fornication was then also accounted a Sin worthy of Death; as appeareth, Gen. 38. 24. The outward Worship and Service of God in Solemn and Publick Assemblies, was then known to be a Duty; as appears, Gen. 4. 26. So that the Church of God never was, never shall be without this Law, both written upon their hearts, and likewise preach'd unto them publicly by the Ministry of the Church: For so Noah is said to be a Preacher of Righteousness to the Old World, 2. Pet. 2. 5. Yet,

Thirdly, It is said to be given by Moses, because of the more solemn and conspicuous Delivery of it at Mount Sinai; when God especially magnified him, by calling him up into the Mount, conversing with him Forty Days; writing with his own Finger the Ten Commandments, or two Tables of Stone, and delivering them into his hands to exhibit unto the People. Now because of this solemn Promulgation of the Law by the Means and Ministry of Moses, our Saviour tells the Jews, that it was given them by him. And this is all that I shall consider in the Exposition; *Did not Moses give you the Law?*

That which I principally intend to insist on is the Accusation, *And yet none of you keepeth the Law.* An Accusation that may truly be laid not only against the Jews, but against all the World. Never any of the Sons of Men, from the very first Creation of the World, unto this day, excepting him only who was the Son of God, as well as the Son of Man, and whom it became to fulfil all Righteousness ever did; or can perfectly and exactly fulfil all that the Law of God requires.

And

And to this the Scriptures give abundant Testimony Rom. 3. 23. *All have sinned, and come short of the Glory of God.* Jam. 3. 2. *In many things we offend all.* And the Prophet confesseth the corruption of our Natures, and the imperfection of our best Performances, *Isa. 64. 6, We are all as an unclean thing, and all our Righteousnesses are as filthy Rags.* Solomon challengeth the best and holiest upon this Point. *Prov. 20. 9. Who can say, I have made mine Heart clean, I am pure from my Sin?* Many other Places may be alledged to the same purpose; as, *1 John 1. 8. If we say that we have no Sin, we deceive our selves, and the Truth is not in us.* And, *vers. 10. If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a Liar.* And all these Exhortations which we find in Scripture to confess our Sins, to repent of them, to watch and strive against them, do all clearly beat down the insolent Pride of those who except themselves out of the number of Transgressors and Offenders. And is it not very strange, that after so many express Testimonies of Scripture, than which nothing can be more plain and positive, notwithstanding that every day and hour might administer abundant Conviction to them; yet there should be a generation of Men so impudently vain-glorious, as to boast of an absolute Perfection in this Life? And yet this is the Doctrine of the Papists, That a Man may all his Life-time eschew every Mortal Sin, and do all that the Law of God requires of him. And not only so; but as if God's Laws were not a Rule strict enough for them to walk by, they hold, he may do much more than he is oblig'd unto, and supererrogate, and merit for others who fall short of Perfection; and lay the Arms of his good Works into the common Stocks and Treasury of the Church to be granted out to others that want them. And although they affirm, That a Justified Person is still liable to commit Venial Sins; yet they make these Venial Sins to be of so slight a Nature, that

Conc. Trid.  
Sess. 6. c. 11.

*Bellar. de amicis. Grat. l. 1. c. 3. Nos docemus communis consensu peccata quædam ex natura sua non indignum reddere hominem amicitia Dei, & Mortis æternæ reum.*

they are not repugnant to Grace, interrupt not our Friendship with God; deserve not eternal Punishments, require neither Confession nor Repentance, and are of so harmleß a Nature, that he that dieth in them, may yet notwithstanding be saved. Certainly these be strange kind of Sins, that do not offend God, nor deserve Punishment, nor need Repentance; and if a Man live free from all these, I think he may readily conclude that he may live free from all Sin; for as they described these Venial Sins, they can be none. Yea, some of them grant that by the special Grace of God, a Man may live free from the Taint, not only of Mortal, but of Venial Sins too; and so attain to a spotleß Perfection. And this proud Conceit of Perfection is not only entertained by *Papists*, but by a sort of Frantick People amongst us, who yet exclaim against all others, as *Popish* and *Antichristian*; but perceive not whose Craft hath taught them both that and many other *Popish* Doctrines; as, *Justification by Works*, the *Insufficiency of the Scriptures*, and *Infallibility seated in any humane Breast*: Certainly the *Hand of Joab is in all this*. Concerning these, I shall say no more, but what the Wise Man observed of such a Race of confident Self-Justiciaries in his Days, *Prov. 30. 12. There is a Generation that are pure in their own Eyes, and yet are not washed from their Filthineß*.

But what! Are then the *Laws of God* impossible to be fulfilled? Is it not our Imputation to the Equiry and Wisdom of God, that he should command that which we are not able to perform?

I Answer. *First*, The *Laws of God* are in themselves possible as well as just; and there is nothing which he now requires of us, which he did not endow us with strength in our Creation to perform.

*Secondly*,



*Secondly*, In this our fallen and corrupted Estate our perfect Obedience is become impossible; not because the Law is more strict and rigorous; but because we are grown weaker and more averse.

*Thirdly*, It is no Injustice in God to require what is impossible for us to perform, when that Impossibility riseth from our own default. It is not God, but our selves who have made the observation of his Laws impossible. And although we have wasted our Stock, and are become Bankrupts, yet he may righteously exact from us the Debt of Obedience which we owe him.

*Fourthly*, Although a perfect and consummate Obedience be now impossible; yet an inchoate and sincere Obedience is possible through the Assistance of Divine Grace. And certainly that Law which commands absolute Perfection from us, requires us to endeavour after the highest degree that is attainable. So that these Commands which exceed our present power, and are neither vain, nor unjust. For they engage us to exert our strength to the utmost, whereby we shall certainly attain unto a far greater perfection in our Obedience, than if we were enjoined that which were easie, or meerly possible to perform; and such is the disingenuity of our Temper, that as much as the Law were relaxed of its severity, so much proportionably we also should remit of our Industry: And therefore since our Sloth will take Allowances to it self, it is far more expedient for us that God hath commanded from us things beyond the Sphere of our present Ability, than if he had commanded what was within it. For I much doubt, whether if God did not command us to do more than we can, we should do as much as we do.

But you will say, To require more than is possible for us to perform, may rather seem a discouragement, than an excitement.

citement to our Endeavours. For what Natural Man will attempt that which he knows to be impossible?

To this I answer, *First*, That there is a twofold Impossibility: One that consists in the Nature of the Thing propounded unto us; another, that consists only in an eminent and superlative degree of it. The first sort of Impossibility, which consists in the Nature of the Thing it self, doth utterly forbid all Attempts and Endeavours. Never any wise Man attempted to climb up into the Sun, or to metamorphose himself into an Angel; because the Thing it self in all considerable degrees of it, is impossible. But where the Impossibility consists only in some eminent degree, and yet every degree that is attainable by us, hath Excellency enough in it self to invite and engage our Endeavours, there the Impossibility of the highest degree is no discouragement to a wise and rational Man, from attempting to do his utmost. So it is in this case; many degrees of Holiness and Obedience are attainable by us, and every degree that we can attain unto, is infinitely worth our pains and labour; and therefore though absolute perfection in it be impossible, yet this can be no discouragement from using our utmost Endeavours. The more we strive after it, the more we shall still attain; and what we do attain is an abundant Recompence of our Industry, and carries in it so much Excellency as will quicken and excite us unto farther Improvements. And certainly whilst we endeavour toward unattainable Perfection, we shall attain unto much more, than if we set our Mark shorter; as he that aims at a Star, is likely to shoot much higher than he that aims only at a Turf.

*Secondly*, As we must distinguish of Impossibility, so likewise of Perfection, which is either Legal, or Evangelical.

*First*,

*First*, There is a Legal Perfection, to which Two Things are necessarily required.

- 1<sup>st</sup>. Freedom from Original Sin; That there be no Taint derived down upon our Natures, no Corruption inherent in us, that should incline us unto Evil: For where Original Sin is, there Legal Righteousness and Perfection cannot possibly be; for even this Sin is a violation of the Law.
- 2<sup>dy</sup>. There must be a perfect and exact actual fulfilling of all the Laws of God, without failing in the least Circumstance or least Title of Observation: For Legal Perfection cannot possibly consist with the least Guilt.

*Secondly*, There is an Evangelical Perfection; which is a State, though not of Innocency, yet of such a personal Righteousness and Holiness as shall be accepted and rewarded by God. Now this Evangelical Perfection consists in Three Things:

- 1<sup>st</sup>. In true and sincere Repentance for our past Offences, begging Pardon at God's Hands, and endeavouring to abstain from the Commission of the like for the future.
- 2<sup>dy</sup>. In a true and lively Faith; whereby we rely upon the Merits and Satisfaction of Christ alone for the Remission of our Sins.
- 3<sup>ly</sup>. In a true and sincere Obedience, endeavouring to live more holily, and to walk more strictly and perfectly before God, according to the Rules he hath prescribed us in his holy Laws. And this consists both in the Mortification of the corrupt and sinful Desires of the Flesh; and in the daily quickning and renewing of the Spirit, whereby we grow in Grace, and make farther progress in Christianity; when we

## A Sermon on John 7. 19.

do all this in the Truth and Sincerity of our Souls, we are said to be perfect with an Evangelical, or Gospel-perfection; and this indeed is all the inherent Perfection and Righteousness that is attainable by us in this Life. Thus it is that the Saints are in Scripture termed Righteous. So *Noah* is called *righteous*; Gen. 7. 1. And *Abraham* pleads with God for the *righteous* in *Sodom*, Gen. 18. 23, 24. And *Zachary* and *Elizabeth* have this Testimony, That *they were both righteous, walking in all the Commandments of God blameless*, Luke 1. 6. Thus we have the Ways of Holiness called *Ways of Righteousness*, Psal. 23. 2. And the Works of Holiness, *Works of Righteousness*, [Psal. 133. 2. Isa. 64. 2, &c.] This Evangelical Perfection is attainable in this Life, and indeed is attained by every sincere and upright Christian.

But for a Legal Perfection, it neither is, nor can be attained in this Life. And that upon Two Accounts.

*First*, Because of the infinite Exactness and Holiness of the Law, it is not attained.

*Secondly*, Because of the Corruption of our Natures, it cannot be attained.

*First*, The Law of God is infinitely Spiritual, and obligeth us not only to the performance of the external Duties of Obedience; but requires also the absolute perfection of the inward Dispositions; not only that our Love of God be sincere and cordial; but that it must be intense and perfect to the highest degree. Thus, *Deut. 6. 5. Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy Heart, and with all thy Soul, and with all thy Might.* The Law and Covenant of Works exact a Perfection of degrees in our Love and Obedience, as well as of Parts: it must not only be sincere, but complete; it not only tries our Obedience, by the touch-stone, but weighs it in the Balance, and gives us no Grains of Allowance.

lowance. Now, is there any Man upon Earth that so loves God, or obeys him, that it is not possible he should love him more, or obey him better? Do not some Christians exceed others in their Grace and Holiness? And might not all exceed themselves if they would? The Law gives no allowance for any Failings. And therefore if thou canst love God more, and serve him better than thou dost, thou art not a Fulfiller of the Law, but a Transgressor of it. Hence St. Austin in his Confessions, hath a pious Meditation, *Woe to our commendable Life, if thou Lord setting thy Mercy aside, shouldst examine it according to the strict Rules of Justice and the Law.*

Secondly, Because of the Corruption of our Natures, this legal Perfection cannot be attained in this Life: For we are totally depraved in every Power and Faculty of our Souls; and every Imagination of the Thoughts of our Hearts is only evil continually. Our Understandings are darkened with the thick Mists of Ignorance and Error: Our Wills are perverted, and stand at a professed contradiction to the Holy Will of God: Our Affections are become impure and sensual; our Hearts hard and insensible; our Consciences seared and stupid; and our carnal Minds are Enmity against God: *For they neither are subject to the Law of God, nor can indeed be.* As the Apostle speaks, *Rom. 8. 7.* Now where there is this Corruption of Nature, how can there possibly be Perfection of Life? For who can bring a clean thing out of an unclean? Not one. And although this Corruption be healed by regenerating Grace, yet is it healed but in part. In the very best, the Flesh will lusteth against the Spirit, and the Law of the Members warreth against the Law of the Mind, so that they cannot do the things which they would, as the Apostle sadly complains, *Rom. 7.* Yet let me add this too That if Corruption were perfectly rooted out of the Heart of any, and such an extraordinary measure of sanctifying Grace conferred upon them,

as might inable them to perform whatsoever the Law of God required, and that to the last degree of intense Love and Zeal; yet would not this their perfect Obedience amount unto a legal Righteousness. The Reason is; because the Law of Works being given to Man in his pure and upright Estate, when he had a connatural Power of his own to obey it, requires Obedience to be performed only by his own Strength, and allows not the Auxiliaries of Divine and Supernatural Grace to inable him. If therefore we should grant, (which yet we deny,) that through some extraordinary Assistance vouchsafed to some particular Man, he should perfectly fulfil the whole Law; yet this actual Obedience, because it proceeds not from Original Righteousness, and the Rectitude of his Nature wherewith he was at first endowed, would not at all avail him to the obtaining of Justification, according to the Terms of the Covenant of Works. For God requires not only Payment of the Debt of Obedience, which we owe unto him; but also that this Payment be made out of the Stock of those Abilities, which he bestowed upon our Nature in our first Creation. Now although it should be possible for any Man to pay off the Debts of Nature, with the Treasures of Grace received from Christ; yet this would not satisfy the Obligation of the Law; since in the first Covenant it was agreed between God and Man, that Payment should be made out of another Stock; *viz.* the Power and Free Will of uncorrupted Nature.

We are therefore under a two-fold Impossibility of being justified by the Law.

*First*, Because our Obedience can never in this Life attain absolute Perfection; but still there will be Faults and Flaws in it from the mixture of that Corruption, which still in part remains in the best and holiest, who therefore ought daily to pray, not out of a feigned, and complemental Humility,

lity, but a true and deep Sense of their Necessity : *Forgive us our Trespases.*

*Secondly*, Because although our Obedience could be perfect ; yet perfect Obedience without Original Righteousness, will not amount unto a legal Righteousness.

And thus I have done with the Doctrinal part of these Words, and shewn you the Impotency we all lie under of a perfect and exact Obedience to the Law.

*First*, Then let this serve to abase the Pride, and stain the Glory of all Flesh. Search into thy self, O Man : Consider, what art thou, but a Mass of Sin, Rottenness and Corruption ? Reflect back upon the whole Course of thy Life. How hast thou spent those Years, which the Patience and long Suffering of God hath lent thee ? Hast thou not lived in open defiance with the great God of Heaven, and a continual Violation of those Laws, which his Authority hath imposed upon thee ? Suffer thy Conscience to awake, and bring in its Accompts, : And though it should be like the unjust Steward, and set down fifty for an hundred, and small Sins for great ; yet even according to this Computation, thou shalt find thy self desperately indebted to the Justice of God. Read over the black Catalogue of thy Sins, and see with Astonishment and Horror how much thou owest.

*First*, Art thou not conscious to thy self of any presumptuous Sins committed against thy Knowledge, the Checks and Exclamations of thy Conscience, against thy natural Light and Reason with a deliberate and resolved Wilfulness ? When thou hast seen all the Curses and Threatnings of the Law stand ready bent against thee, and Hell-fire flashing in thy very Face ; when Conscience hath commanded thee in the Name of the great God to forbear, and denounced

against thee Wrath and Death if thou dar'st commit it; hast thou not then fallen upon thy Conscience, violently stopp'd its Mouth, yea wounded and stabbed it, and may not the Blood and Scars of it testify against thee? Yea to add Measure to this; hast thou not frequently relapsed into the Commission of these presumptuous and daring Sins, and repeated them against thy Vows, and Protestations, and Prayers, and seeming Repentance, and so ripping open the Wounds of thy Conscience again, before they were well closed, and making them bleed afresh? Who of us all can acquit our selves of Sins against Knowledge, and Conscience, that have ever had any Knowledge or Conscience?

*Secondly*, The Sins of Ignorance, which you have committed are altogether numberless. The Soul naturally is a dark and confused Chaos; and until the Light of the glorious Truth shine into it, Sin and Duty lie undistinguished; and in the blindness of our Minds, we oftentimes take the one for the other. We many Times transgress the Law, because we know it not; and many times transgress it, when we intend to observe it. We heed not our own Actions; but let them pass from us without Consideration or Reflection; and truly the greatest part of our Lives is thus huddled up, without pondering what we do; and we are equally ignorant and careless, whether we do well or ill. And in such neglected Actions, the far greater part must needs be sinful: For when we heed not the Rule, it is hard for us not to transgress it. And therefore saith the Psalmist, *Psal. 19. 12. Who can understand his Errors? Cleanse thou me from secret Faults.* Add to this,

*Thirdly*, All thy Sins of Infirmary, and Weakness, Sins to which thou art betrayed contrary to thy Purpose and Resolutions, by the sudden Surprise of a Temptation, Sins, which although they may not be wilful and presumptuous,

yet



yet they may be very gross and scandalous, as was St. Peter's Denial of his Master. Cast in also,

*Fourthly,* All the Swarms of thy secret Sins, thy vain Thoughts, and sinful Desires; Sins which though the World can take no Cognizance of them, yet are visible, and conspicuous to the Eyes of the All-seeing God. He sees a sinful Object lying in the Embraces of thy Affections; and if there be but the least hovering of thy Heart, the least fluttering of thy Thoughts towards Vanity, he remarks it, and writes it down in his Debt-Book, although perhaps thy Conscience may omit it; and, oh, how vast a Summ these alone amount unto! Thy Thoughts run as swift as Time, and click as fast as the Moments. And such a giddy, feathery, unconstant Thing is the Mind of Man, that we cannot dwell long upon any one Thought; but whilst we are pursuing one, Ten thousand others arise: Our Thoughts are like those numberless Motes that play in a Sun-beam; they flit up and down in our Minds without any certain Scope or Design. We cannot turn our selves fast enough to them; nor can we think what we think. But God knoweth them all; and for such infinite multitudes of Thoughts, he sets down so many Sins; and yet besides all these, art thou not conscious to thy self,

*Fifthly,* Of the Omission of many Holy Duties, which thou oughtest to have performed in the several Times and Seasons when God called for them. Canst thou not call to Mind, that thou hast often restrained Prayer from God, or Charity from Men; that thou hast not served him, nor helped them, when thou mightest have done it? Hast thou not neglected the Ordinances of Jesus Christ, his Word and Sacraments, upon small or fought Occasions, or else foolish and groundless Prejudices. Endless it would be to recount all the Omissions we are guilty of; which, certainly

are

are many more than our Duties, and yet perhaps far more numerous.

*Sixthly*, all thy Miscarriages in those Duties which thou hast performed, the Dulness of thy Affections, the Vagranancies of thy Thoughts, thy Hypocrisie and Formality, all thy base and By-Ends, which like dead Flies, corrupt the most precious Ointment, are all Sins, and God's Law censures and condemns them for such.

Now, O Sinner, having such a Load of Guilt upon thy Soul, how darest thou look the holy and just God in the Face? Consider, O Wretch, what a Life is this which thou hast led, that in all the Millions of Thoughts and Actions thou hast employed thy self about, the far greater part should be Sins for the Matter of them, and all the rest sinful for the Manner. Can thy Conscience lie lulled asleep when all those Troops and Armies of *Philistines* be upon thee? Awake yet at length, O stupid Soul! rouse thy self, and consider the woful and desperate Estate in which thou art; Wonder no longer at others, that they complain and mourn, and go heavily under the burthen of their Sins, and the pangs and smart of their Convictions: Muse not that there should be some few who with horror cry out they are undone and ruined, eternally undone. Alas, wert thou but once shaken out of thy Lethargy, couldst thou but look about thee, and seriously view and ponder the infinite multitude, and the Nature of thy Sins, nothing but the strong Consolations of God could keep thee from running up and down distracted with the Terrours of the Lord, and with the utmost horror and despair, crying out, Thou art damn'd, damn'd already. But the Truth is, Men are dead in Trespasses and Sins; those Sins which are the Cause of their Misery, keep them from feeling it. But believe it, you must be convinced of your Sins either here, or hereafter. Conscience will  
revive

revive in you, if not here, yet in Hell: Nay, it is now writing down your Sins against you, and drawing up the Bill of your Indictment; but as some use such Juices, that what they write shall not be legible till held to the Fire, so do many Men's Consciences write down their Sins; which, although they cannot perhaps read them now, yet they shall read the long and black Scroll of them, when they hold it against the Flames of Hell. And how sad will it be then to know that you are Sinners, when you shall likewise know that you are eternally damn'd for your Sins? When your Consciences, which are now peaceable and gentle, shall then on a sudden rave and shriek, and fly in your Faces, and begin then (but then alas too late) to terrify and affright you, when there is no hope, nor possibility of Remedy. Be persuaded therefore now to recognize your Sins, while there is yet hope. The Day of Grace is not yet set upon you; Mercy and Pardon are yet offered to you; and those Sins which you are convinced of by the Strictness of the Law, you may, if you will seek it by true Repentance, obtain Remission of through the Grace and Mercy of the Gospel.

*Secondly,* Are all Transgressors of the Law? Then here see a woful Shipwreck of the Hopes and Confidences of all Self-Justificaries. Hence learn, that an honest, quiet, Civil Life, free from the gross and scandalous Pollution of the World, is no sufficient Plea for Heaven; yet this alone is that which the Generality of the ignorant sort especially, rely upon. Their Lives are harmless, their Dealings just and upright; none can complain they are wrong'd by them; and therefore certainly if God will save any, they must be of the Number. I heartily wish, that in these Words I could have persuaded you; but truly I doubt that the most of you are not yet come so far as Morality, nor have attained to the Honesty of those who yet shall fall short of Heaven. But suppose you could really plead this; yet this Plea is invalid: For,

For, is there nothing that you know by your selves, either relating to God or Man, wherein you have offended? Had you never so much as a Thought in you that slip'd awry? Have you never utter'd a Word that so much as lis'd contrary to the holy Law of God? Did you never do any one Action which Purity and Innocence it self might not own? Have your Lives in every point been as strict and holy as the Law of God commands them to be? If thou darest to affirm this, thou makest not thy self the more innocent thereby; but the more unpardonable; and art a senseless stupid Wretch, for thinking thy self pure and clean; or if upon a narrower Search thou findest some Miscarriages by thy self, remember thou art yet but at the Threshold of thy Heart; enter farther into thy self, and thou shalt discover yet greater Abominations. However, could it be supposed that thou art guilty but of one Sin, and that one the least that ever was committed; yet this one Sin makes thee a Transgressor of the Law, and the Guilt of it can never be expiated by any thing which thou canst either do or suffer; but eternal Death and Wrath must be thy Portion, unless the Blood of Jesus Christ purge thee from it.

*Thirdly.* See then what absolute need we all stand in of Jesus Christ. Not only those amongst us whose Lives have been openly gross and scandalous; but even those also who are the most circumspect and careful in their Walkings. Though they do not wallow, and roll themselves in the common pollutions of the World; yet it is not possible, but that in so dirty a Road they must be bespattered, and their Garments spotted with the Flesh. Absolute Perfection is a State rather to be wish'd for, than enjoy'd in this Life; the utmost we can here attain unto, is, not to commit presumptuous Sins, nor to allow our selves in any, when through Infirmary we do commit them. But none of our Sins, whether of Presumption, or of Weakness; whether of Ignorance,

or

or against Knowledge ; whether the Sins of our Thoughts, or of our Actions, can be pardoned without the Blood of God, and the Sufferings of our Almighty Saviour. It is the same precious Blood that satisfied God's Justice for the Adultery and Murther of *David*, the Incest of *Lot*, the Perjury of *Peter*, that must satisfy it likewise for thy vain and foolish Thoughts, and rash and idle Words, if ever thou art saved. For *without Blood there is no Remission*, Heb. 9. 22. And *without Remission there can be no Salvation*, Acts 22. 18. And indeed this is one of the great and main Ends of giving the Law, that the Necessity, and All-sufficiency of Christ to save us, may be rendered the more conspicuous. Thus saith the Apostle, *Rom. 10. 4. Christ is the End of the Law for Righteousness, to every one that believeth.* The Law was given us, not that we should seek Justification by observance of it ; but finding it impossible to be justified by fulfilling of it, we should thereby be driven unto Christ's Righteousness, who hath both fulfilled it in himself, and satisfied for our transgressing it : And therefore saith the same Apostle, *Gal. 3. 24. The Law was our Schoolmaster to bring us to Christ, that we might be justified by Faith.* To this end was it promulgated, that seeing the Multiplicity and Strictness of its Commands, the rigour & utter insupportableness of its threatnings, and being withal sensibly convinced of our own Weakness and impotency to fulfil the Commands enjoined, and thereupon, of our liableness to undergo the Penalty threatened, we might thereby be frightened and terrified, and as it were, by a School-master, whipt unto Christ, to find that Righteousness in him that may answer all the Demands of the Law ; which in our selves we could not find. And whilst we make this use of the Law, we bring it to be subservient to the Gospel.

# A S E R M O N

## O n G A L A T. III. X.

*For as many as are of the Works of the Law, Are under the Curse: For it is written. Cursed is every one that continueth not in all Things which are written in the Book of the Law to do them.*

**T**HE Law consists of Two Parts; a Systeme of Precepts; and the Sanction and Enforcement of those Precepts, by Promises and Threatnings. According to the First, it is the Rule of our Obedience, and shews what we ought to render unto God: According to the Second, it is the Rule of Divine Justice, and shews what God will render unto us. I have already considered the Precepts of the Law, and in part treated of those important Duties, both of Piety towards God, and of Love and Equity towards Men, that are summarily comprehended in them.

The Sanction of this Law is twofold.

*First, A Promise of Life and Happiness to the Observers of it. Rom. 10. 5. Moses describeth the Righteousness which is of the Law, that the Man that doth those things, shall live by them.*

And

And again, Gal. 3. 12. *The Man that doth them, shall live in them, i. e. by them.* Which we have once more confirmed to us, Ezek. 20. 11. *I gave them my Statutes and my Judgments; which if a Man do, he shall even live in them.* All which Places are transcribed from that of Moses, Levit. 18. 5. *Ye shall keep my Statutes and my Judgments, which if a Man do, he shall live in them, or by them.* But because our Natures are wofully degenerated from their primitive Excellency, and we have contracted such an Impotency, that the same Obedience which in our upright estate was both easie and delightful, is now become irksome and impossible, (as I have demonstrated to you in the last Subject I treated of;) therefore we can receive no Consolation from this Promise, not entertain any hopes of Life and Salvation, according to the Tenour of this Covenant of Works: *For all have sinned, and are come short of the Glory of God.* The Precepts of the Law convince us of Sin, and our Sins convince us that we have no right to the Promise of the Law.

And therefore as I have endeavoured to promote the Conviction of Sin, by representing to you the infinite Defects, Irregularities, and Contrarieties of our Actions compared with the Divine Commands; so now likewise I shall endeavour to convince of that Wrath which is due unto the Transgressors of the Law.

For there is a Second Sanction of the Law, by the threatenings of a most heavy and tremendous Curse against all that transgress it; a Curse that will blast and wither their Souls for ever. And this we have in the Words of my Text; *Cursed is every one, who, &c.*

The great Design of the Apostle in this Chapter, and indeed in this whole Epistle, is to demonstrate, that Justification cannot possibly be obtained by the Righteousness of the

Law, nor according to the Terms of the First Covenant, *Do this and live.* And among many others, one of the strongest Arguments he makes use of, to prove this his Assertion, lies couch'd in these Words which we are now considering.

Wherein we have these Two Parts :

*First, A Thesis, or Position. As many as are of the Works of the Law are under the Curse.*

*Secondly, A Proof of this Position by an irrefragable Testimony of Scripture: For it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things that are written in the Book of the Law to do them.*

The Words are plain and obvious : Only I shall briefly enquire,

*First, What the Apostle means by these who are of the Works of the Law. And,*

*Secondly, What it is to be Accursed.*

To the former, I answer, To be of the Works of the Law, signifies no other than to expect Justification and Eternal Happiness by Legal Works ; to depend wholly on our Obedience unto, and Observation of the Law, to render us acceptable to God, and worthy of Eternal Life. Those who thus rely on a Legal Righteousness, are said to be of the Works of the Law ; ( as Persons are said to be of such or such a Party, ) because they stiffly defended the Cause of the Law, and stood for Justification by the Observance of it, in opposition to the Grace of the Gospel, and the Way of obtaining Justification and Eternal Life by believing. But, saith the Apostle, As many as are of this Party and Faction are accursed, even by the Sentence of that Law which they hope will justify them. *For it is written in the Law, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things, &c.* Now, *Secondly,*



*Secomdly*, To be accursed, or to be under the Curse, is no other than to be liable unto, or actually under that Wrath and Punishment which the Law threatens shall be inflicted on the Transgressors, as a Satisfaction to Divine Justice for their Offences, so that the true and proper Notion of a Curse is this; That it is the Denunciation, or Execution of the Punishment contained in the Law, in order to the satisfaction of Divine Justice for transgressing the Precepts of it. Some therefore are only under the Curse denounced; and so are all wicked men, whose state is prosperous in this Life: Though they flourish in Wealth and Honour, and float in Ease and Pleasure, yet are they liable to all that Woe and Wrath with which the Threatnings of the Law stand charged against them. Some are under the Curse already executed: And so are all wicked Men, on whom God begins to take vengeance, and exact Satisfaction in the Miseries and Punishments which he inflicts on them in this Life. He sometimes puts the Cup of Fury and Trembling into their Hands while they are on Earth, and gives them some Fore-tastes of that bitter Draught, the Dregs of which they must for ever drink off in Hell; and there they are accursed ~~completely~~ & eternally. For the Curse of the Law contains in it all the direful Ingredients of God's Wrath what soever we can suffer, either in this World, or in the World to come, all Plagues, Woes, and Miseries being comprehended in that death threatned in the Covenant of Works; *In the day that thou eatest thereof, thou shalt surely die*, Gen. 2. 17. 'Tis true, many Godly Men suffer fore Afflictions in this Life; Pains, Diseases, Losses, Persecutions from Men, and Chastisements from God: Yet these are not Curses to them, because not inflicted for the Satisfaction of Divine Justice; but for the exercise of their Graces, and the manifestation of his Holiness, (as I shall hereafter shew you more at large;) But whatsoever Evil any wicked Man suffers, it is from the Malignity of the Curse, which will at last pour all its Venom into their Cup in Hell.

And

And thus you have seen what it is to be of *the Works of the Law*; and what it is to be of the *Curse of the Law*.

Suffer me only to Paraphrase the Words, and I shall add no more for Explication. It is impossible, saith the Apostle, that any should be now justified by the observation of the Law; for as many as rely upon their Works only, to justify them, and endeavour to uphold the Faction of a Legal Righteousness, against the Grace of the Gospel, and the Way of Justification by Faith, they are under a Curse, and stand liable to all the Punishments which the Law threatens. *For even in the Law it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things that are written in the Book of the Law to do them.* Which because no meer Man hath done, therefore all lie under the Doom of this Curse. And those who expect Justification by no other way, must for ever lie under the execution of it. And this I take to be the clear scope of the Apostle's Argument.

Now, whereas he saith, *It is written*, he certainly refers us to *Deut. 27. 26.* *Cursed is he that confirmeth not all the Words of this Law to do them.* In the Original it is, לא יקום *Non stabilet*, doth not establish, or ratify. In the *Septuagint*, ἐν ἐμμένει, *non permanet*; doth not continue, And according to that Translation, the Apostle both read, and used them. However, the Sense is the same in both.

You see then what an universal Curse these Words denounce: A Curse that sets its Mouth, and dischargeth its Thunder against all the sinful Sons of Adam: A Curse it is, which as *Zachary* speaks, *Chap. 5. 3.* goes forth over the Face of the whole Earth, and will, if Mercy rebate not the Edge of it, cut off on every side, all those that stand in its way; that is, all that are Sinners; and all are so; for the Characters

acters which the Apostle doth here give to those, who are under the Curse of the Law, are so general and comprehensive, that no Man living could possibly escape, if God should judge him according to the Conditions of the Covenant of Works. For,

*First*, It is said, that every one is accursed that doth not those Things which are written in the Book of the Law. And this is a Curse that cuts off on both sides: On this side it cuts off those who are but negatively righteous; who ground all their Hopes for Heaven and Happiness upon what they have not done, and put into the Inventory of their Vertues, that they have not been Vicious, no Extortioners, no unjust Persons, no Adulterers, &c. But alas! this Account will not pass in the day of Reckoning. The Law requires thee not only to forbear the gross Acts of Sin, but to perform the Duties of Obedience: And it cuts off on that side all those who have done contrary to what is written in the Law; and that not only scandalous and outrageous Sinners, but even those who have been least peccant, and rather Sinners in Thought and Imagination, than in Practice; yet these also fall under the Curse of the Law.

*Secondly*, Those also who have not done all that is written in the Law, are struck with this *Anathema* or Curse: And where's the Man that dares lift up his Face to justify himself against this Charge? Is there no one Duty, either of the First or Second Table, respecting either God or Man, that thou hast utterly neglected? Is there no one Sin that thou hast committed, either ignorantly or knowingly, either out of Weakness or Willfulness, by Surprise, or upon Deliberation? Certainly the Law of God is so vastly large and comprehensive, that we can scarcely know all that is contained in it: And our Impotence and Corruption so great, that much less can we perform it; and yet in a Case of

## A Sermon on Gal. 3. 10.

of the least Failure in any one Particular, we become obnoxious to the Curse and Malediction. But suppose that at some time or other thou shouldest have performed every particular Duty ; yet,

*Thirdly*, Hast thou continued in all Things that are written in the Law to do them? Hast thou spun an even Thread of Obedience? Are there no Flaws, no Breaks, no Breaches in it? Hast thou been always constant in the highest Fervour of thy Zeal for God? Hast thou been in the Fear of the Lord all the Days of thy Life? Have thy Affections never languish'd; thy Thoughts never turned aside, so much as to glance upon Vanity? Did'st thou never drop one unsavoury Word, nor do any one Action, which both for the matter and manner of it was not perfectly agreeable to the Law? If otherwise, (as indeed such an absolute Perfection of Holiness is to be found in no Creatures but the glorified Spirits,) thou art still exposed to the Curse of the Law: For cursed is every one that continueth not in all Things that are written in the Book of the Law to do them.

Now this Curse is most dreadful, if we consider that it is universal, and extends it self not only over all Persons, but unto all things; every thing which a Sinner either doth, or hath, is accursed to him: Let us a little rip up the Bowels of this Curse, that you may see how much Rancour and Venom is contained in it.

*First*, He is accursed in all his Temporal Enjoyments: His Bread is kneaded, and his Drink mingled with a Curse; his Table becomes a Snare to him; and every Morfel he eats, is dipp'd in the Bitterness of God's Wrath and Curse. In his Health, his Food is poisoned with this Curse; and in his Sicknes, his Physick. He is cursed in every Place where he comes; and the Place cursed for his sake: *Cursed in the City,*

*City, and cursed in the Field; cursed in his Basket and Store; cursed in the Fruit of his Body, and in the Fruit of his Land; in the Increase of his Kine, and of his Flocks; cursed when he cometh in, and when he goeth out; as we find this Bed-roll of Curses denounced against him, Deut. 28. from the 15th to the 20th Verse.* His very Mercies are Curses unto him; as on the contrary, a true Believer's Afflictions are Blessings. He is blessed in Poverty, in Sickness, in Persecution, yea in Death it self: So Unbelievers Mercies are all turned into Plagues and Curses: For as in an unsound and corrupted Body, the wholesomest Food converts to Putrefaction and peccant Humours, and nourisherh the Disease more than the Man; So to a corrupt and sinful Soul, the best of God's Temporal Favours turn to the Nourishment of his Disease. His Plenty and Prosperity do but purvey for his Lusts; and Abundance that God gives him, doth but lay in Provision for the Flesh; and through the secret, but righteous Judgment of God, proves only a stronger Temptation unto Sin, and makes him the more fit to promote the Devil's Service, and his own Damnation.

*Secondly,* He is accursed in all his spiritual Enjoyments. The sacred Ordinances of Jesus Christ, which are the only ordinary Means which God hath appointed to make us eternally blessed; yet even these are all cursed to him; for they do but the more harden and confirm him in his Sins, and ripen him the sooner for Everlasting Destruction. For as the Rain which falls upon the Earth makes a living Tree, whose Sap is in it, to bud and flourish, and bring forth its seasonable Fruits; but only serves the sooner to rot a dead and withered Tree: So those very Ordinances and Dispensations of the Means of Grace, which distil alike both upon Believers and Unbelievers, have a far different Influence upon them. Into the one, they kindly insinuate, and call forth their latent Graces; and where they find the Root of the

S s s

Matter,

Matter, make them sprout and blossom into a beautiful Profession, and make them bring forth plentiful Fruits unto Holiness. But to the other, that are dead Trunks, these Showers of Heaven, and Droppings of the Sanctuary which fall upon them, tend only to rot them, and to make them the sooner fit Fuel for Hell, and Everlasting Burnings. And, oh, what a sad and dreadful Curse is this; that thou who comest to hear the same Word preached, which to others proves the *Savour of Life unto Life Eternal*, to thee, through the Corruption and Wickedness of thine own Heart, it should prove the *Savour of Death thro Death Eternal*; and instead of humbling thee under the Power and Evidence of the Truth, should only exasperate thy Heart against the Truth, and those who dispense it, that the Sound of the Gospel should only deafen thine Ears, and the Light of the Glorious Truth only blind thine Eyes! That thou who perhaps partakest of the Sacrament shouldst eat thine own Damnation, when thou eatest the Body of a Saviour; and drink a deep Curse to thy self, when thou drinkest the Cup of Blessing! Thy Sins are of so baneful a Nature, that they poison even the Blood of Christ unto thee; and whilst the Heavenly Meat is in thy Mouth, even the Body of our Lord Jesus Christ, which is Meat indeed to a believing Soul, the Curse of God cometh upon thee! And yet how many such Spiders have we, who suck Poison out of the sweetest Flowers: Clayey and Earthy Souls, that are but hardened by the Sunshine of the Gospel, and made the more incapable of any Impressions to be wrought upon them: And what a dreadful Curse is this, when the Means of Grace shall be turned into the Occasion of Sin? How deplorable is their Estate, when Mercy it self shall ruine them, and Salvation it self shall destroy them?

Thirdly, If all the Favours of God's Providence, and all the Dispensations of his Grace, then certainly much more  
are

are all their Chastisements and Afflictions turned into Curses. If there be Poison in the Honey, much more certainly is there in the Sting. If God be wroth with them when he shines, much more when he frowns upon them. Indeed true Believers may with a great deal of Peace and Calmness, undergo all their Afflictions; for though they be sore and heavy, yet there is nothing of the Curse in them. That was all received into the Body of Christ when he hung upon the Cross; and their Father corrects them, not to satisfy his Justice upon them; but only by such a sharp Medicine to purge them from their Sins, and to make them partakers of his Holiness, though the Potion may be bitter and irksome in the taking, yet the Effects of it are salutary and healthful; it is not the Evils we suffer that are Curses; but the ordination of those Evils to the satisfying of Divine Vengeance upon us. And therefore sad and dreadful is the condition of guilty Sinners, who are out of Christ; for there is not the least Affliction that befalls them, nor the least Gripe of any Pain, nor the least Loss in their Estates, the most slight and inconsiderable Cross that is, but it is a Curse inflicted upon them by the Justice of God for the Guilt of their Sins. God is beginning to satisfy his Justice upon them; he is beginning to take them by the Throat, and to exact from them what they owe him. Every Affliction is to them but part of payment of that vast and infinite Summ of Plagues which God will most severely require from them in Hell. And there,

*Fourthly,* They shall be cursed to purpose, and lie for ever under the revenging Wrath of God. Their Sentence is, *Depart from me, ye Cursed.* Matth. 25. 41. Hell indeed is the general Assembly of all Curses and Plagues. All the Curses they have undergone in this present Life, are but the Curses and Preparations to this fatal and final Curse. They are eternally cursed.

*First*, In their separation from the Sight and Presence of God. They have indeed the Presence of his Wrath, to torment them, and of his Power, to uphold them under their Torments, and to enlarge their Souls to contain all those Vials of pure Wrath and Fury which he will pour into them; but they are for ever cut off from the Presence of his Grace, and of his Glory. The enjoyment of God is the sole Blessedness of a Rational Creature: And therefore to be cut off from those ineffable Communications of himself, which he vouchsafes to the Blessed Spirits, is such a Curse as is as ineffable as are the Joys and Happinesses which they lose.

*Secondly*, They are cursed in the Society of Devils and damned Spirits; hideous Company, who both upbraid and torture them for their Sins.

*Thirdly*, They are accursed in the Work of Hell. For their whole Employment shall be blaspheming and Cursing, and in the Anguish and Horror of their Spirits roaring out, and exclaiming both against God and themselves. Then, *as they loved Cursing, and cloathed themselves with it as with a Garment; so it shall come into their Bowels like Water, and like Oyl into their Bones; as the Psalmist speaks, Psal. 109. 18.*

*Fourthly*, They shall be cursed in the Pains and Torments they must eternally suffer. Every Limb shall drop with Flakes of unquenchable Fire; and the Worm of Conscience shall prey upon them, and sting them with unsupportable Anguish; and in this unspeakable Torture shall they ever live a never dying Death. This is their final Curse: *Upon the Wicked God shall rain Fire, Snarcs and Brimstone, and an horrible Tempest; this shall be the Portion of their Cup.*

And



And thus you see what Malignity and Venom the Curse contains which the Law threatens against all the Transgressors of it.

Now briefly to apply this.

*First*, See here what an accursed thing Sin is, that carries wrapt up in its Bowels Woe, Wrath, and Eternal Death. To this it is that you owe all the Miseries you have already felt ; and to this are due all that God hath threatned to inflict hereafter. The Law is not to be condemned for condemning the Transgressors of it. The Justice of God is not to be censured for taking the Forfeit ure of our Lives and Souls. But all 'our Misery is to be charged upon our selves, upon our corrupt Natures, and our sinful Lives. We our selves breed those Vipers that gnaw our very Bowels : And as putrified Bodies breed those filthy Worms and Insects which devour them ; so do we breed those filthy Lusts in our Hearts which are continually preying upon our Vitals, and will at last fatally destroy us. As God is an holy God ; so he infinitely hates Sin ; and as he is a just God ; so he will assuredly punish it. Not a Soul of Man shall escape, not a Sin pass by without having its due Curse ; yea, we find God so hates Sin, that when he found but the Imputation of it upon his own Son, Divine Vengeance would not suffer him to escape, but loads him with Sorrows, and fills his Soul with Darkness and Agonies, nails him to the Cross, and there exacts from him a dreadful Recompence, which he was fain to make good to the utmost Demand of his Father's Justice, before he could be discharged. One drop of this Poison being let fall upon the once glorious Angels, turn'd them into Devils, made all their Rays of Light and Lustre fall off from them ; and being once tainted with this Venom, God could no longer endure them in his Presence, but hurls them down  
all

all flaming into Hell. It is Sin that is the Fuel of those unquenchable Flames, and lays in all those Stores of Fire and Brimstone, which shall there burn for ever. It is Sin that disrobed Man of his Innocence, turned him out of Paradise, and will certainly, if not repented of, and forsaken, turn him into Hell. And therefore as ye love God, or your own Souls, be sure that ye hate Iniquity; entertain not any kind thoughts of it, however it tempt and solicit you. Remember the Curse of God is affix'd inseparably unto it; and if you will suffer the accursed thing to cleave unto you, you must for ever be accursed with it.

*Secondly*, If every Transgressor of the Law be accursed, see then the desperate Folly of those Wretches who make slight of Sin, and account the Commission of it a matter of small, or no concern to them. They play with Death, and dally with Woes and Curses; and so stupid and insensate are they, that they think that to be of no great moment, which yet can everlastingly damn them. Did we but seriously consider with what a weighty Curse every Sin is burthened, how much Fire and Sulphur, and deadly Materials are contained within the Bowels of it, we should be as fearful to touch or come near it, as to take up a lighted Granado when it is just ready to break about us, and tear us in piecs; and certainly they are most justly to be condemned of Madnes and Folly, that will rashly venture upon their own everlasting Destruction, and hurl Firebrands, Arrows, and Death, which will assuredly light upon themselves, and yet say, *Am I not in sport?*

*Thindly*, If every Transgression exposeth us to the Curse, beware then that you never encourage your selves to commit any sin, because perhaps the World accounts it but small and little. For the least is as much a Transgression of the Law, and makes thee as liable to the Curse of God, and eternal

eternal Damnation, as the greatest and most flagitious. They are all mortal and deadly; and thou maist as well suffer a little Stab at the Heart, as allow thy self in the commission of any Sin because it is little.

*Fourthly*, See here what Reason we have to bless God for Jesus Christ, who hath delivered us from the Curse of the Law; but so much for this Time.

---

**F I N I S.**

---

*Books*

**Books Printed for Nathanael Ranew at the King's Arms  
in St. Paul's Church-yard.**

**D**iscourses, or Sermons on several Scriptures, newly Published; By *Ezek. Hopkins*, late Lord Bishop of *Derry*. The *Vanity of the World*; with other Sermons, by the same Author.

*The Naked Gospel*; discovering, 1. What the Gospel was which our Lord and his Apostles preached. 2. What Additions and Alterations later Ages have made in it. 3. What Advantages and Damages have thereupon ensued. Of *Faith*, and therein, of the *Holy Trinity*, The *Incarnation of our Blessed Saviour*, and the *Resurrection of the Body*; now first Published by *Arthur Bury D.D.* Rector of *Exeter College, Oxford*,

An Earnest and Compassionate Suit for Forbearance, to the Learned Writers of some Controversies at present; By a Melancholy Stander by.

*The Best Match*, a Believer's Marriage with Christ: A Sermon on the Parable of the Marriage of the King's Son.

*Christ's Righteousness a Believer's surest Plea for Eternal Life*; or, *The Doctrine of Justification by the Imputed Righteousness of Christ*, Stated, Cleared, and Vindicated. Both written by *Michael Harrison*, Minister in the County of *Bucks*.

*The True Interest of Nations*, Stated in an *Affize-Sermon* in *Essex*, March 2. 1691; By *Anth. Walker, D.D.*

*The Holy Life of Mrs. Elizabeth Walker*, late Wife of *Dr. Anth. Walker*.

*The Midnight Cry*; A Sermon on the Parable of the Ten Virgins: By *J. Mason*. The Third Edition.